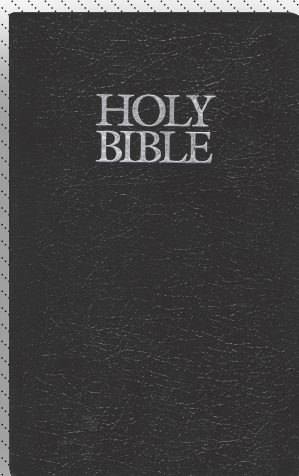
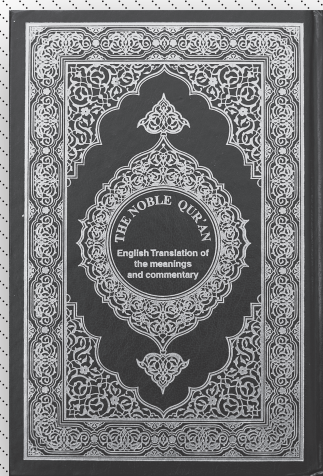


THE CHOICE



Islam & Christianity

AHMED DEEDAT



DAKWAH CORNER
BOOKSTORE

Published by:
Dakwah Corner Bookstore (M) Sdn. Bhd.
No. 5, Jalan Dato Abdul Aziz, Section 14,
46100 Petaling Jaya, Selangor Darul Ehsan,
MALAYSIA
T: +603-7956 4664

4th Published:
2024

ISBN:
978-967-0835-24-2

Typesetting:
Qutayba Yaseen

Title:
The Choice: Islam and
Christianity

Director:
Farid Ullah Ahmed
Hussain

Printed by:
Firdaus Press Sdn. Bhd.

Author:
Ahmed Deedat

Cover Design:
Elly Tengku

**For suggestions and
comments:**
dakwahcornerpublications
@gmail.com

Showroom Outlets:

MALAYSIA

Dakwah Corner Bookstore
Section 14, Petaling Jaya,
Selangor D.E
Tel : +603 7956 4664

Ampang Point
Shopping Centre
Tel: +603 4266 9692

SAUDI ARABIA

Dakwah Corner Bookstore
Makkah Commercial Centre,
Holy Makkah
Tel: +966 125311 895

NIGERIA

Dakwah Islamic Bookshop
UAC Building, Abuja
Tel: +234 805 603 7779

PHILIPPINES

Dakwah Corner Bookstore
Falcatan Street Tetuan
Zamboanga City
Tel: +63 926 5284

Distributors:

Darussalam Australia
Australia
Tel: +61 2 9740 7188

Salaam Media International
Singapore
Tel: +65 6396 4121

Darusalam Publishers
USA
Tel: +1 860 224 2400

Darussalam Books
(London Central Mosque) UK
Tel: +44 2077231234

United Arab Emirates
Book Land Bookshop LLC
Tel: +971 6 746 8299

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

Copyright © 2024 Dakwah Corner Bookstore (M) Sdn. Bhd.

No part of this publication may be produced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted, in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording or otherwise, without the prior permission of the Publisher.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

ABOUT THE AUTHOR	IV
-------------------------	-----------

PUBLISHER'S NOTE	VI
-------------------------	-----------

VOLUME ONE

PART ONE

WHAT THE BIBLE SAYS ABOUT MUHAMMAD (PBUH).....	1
My First Major Encounter.....	2
Eight Irrefutable Arguments.....	8
Further Proofs.....	13
New Testament Also Confirms.....	20

PART TWO

MUHAMMAD THE NATURAL SUCCESSOR TO CHRIST	29
The Final Messenger.....	30
In the Words of the Master.....	40
Muhammad (PBUH) is the “Paraclete”.....	50
Total Guidance!.....	65
Fulfilled Prophecies.....	79
Extremism Condemned.....	90

PART THREE

MUHAMMAD (PBUH) THE GREATEST	97
Everybody’s Choice.....	98
From the Historical Past.....	112
Fastest Growing Religion Today.....	124

PART FOUR

AL-QUR’AN THE MIRACLE OF MIRACLES	149
A Standing Challenge.....	150
Science and Qur’anic Revelations.....	161
Al-Qur’an Absolutely Unique in its Recording.....	175
Miraculous Book of Telegrams.....	190
GOD - Unique in His Attributes.....	202
Solving Controversy.....	207

VOLUME TWO

ADDENDUM

214

PART ONE

PEOPLE OF THE BOOK.....	215
Our First Customers	216
Turn The Tables	222
The Bible: An Anthology on Incest	226
Test of Inspiration.....	236
Pornography.....	244

PART TWO

COMBAT KIT	249
How to use this COMBAT KIT	252

PART THREE

IS THE BIBLE GOD'S WORD?.....	293
What They Say?.....	294
The Muslims' Standpoint	297
The Multiple Bible Versions	301
Fifty Thousand Errors (?).....	307
Damning Confessions	319
The Book Christened "The New Testament"	323
The Acid Test.....	331
Most Objective Testimony	342
The Genealogy of Jesus	350
Epilogue	360

PART FOUR

CRUXIFIXION OR CRUCI-FICTION?.....	365
The Only Sales-Point.....	366
Call Your Witnesses.....	371
Establishing God's Kingdom	374
Preparation for Jihaad.....	381
Discretion or Valour?	389
Trials of Jesus	394
Methods of Crucifixion.....	402

God's Ways Are Not Our Ways	407
"Resurrections, Daily!"	411
Sympathy for Jesus	414
Why The Inverted Commas "..."?	418
Disciples Disbelieved.....	425
Jesus No Phantom.....	427
Jesus Not Resurrected	435
The Only Miracle Promised	441
Simple Calculations	447
Fabricated "Scripture"	452
None So Blind.....	456
Crucified or Cruciplayed?	460

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Born in the Surat district of India in 1918, Ahmed Hoosen Deedat had no recollection of his father until 1926. His father a tailor by profession had emigrated to South Africa shortly after the birth of Ahmed Deedat.

With no formal education and fighting off the extreme pangs of poverty, he went to South Africa in 1927 to be with his father. His farewell to his mother in India in 1927 was the last time he saw her alive for she passed away a few months after.

In a foreign land, a boy of nine with no formal schooling and command of the English language began preparing for the role he was to play decades later without realizing it.

Applying himself with diligence to his studies, the little boy not only was able to overcome the language barrier but excelled in school. His avid passion for reading helped him gain promotions until he completed standard 6. Lack of finance interrupted his schooling and at the early age of about 16 he took on the first of many jobs in retailing.

The most significance of these was in 1936 where he worked at a Muslim owned store near a Christian seminary on the Natal South Coast. The incessant insults of the trainee missionaries hurled against Islam during their brief visits to the store infused a stubborn flame of desire within the young man to counteract their false propaganda.

As fate would have it, Ahmed Deedat discovered by pure chance a book entitled *Izharul-Haq*, meaning the Truth revealed. This book recorded the techniques and enormous success of the efforts of Muslims in India in turning the tables against Christian missionary harassment during the British subjugation and rule of India. In particular the idea of holding debates had a profound effect on Ahmed Deedat.

Armed with this new found zeal, Ahmed Deedat purchased his first Bible and began holding debates and discussions with the trainee missionaries. When they beat a hasty retreat in the face of his incisive counter arguments, he personally called on their teachers and even priests in the surrounding areas.

These successes spurred Ahmed Deedat in the direction of Da'wah. Not even his marriage, birth of children and a 3 year sojourn to Pakistan after its independence dampened his enthusiasm or dulled his desire to defend Islam from the deceitful distortions of the Christian missionaries.

With missionary zeal to project the Truth and beauty of Islam, Ahmed Deedat immersed himself into a host of activities over the next three decades. He conducted classes on Bible studies and gave numerous lectures. He established the As-Salaam, an institute to train propagators to Islam. He, together with his family, almost single-handedly erected the buildings including the masjid which is still a landmark today.

He was a founder member of the Islamic Propagation Centre International (IPCI) and became its President, a position he still holds today. He has published over 20 books and distributed millions of copies free of charge. He has delivered thousands of lectures all over the world and successfully engaged Christian Evangelists in public debates. Several thousand people have come into the fold of Islam as a result of these efforts.

In a fitting tribute to this monumental achievement, he was awarded the King Faisal International award in 1986, a prestigious recognition of enormous value in the world of Islam.

No number of awards and honours can truly capture the man's essence and seal for Islam. This anthology of books is no exception. It demonstrates Sheikh Deedat's analytical compilations drawn from personal encounters and experiences against Christian distortions.

May Allah (SWT) bless him for this book, the ones to follow and all his efforts for Islam, Insha-Allah!

Ebi Lockhat

20 SHAWWAL 1413/APRIL 13, 1993

Durban, South Africa

PUBLISHER'S NOTE

The Choice: Islam and Christianity by our late Sheikh Ahmed Hussain Deedat ﷺ is a collection of all his major works published together in one book with a single aim which is to help humanity better understand the world's two most influential faiths. This path-breaking research is a nectar; a summary of his mission which examines the unity of God, the Prophethood of Jesus Christ, the true message and teachings of Jesus Christ, and the historical collapse of Christianity. Also discussed within these pages are: Jesus Christ's divinity, the Mother Mary, and present-day Bibles according to the Islamic point of view.

Due to the profound quality and comprehensiveness of these works, he received rave reviews and achieved numerous awards from distinguished individuals from both faiths. These works have also been published in many editions by various publishers around the world but unfortunately their presentation and quality of print were not at par with the high standards of its contents.

This all-new edition which is in your hands is presented with a fresh face lift in terms of its looks, typeset, and quality of print, published in great honour by Dakwah Corner Bookstore with the permission of Deedat's House of Dawah, represented by Brother Yousuf Deedat (may Allah reward him). We also replaced translation of the Qur'anic verses from Abdullah Yusuf Ali to Sahih International due to the recommendation of contemporary scholars and for ease of understanding. We ask Almighty Allah to forgive Sheikh Ahmed Deedat's shortcomings and enter him into Paradise and make this book a means to the True Guidance for those who seek to be guided. Ameen.

Farid Ullah bin Ahmed Hussain

Chief Executive Officer

DAKWAH CORNER BOOKSTORE

Kuala Lumpur

THE CHOICE

Islam & Christianity

VOLUME ONE

BY
AHMED DEEDAT



PART ONE

WHAT THE
BIBLE
SAYS ABOUT
MUHAMMAD

(Peace be upon Him)

CHAPTER ONE

MY FIRST MAJOR ENCOUNTER

قُلْ أَرَأَيْتُمْ إِنْ كَانَ مِنْ عِنْدِ اللَّهِ وَكْفُرْتُمْ بِهِ ۚ وَشَهِدَ شَاهِدٌ مِّنْ
بَنِي إِسْرَءِيلَ عَلَىٰ مِثْلِهِ ۚ

Say, "Have you considered: if the Qur'an was from Allah, and you disbelieved in it while a witness from the Children of Israel has testified to something similar..."

Surah al-Ahqaf (Holy Qur'an 46:10)

Mr. Chairman, Ladies and Gentlemen,

The subject of this evening's talk* – **“What the Bible says about Muhammad (Peace be upon Him)”** – will no doubt come as a surprise to many of you because the speaker is a Muslim. How does it come about that a Muslim happens to be expounding prophecies from the Jewish and Christian scriptures?

As a young man about 30 years ago, I attended a series of religious lectures by a Christian theologian, a certain Rev. Hiten, at the “Theatre Royal”, Durban.

*This is the text of a lecture delivered by the author in the early seventies.

POPE OR KISSINGER?

This Reverend gentleman was expounding biblical prophecies. He went on to prove that the Christian Bible foretold the rise of Soviet Russia, and the Last Days. At one stage he went to the extent of proving that his Holy

Book did not leave the Pope out of its predictions. He expatiated vigorously in order to convince his audience that the **“Beast 666”** mentioned in the Book of Revelation – the last book of the New Testament – was the Pope, who was the Vicar of Christ on earth. It is not befitting for us Muslims to enter into this controversy between the Roman Catholics and the Protestants. By the way, the latest Christian exposition of the **“Beast 666”** of the Christian Bible is Dr. Henry Kissinger.¹ Christian scholars are ingenious and indefatigable in their efforts to prove their case.

Rev. Hiten’s lectures led me to ask that if the Bible foretold so many things – not even excluding the “Pope” and “Israel,” – then surely it must have something to say about the greatest benefactor of mankind² – the Holy Prophet Muhammad (may the Peace of Allah be with Him).

As a youngster I set to search for an answer. I met priest after priest, attended lectures, and read everything that I could lay my hands relating to the field of Bible prophecies. Tonight I am going to narrate to you one of these interviews with a dominee³ of the Dutch Reformed Church.

LUCKY THIRTEEN

I was invited to the Transvaal⁴ to deliver a talk on the occasion of the Birthday celebration of the Holy Prophet Muhammad. Knowing that in that Province of the Republic of South Africa, the African’s language is widely spoken, even by my own people, I felt that I ought to acquire a smattering of this language so as to feel a little more “at home” with the people. I opened the telephone directory and began phoning the Afrikaans speaking churches. I indicated my purpose to the priests that I was interested in having a dialogue with them, but they all refused my request with “plausible” excuses. No. 13 was my lucky number. The thirteenth call brought me pleasure and relief. A dominee Van Heerden agreed to meet me at his home on the Saturday afternoon that I was to leave for the Transvaal.

-
- 1 Christian exegetists give progressive numerical values by sixes, to the English alphabet and add up to get the total 666 i.e. A=6, B=12, C=18, D=24 and so on. Progression by 6’s because the number of the Beast in the Bible is “666”. Try it for Dr. Kissinger.
 - 2 The writer has just delivered another talk in the City Hall, Durban on the 10th December, 1975 on the subject **“Muhammad the Greatest”**.
 - 3 “Dominee” is the African’s equivalent of priest, person and predikant.
 - 4 One of the Provinces of the Republic of South Africa.

He received me on his verandah with a friendly welcome. He said if I did not mind, he would like his father-in-law from the Free State (a 70-year-old man) to join us in the discussion. I did not mind. The three of us settled down in the dominee's library.

WHY NOTHING?

I posed the question: "What does the Bible say about Muhammad?" Without hesitation he answered, "Nothing!" I asked: "Why nothing? According to your interpretation the Bible has so many things to say about the rise of Soviet Russia and about the Last Days and even about the Pope of the Roman Catholics?" He said, "Yes, but there was nothing about Muhammad!" I asked again, "Why nothing? Surely this man Muhammad who had been responsible for the bringing into being a world-wide community of millions of Believers who, on his authority, believe in:

1. The miraculous birth of Jesus,
2. That Jesus is the Messiah⁵
3. That he gave life to the dead by God's permission, and that he healed those born blind and the lepers by God's permission.

Surely this book (the Bible) must have something to say about the great Leader of men who spoke so well of Jesus and his mother Mary?" (Peace be upon Them Both).

The old man from the Free State replied, "My son,* I have been reading the Bible for the past 50 years, and if there was any mention of him, I would have known it."

*I was much younger and clean-shaven then.

NOT ONE BY NAME!

I enquired: "According to you, are there not hundreds of prophecies regarding the coming of Jesus in the Old Testament." The dominee interjected: "Not hundreds, but thousands!" I said, "I am not going to dispute the 'thousand and one' prophecies in the Old Testament regarding the coming of Jesus Christ, because the whole Muslim world has already

5 The word "Messiah" comes from the Arabic and Hebrew word **masaha** which means to rub, to massage, to anoint. The religious significance is "**the one who is anointed**" – priests and kings were anointed in consecration to their offices. Messiah translated Christ does not mean God. Even **the heathen** Cyrus is called "Christ" in the Bible, (Isaiah 45:1).

accepted him without the testimony of any Biblical prophecy. We Muslims have accepted the **de facto** Jesus on the authority of Muhammad alone, and there are in the world today no less than 900,000,000⁶ followers of Muhammad who love, respect and revere this great Messenger of God – **JESUS CHRIST** – without having the Christians to convince them by means of their Biblical dialectics. Out of the ‘thousand of prophecies referred to, can you please give me just **ONE** single prophecy where Jesus is mentioned by name? The term ‘Messiah,’ translated as ‘Christ’, is not a name but a title. Is there a single prophecy where it says that the name of the Messiah will be **JESUS**, and that his mother’s name will be **MARY**, that his supposed father will be **JOSEPH THE CARPENTER**; that he will be born on the reign of **HEROD THE KING**, etc. etc.? No! There are no such details! Then how can you conclude that those ‘thousand’ prophecies refer to Jesus?”

WHAT IS PROPHECY?

The dominee replied: “You see, prophecies are word-pictures of something that is going to happen in the future. When that thing actually comes to pass, we see vividly in these prophecies the fulfilment of what had been predicted in the past.” I said: “What you actually do is that you deduce, you reason, you put two and two together.” He said: “Yes.” I said: **“If this is what you have to do with a ‘thousand’ prophecies to justify your claim with regards to the genuineness of Jesus, why should not adopt the very same system for Muhammad?”**⁷ The dominee agreed that it was a fair proposition, a reasonable way of dealing with the problem.

I asked him to open up Deuteronomy, chapter 18, verse 18 (the fifth Book of the Christian and Jewish Bibles), which he did. I read from memory the verse in Afrikaans, because this was my purpose in having a little practice

6 This was first written in 1976.

7 Muhammad is mentioned by name in the Song of Solomon 5:16. The Hebrew word used there is **‘Mahammudin’**. The end letter **‘im’** is a plural of respect, majesty and grandeur. Minus **‘im’** the name would be **‘Mahammud’** translated as “altogether lovely” in the Authorised Version of the Bible or **‘The Praised One’** – ‘the one worthy of praise’ i.e. Muhammad! (PBUH)

with the language of the ruling race in South Africa⁸

**‘N PROFEET SAL EK VIR HULLE
VERWEK UIT DIE MIDDE VAN HULLE BROERS,
SOOS JY IS,
EN EK SAL MY WOORDE IN SY MOND LÊ,
EN HY SAL AAN HULLE SÊ
ALLES WAT EK HOM BEVEEL.**

(Holy Bible) Deuteronomy 18:18

The English translation reads as follows:

***I will raise them up a Prophet
From among their BRETHREN,
Like unto thee,
And I will put my words in his mouth;
And he shall speak unto them
All that I shall command him.***

(Holy Bible) Deuteronomy 18:18

PROPHET LIKE MOSES

Having recited the verse in Afrikaans, I apologised for my uncertain pronunciation. The dominee assured me that I was doing fine. I enquired, “To whom does this prophecy refer?” Without the slightest hesitation he answered: **“JESUS!”** I asked: **“Why Jesus – his name is not mentioned here?”** The dominee replied, “Since prophecies are word-pictures of something that is going to happen in the future, we find that the wordings of this verse adequately describe him. You see the most important words of this prophecy are ‘SOOS JY IS’ (**like unto thee**) – LIKE YOU – like Moses, and Jesus is like Moses.” I questioned, “In which way is Jesus like Moses?” The answer was, “In the first place Moses was a **JEW** and Jesus was also a **JEW**; secondly Moses was a **PROPHET** and Jesus was also a **PROPHET** – therefore Jesus is like Moses and that is exactly what God had foretold Moses – **“SOOS JY IS”**.” “Can you think of any other

8 If this booklet is translated into any language, please change the African’s words into the local dialect; and do not try a free hand translation of the Biblical quotations. Obtain a Bible in the language in which translation is being made and transcribe exactly as the words occur in that Bible.

similarities between Moses and Jesus?” I asked. The dominee said that he could not think of any. I replied, “If these are the only two criteria for discovering a candidate for this prophecy of Deuteronomy 18:18, then in that case this criteria could fit any one of the Biblical personages after Moses: Solomon, Isaiah, Ezekiel, Daniel, Hosea, Joel, Malachi, John the Baptist etc., because they were also **ALL** “Jews” as well as “Prophets”. Why should we not apply this prophecy to any of these prophets, and why only to Jesus? Why should we make fish of one and fowl of another?” The dominee had no reply. I continued: “You see, my conclusions are that Jesus are most unlike Moses, and if I am wrong I would like you to correct me.”

THREE UNLIKES

So saying, I reasoned with him:

“In the **FIRST** place Jesus is not like Moses, because, according to YOU – ‘JESUS IS A GOD’, is this true?” He said: “Yes.” I said: **“Therefore Jesus is not like Moses!”**

“**SECONDLY**, according to YOU – ‘JESUS DIED FOR THE SINS OF THE WORLD’, but Moses did not have to die for the sins of the world. Is this true?” He again said: “Yes.” I said: **“Therefore Jesus is not like Moses!”**

“**THIRDLY**, according to YOU – ‘JESUS WENT TO HELL FOR THREE DAYS’, but Moses did not have to go there. Is this true?” He answered meekly: “Y-e-s.” I concluded: **“Therefore Jesus is not like Moses!”**

“But dominee,” I continued: “These are not hard facts, solid facts, tangible facts: they are mere matters of belief over which the little ones can stumble and fall. Let us discuss something very simple, that if your little ones are called in to hear the discussion, they would have no difficulty in following it, shall we?” The dominee was quite happy at the suggestion.

CHAPTER TWO

EIGHT IRREFUTABLE ARGUMENTS

FATHER AND MOTHER

1. "Moses had a father and a mother. Muhammad also has a father and a mother. But Jesus had only a mother, and no human father. Is this true?" He said: "Yes." I said: "DAAROM IS JESUS NIE SOOS MOSES NIE, MAAR MUHAMMAD IS SOOS MOSES!" Meaning: **"THEREFORE JESUS IS NOT LIKE MOSES, BUT MUHAMMAD IS LIKE MOSES!"** (By now the reader will realise that I was using the African's language only for practice purposes. I shall discontinue its use in this narration).

MIRACULOUS BIRTH

2. "Moses and Muhammad were born in the normal, natural course, i.e. the physical association of man and woman; but Jesus was created by a special miracle. You will recall that we are told in the Gospel of St. Matthew 1:18 **"...BEFORE THEY CAME TOGETHER,** (Joseph the Carpenter and Mary) **SHE WAS FOUND WITH CHILD BY THE HOLY GHOST."** And St. Luke tells us that when the good news of the birth of a holy son was announced to her, Mary reasoned: ***"...How shall this be, seeing I know not a man? And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee..."***

(Holy Bible) Luke 1:35.

The Holy Qur'an confirms the miraculous birth of Jesus, in nobler

and sublimer terms. In answer to her logical question: **‘O my Lord! How shall I have a son when no man hath touched me?’** The angel says in reply: **‘Even so: Allah creatheh what he willeth: when he hath decreed a plan, He but saith to it “BE” and it is!’**⁹ (Holy Qur’an 3:47). It is not necessary for God to plant a seed in a man or animal. He merely wills it and it comes into being. This is the Muslim conception of the birth of Jesus.” (When I compare the Qur’anic and the Biblical versions of the birth of Jesus to Rev. Dunkers the head of the Bible Society in our largest city, and when I enquired: “Which version would you prefer to give to your daughter, the **QUR’ANIC** version or the **BIBLICAL** version?” The man bowed his head and answered: “The Qur’anic.”) In short, I said to the dominee: “Is it true that Jesus was born miraculously as against the natural birth of Moses and Muhammad?” He replied proudly: “Yes!” I said: **“THEREFORE JESUS IS NOT LIKE MOSES, BUT MUHAMMAD IS LIKE MOSES.”** And God says to Moses in the Book of Deuteronomy 18:18 “Like unto thee” (Like You, Like Moses) **and Muhammad is like Moses.**”

MARRIAGE TIES

3. “Moses and Muhammad married and begot children, but Jesus remained a bachelor all his life. Is this true?” The dominee said: “Yes!” I said: **“THEREFORE JESUS IS NOT LIKE MOSES, BUT MUHAMMAD IS LIKE MOSES.”**

JESUS REJECTED BY HIS PEOPLE

4. “Moses and Muhammad were accepted as prophets by their people in their lifetime. No doubt the Jews gave endless to Moses and they murmured in the wilderness, but as a nation, as a whole, they acknowledged that Moses was a Messenger of God sent to them. The Arabs too made Muhammad’s life impossible. He suffered very badly at their hands. After 13 years of preaching in Mecca, he had to emigrate from the city of his birth. But before his demise, the Arab nation as a whole accepted him as the Messenger of Allah. But according to the Bible – *“HE (Jesus) CAME UNTO HIS OWN,*

9 Please open the Holy Qur’an 3:42 and 19:16 where the birth of Jesus is spoken about; read it with the commentary, and draw the attention of your Christian friends to the high position which Jesus and his mother occupy in Islam.

*BUT HIS OWN RECEIVED HIM NOT.” (John 1:11) And even today, after two thousand years, his people – the Jews as a whole, have rejected him. Is this true?” The dominee said: “Yes.” I said: “**THEREFORE JESUS IS NOT LIKE MOSES, BUT MUHAMMAD IS LIKE MOSES.**”*

“OTHER-WORLDLY” KINGDOM

5. “Moses and Muhammad were prophets as well as kings. By prophet I mean a man who receives Divine Revelation for the Guidance of Man and this Guidance he conveys to God’s creatures as received without any addition or deletion. A king is a person who has the power of life and death over his people. It is immaterial whether the person wears a crown or not, or whether he was ever addressed as king or monarch: if the man has the prerogative of inflicting capital punishment – **HE IS A KING**. Moses possessed such a power. Do you remember the Israelite who was found picking up firewood on the Sabbath Day, and Moses had him stoned to death? (Numbers 15:36) There are other crimes also mentioned in the Bible for which capital punishment was inflicted on the Jews at the behest of Moses. Muhammad too, had the power of life and death over his people.

There are instances in the Bible of persons who were given gift of **prophecy only**, but they were not in a position to implement their directives. Some of these holy men of God who were helpless in the face of stubborn rejection of their message were the Prophets of Lot, Jonah, Daniel, Ezra and John the Baptist. They could only deliver the message, but could not enforce the Law. The Holy Prophet Jesus unfortunately also belonged to this category. The Christian Gospel clearly confirms this: when Jesus was dragged before the Roman Governor, Pontius Pilate, charged for sedition, Jesus made a convincing point in his defence to refute the false charge: Jesus answered,

“MY KINGDOM IS NOT OF THIS WORLD: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.”

(Holy Bible) John 18:36)

This convinced Pilate (a pagan) that though Jesus might not be in full possession of his mental faculty, he did not strike him as being a danger

to his rule. Jesus claimed **a spiritual kingdom only**; in other words he only claimed to be a prophet. Is this true?" The dominee answered: "Yes." I said: **"THEREFORE JESUS IS NOT LIKE MOSES, BUT MUHAMMAD IS LIKE MOSES."**

NO NEW LAWS

6. "Moses and Muhammad brought new laws and new regulations for their people. Moses not only gave the Ten Commandments to the Israelites, but a very comprehensive ceremonial law for the guidance of his people. Muhammad comes to a people steeped in barbarism and ignorance. They married their stepmothers; they buried their daughters alive; drunkenness, adultery, idolatry and gambling were the order of the day. Gibbon describes the Arabs before Islam in his **"Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire"**, 'THE HUMAN BRUTE, ALMOST WITHOUT SENSE, IS POORLY DISTINGUISHED FROM THE REST OF THE ANIMAL CREATION.' There was hardly anything to distinguish between the "man" and the "animal" of the time; they were animals in human form.

From this abject barbarism, Muhammad elevated them, in the words of Thomac Carlyle, **'into torch-bearers of light and learning.'** **'TO THE ARAB NATION IT WAS AS A BIRTH FROM DARKNESS INTO LIGHT. ARABIA FIRST BECAME ALIVE BY MEANS OF IT. A POOR SHEPHERD PEOPLE, ROAMING UNNOTICED IN ITS DESERTS SINCE THE CREATION OF THE WORLD. SEE, THE UNNOTICED BECOMES WORLD NOTABLE, THE SMALL HAS GROWN WORLD-GREAT. WITHIN ONE CENTURY AFTERWARDS ARABIA WAS AT GRANADA ON ONE HAND AND AT DELHI AT THE OTHER. GLANCING IN VALOUR AND SPLENDOUR, AND THE LIGHT OF GENIUS, ARABIA SHINES OVER A GREAT SECTION OF THE WORLD...'** The fact is that Muhammad gave his people a Law and Order they never had before.

As regards Jesus, when the Jews felt suspicious of him that he might be an imposter with designs to pervert their teachings, Jesus took pains to assure them that he had not come with a new religion – **no new laws and no new regulations**. I quote his own words:

"Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill. For

verily I say unto you, till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled."

(Holy Bible) Matthew 5:17-18

In other words he had not come with any new laws or regulations; he came only to fulfil the old law. This is what he gave the Jews to understand – unless he was speaking with the tongue in his cheek trying to bluff the Jews into accepting him as a man of God and by subterfuge trying to ram a new religion down their throats. No! This Messenger of God would never resort to such foul means to subvert the Religion of God. He himself fulfilled the laws. He observed the commandments of Moses, and he respected the Sabbath. At no time did a single Jew point a finger at him to say, **'why don't you fast'** or **'why don't you wash your hands before you break bread'**, which charges they always levied against his disciples, but never against Jesus. This is because as a good Jew he honoured the laws of the prophets who preceded him. In short, he created no new religion and brought no new law like Moses and Muhammad. Is this true?" I asked the dominee, and he answered: "Yes." I said: **"THEREFORE JESUS IS NOT LIKE MOSES, BUT MUHAMMAD IS LIKE MOSES."**

HOW THEY DEPARTED

7. "Both Moses and Muhammad died natural deaths, but according to Christianity, Jesus was violently killed on the cross.¹⁰ Is this true?" The dominee said: "Yes." I said: **"THEREFORE JESUS IS NOT LIKE MOSES, BUT MUHAMMAD IS LIKE MOSES."**

HEAVENLY ABODE

8. "Moses and Muhammad both lie buried in earth, but according to you, Jesus rests in heaven. Is this true?" The dominee agreed. I said: **"THEREFORE JESUS IS NOT LIKE MOSES, BUT MUHAMMAD IS LIKE MOSES."**

10 For full exposition of this topic see Vol. II under **"Crucification or crucifixion?"**

CHAPTER THREE

FURTHER PROOFS

ISHMAEL THE FIRST BORN

Since the dominee was helplessly agreeing with every point, I said, “Dominee, so far what I have done is to prove only one point out of the whole prophecy – that is proving the phrase **‘LIKE UNTO THEE’** – ‘like you’ – ‘like Moses.’ The Prophecy is much more than this single phrase which reads as follows: “**I WILL RAISE THEM UP A PROPHET FROM AMONG THEIR BRETHREN LIKE UNTO THEE...**” The emphasis is on the words – **‘From among their brethren.’** Moses and his people, the Jews, are here addressed as a racial entity, and as such their **‘BRETHREN’** undoubtedly be the Arabs. You see, the Holy Bible speaks of Abraham as the “Friend of God”. Abraham had two wives – Sarah and Hagar. Hagar bore Abraham as a son – HIS FIRST BORN – **‘...And Abram¹¹ called HIS SON’S name, which Hagar bare, Ishmael.’** (Genesis 16:15). **‘And Abraham took Ishmael HIS SON...’** (Genesis 17:23). **‘And Ishmael HIS SON was thirteen years old, when he was circumcised in the flesh of his foreskin.’** (Genesis 17:25). Up to the age of THIRTEEN Ishmael was the **ONLY son** and **seed** of Abraham, when the covenant was ratified between God and Abraham. God grants Abraham another son through Sarah, named Isaac, who was very much the junior to his brother Ishmael.”

11 According to the Bible Abraham’s name was **Abram** before it was changed by God to **Abraham**.

ARABS AND JEWS

If Ishamel and Isaac are the sons of the same father Abraham, then they are brothers. **And so the children of the one are the BRETHREN of the children of the other.** The children of Isaac are the Jews and the children of Ishmael are the Arabs – so they are **BRETHREN** to one another. The Bible affirms,

*and he (Ishmael) shall dwell in the presence of **all his brethren**.*

(Holy Bible) Genesis 16:12

*and he (Ishmael) died in the presence of **all his brethren**.*

(Holy Bible) Genesis 25:18)

The children of Isaac are the brethren of the Ishmaelites. In like manner Muhammad is from among the brethren of the Israelites because he was a descendant of Ishmael the son of Abraham. This is exactly as the prophecy has it – ‘*FROM AMONG THEIR BRETHREN.*’ (Deut. 18:18). There the prophecy distinctly mentions that the coming prophet who would be like Moses, must arise NOT from the ‘**children of Israel**’ or from ‘**among themselves**’, but from among their brethren. MUHAMMAD THEREFORE WAS FROM AMONG THEIR BRETHREN!

WORDS IN THE MOUTH

The prophecy proceeds further: ‘...AND I WILL PUT MY WORDS INTO HIS MOUTH...’ What does it mean when it is said ‘**I will put my words in your mouth**’? You see, when I asked you (the dominee) to open Deuteronomy, chapter 18, verse 18, at the beginning, and if I had asked you to read, and if you had read: would I be putting my words into your mouth? The dominee answered: “No.” But, I continued: “If I were to teach you a language like Arabic about which you have no knowledge, and if I asked you to read or repeat after me what I utter i.e.

قُلْ هُوَ اللَّهُ أَحَدٌ

Say, “He is Allah, (who is) One,

اللَّهُ الصَّمَدُ

Allah, the Eternal Refuge.

لَمْ يَلِدْ وَلَمْ يُولَدْ

He neither begets nor is born,

وَلَمْ يَكُنْ لَهُ كُفُوًا أَحَدٌ

Nor is there to Him any equibalent.”

Surah al-Ikhlās (Holy Qur'an 112:1–4)

Would I not be putting these unheard words of a foreign tongue which you utter, **into your mouth?**” The dominee agreed that it was indeed so. In an identical manner, I said, the words of the Holy Qur'an, the Revelation vouchsafed by the Almighty God to Muhammad were revealed.

History tells us that Muhammad was forty years of age. He was in a cave some three miles north of the City of Mecca. It was the 27th night of the Muslim month of Ramadhan. In the cave the Archangel Gabriel commands him in his mother tongue: اقْرَأْ which means **READ!** or **PROCLAIM!** or **RECITE!** Muhammad is terrified and in his bewilderment replies: *ma ana biqariin* which means: **I AM NOT LEARNED!** The angel commands him a second time with the same result. For the third time the angel continues: Now, Muhammad grasps, that what was required of him was to **repeat!** to **rehearse!** And he repeats the words as they were put into his mouth:

اقْرَأْ بِاسْمِ رَبِّكَ الَّذِي خَلَقَ

Recite in the name of your Lord who created –

خَلَقَ الْإِنْسَانَ مِنْ عَلَقٍ

Created man from a clinging substance.

اقْرَأْ وَرَبُّكَ الْأَكْرَمُ

Recite, and your Lord is the Most Generous –

الَّذِي عَلَّمَ بِالْقَلَمِ

Who taught by the pen, –

عَلَّمَ الْإِنْسَانَ مَا لَمْ يَعْلَمْ

Taught man that which he knew not.

Surah al-‘Alaq (Holy Qur’an 96:1–5)

These are the first five verses which were revealed to Muhammad which now occupy the beginning of the 96th chapter of the Holy Qur’an.

THE FAITHFUL WITNESS

Immediately the angel had departed, Muhammad rushed to his home. Terrified and sweating all over he asked his beloved wife Khadija to ‘cover him up!’ He lay down, and she watched by him. When he had regained his composure, he explained to her what he had seen and heard. She assured him of her faith in him and that Allah would not allow such a terrible thing to happen to him. Are these the confessions of an imposter? Would imposters confess that when an angel of the Lord confronts them with a Message from on High, they get fear-stricken, terrified, and sweating all over, run home to their wives? Any critic can see that his reactions and confessions are that of an honest, sincere man, the man of Truth – **‘AL-AMIN’** – The Honest, the Upright, the Truthful.

During the next twenty-three years of his prophetic life, words were **‘put into his mouth’** and he uttered them. They made an indelible impression on his heart and mind: and as the volume of the Sacred Scripture (Holy Qur’an) grew, they were recorded on palm-leaf fibre, on skins and on the shoulder-blades of animals; and in the hearts of his devoted disciples. Before his demise these words were arranged in the order in which we find them today in the Holy Qur’an.

The words (revelation) were actually **put into his mouth**, exactly as foretold in the prophecy under discussion:

and I will put my words in his mouth.

(Holy Bible) Deuteronomy 18:18.

UNLETTERED PROPHET

Muhammad's experience in the cave of Hira, later to be known as Jabal-un-Noor – The Mountain of Light, and his response to that first Revelation is the exact fulfilment of another Biblical prophecy. In the Book of Isaiah, chapter 29, verse 12, we read: “AND THE BOOK” (al-Kitaab, al-Qur'an – the 'Reading', the 'Recitation') “IS DELIVERED TO HIM THAT IS NOT LEARNED,” النَّبِيُّ الْأُمِّيُّ the unlettered Prophet, (Holy Qur'an 7:158) “SAYING, READ THIS, I PRAY THEE:” (the words “I pray thee”, are not in the Hebrew manuscripts, compare with the Roman Catholics' “Douay Version” and also with the “Revised Standard Versions”) “AND HE SAITH, I AM NOT LEARNED.” (“I am not learned” is the exact translation of the words ma ana biqariin which words Muhammad uttered twice to the Holy Ghost – the Archangel Gabriel, when he was commanded أَفْرَأْ “READ!”).

Let me quote the verse in full without a break as found in the “King James Version” or the “Authorised Version” as it is more popularly known:

“And the book is delivered to him that is not learned, saying, Read this, I pray thee: and he saith, I am not learned.”

(Holy Bible) Isaiah 29:12.

It may be noted that there were no Arabic Bibles¹² in existence in the 6th century of the Christian Era when Muhammad lived and preached! Besides, he was absolutely unlettered and unlearned. No human had ever taught him a word. His teacher was his Creator –

وَمَا يَنْطِقُ عَنِ الْهَوَىٰ

Nor does he speak from (his own) inclination.

إِنْ هُوَ إِلَّا وَحْيٌ يُوحَىٰ

It is not but a revelation revealed,

12 There are today Arabic Bibles in fifteen different scripts and dialects for the Arabs alone. See “**The Gospels in many Tongues**”, a reproduction, in Book 1 of Vol. II under the heading “**A MUSLIM DICTIONARY OF THE BIBLE.**” Alternative title – “**COMBAT KIT**” AGAINST BIBLE-THUMPERS.

عَلَّمَهُ شَدِيدُ الْقُوَى

Taught to him by one intense in strength –

Surah an-Najm (Holy Qur'an: 53:3–5)

Without any human learning, **‘he put shame the wisdom of the learned.’**

GRAVE WARNING

“See!” I told the dominee, “how the prophecies fit Muhammad like a glove. We do not have to stretch prophecies to justify their fulfilment in Muhammad.”

The dominee replied, “All your expositions sound very well, but they are of no real consequence, because we Christians have Jesus Christ the “incarnate” God, who has redeemed us from the Bondage of Sin!”

I asked, “Not important? God didn’t think so! He went to a great deal of trouble to have His warnings recorded. God knew that there would be people like you who will flippantly, light-heartedly discount his words, so he followed up Deuteronomy 18:18 with a dire warning: the very next verse, *“AND IT SHALL COME TO PASS,”* (it is going to happen) *“THAT WHOSOEVER WILL NOT HEARKEN UNTO **MY WORDS** WHICH HE SHALL SPEAK **IN MY NAME**, I WILL REQUIRE IT OF HIM.”* (in the Catholic Bible the ending words are – **“I will be the revenger”** – I will take vengeance from him – I will take revenge!) “Does this terrify you? **God Almighty is threatening revenge!** We shake in our pants if some hoodlums threaten us, yet you have no fear of God’s warning?”

“Miracle of miracles! In the verse 19 of Deuteronomy chapter 18, we have a further fulfilment of the prophecy in Muhammad! Note the words – ‘... **MY WORDS WHICH HE SHALL SPEAK IN MY NAME,**’ In whose name is Muhammad speaking?” I opened the Holy Qur’an – Allama Yusuf Ali’s translation, at chapter 114 – **‘Surah An-Nas’**, or ‘Mankind’ – the last chapter, and showed him the formula at the head of the chapter:

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

And the meaning:

In the name of Allah, the Entirely Merciful, the Especially Merciful.

And the heading of chapter 113:

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

And the meaning:

In the name of Allah, the Entirely Merciful, the Especially Merciful.

And every chapter downwards 112, 111, 110... was the same formula and the same meaning on every page, because the end **SURAHS** (chapters) are short and take about a page each.

And what did the prophecy demand? ‘...WHICH HE SHALL SPEAK **IN MY NAME,**’ and in whose name does Muhammad speak? ‘**IN THE NAME OF GOD,** MOST GRACIOUS MOST MERCIFUL.’ The Prophecy is being fulfilled in Muhammad to the letter!

Every chapter of the Holy Qur’an except the 9th begin with the formula

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

In the name of Allah, the Entirely Merciful, the Especially Merciful.

The Muslim begins his every lawful act with the holy formula. But the Christian begins: “In the name of the Father, son and holy ghost.”¹³

Concerning Deuteronomy chapter eighteen, I have given you more than 15 reasons as to how this prophecy refers to Muhammad and **NOT** to Jesus.

13 The Christian theologians are ignorant of even the “name of God”. Because “**God**” is not a name, and “**father**” is also not a name.

CHAPTER FOUR

NEW TESTAMENT ALSO CONFIRMS

BAPTIST CONTRADICTS JESUS

In New Testament times, we find that the Jews were still expecting the fulfilment of the prophecy of ‘ONE LIKE MOSES’; refer John 1:19-25. When Jesus claimed to be the Messiah of the Jews, the Jews began to enquire as to where was Elias? The Jews had a parallel prophecy that before the coming of the Messiah, Elias must come first in his second coming. Jesus confirms this Jewish belief:

“...ELIAS TRULY SHALL FIRST COME, AND RESTORE ALL THINGS. BUT I SAY UNTO YOU, THAT ELIAS IS COME ALREADY; AND THEY KNEW HIM NOT,... THEN THE DISCIPLES UNDERSTOOD THAT HE SPOKE UNTO THEM OF JOHN THE BAPTIST.”

(Holy Bible) Matthew 17:11-13.

According to the New Testament the Jews were not the ones to swallow the words of any would-be Messiah. In their investigations they underwent intense difficulties in order to find their true Messiah. And this the Gospel of John confirms: *“AND THIS IS THE RECORD OF JOHN,” (the Baptist) “WHEN THE JEWS SENT PRIESTS AND LEVITES FROM JERUSALEM TO ASK HIM, WHO ART THOU? AND HE CONFESSED AND DENIED NOT; BUT CONFESSED, I AM NOT THE CHRIST.”* (This was only neutral because there can’t be two Messiahs¹⁴ at the same time. If Jesus was the Christ then John couldn’t be the Christ!) *“AND THEY ASKED HIM, WHAT*

14 The Jews were expecting a single Messiah not two.

THEN? ART THOU ELIAS? AND HE SAITH, I AM NOT." (Here **John the Baptist** contradicts Jesus! Jesus says that John is "Elias" and John denies that he is what Jesus ascribes him to be. One of the **TWO** (Jesus or John), God forbid! is definitely not speaking the **TRUTH!** On the testimony of Jesus himself, **John the Baptist** was the greatest of the Israelite prophets:

"VERILY I SAY UNTO YOU, AMONG THEM THAT ARE BORN OF WOMEN THERE HAS NOT RISEN A GREATER THAN JOHN THE BAPTIST:..."

(Holy Bible) Matthew 11:11.

We Muslims know John the Baptist as Hazrat **YAHYA** alaihis-salam (Peace be upon Him). We revere him as a true prophet of Allah. The Holy Prophet Jesus known to us as Hazrat **ISA** alaihis-salam (Peace be upon Him), is also esteemed as one of the mightiest messengers of the Almighty. How can we Muslims impute lies to either of them? We leave this problem between Jesus and John for the Christians to solve, for their "sacred scriptures" abound in discrepancies which they have been glossing over as the "**dark sayings of Jesus.**"¹⁵ We Muslims are really interested in the last question posed to **John the Baptist** by the Jewish elite –

"ART THOU THAT PROPHET? AND HE ANSWERED, NO."

(Holy Bible) John 1:21.

THREE QUESTIONS!

Please note that three different and distinct questions were posed to **John the Baptist** and to which he gave three emphatic "**No's**" as answers. To recapitulate:

1. Art thou the Christ?
2. Art thou Elias?
3. Art thou that prophet?

But the learned men of Christendom somehow only see two questions implied here. To make double clear that the Jews definitely had T-H-R-E-E separate prophecies in their minds when they were interrogating **John the Baptist**, let us read the remonstrance of the Jews in the verses following –

15 See the "**TIMES**" Magazine December 30th, 1974, article "**How true is the Bible?**".

*“AND THEY ASKED HIM, AND SAID UNTO HIM, WHY
BAPTIZEST THOU THEN, IF THOU BE*

(a) NOT THAT CHRIST

(b) NOR ELIAS,

(c) NEITHER THAT PROPHET?”

(Holy Bible) John 1:25

The Jews were waiting for the fulfilment of **THREE** distinct prophecies: **One**, the coming of CHRIST. **Two**, the coming of Elias, and **Three** the coming of THAT PROPHET.

“THAT PROPHET”

If we look up any Bible which has a concordance or cross-references, than we will find in the marginal note where the words **“the prophet”**, or **“that prophet”** occur in John 1:25, that these words refer to the prophecy of Deuteronomy 18:15 and 18. And that **‘that prophet’ – ‘the prophet like Moses’** – **“LIKE UNTO THEE”**, we have proved through overwhelming evidence that he was MUHAMMAD and **NOT** Jesus!

We Muslims are not denying that Jesus was the “Messiah”, which word is translated as “Christ”.¹⁶ We are not contesting the “thousand and one prophecies” which the Christians claim around in the Old Testament foretelling the coming of the Messiah. What we say is that Deuteronomy 18:18 does **NOT** refer to Jesus Christ but it is an explicit prophecy about the Holy Prophet **Muhammad!**

The dominee, very politely parted with me saying that is was a very interesting discussion and he would like me very much to come one day and address his congregation on the subject. A decade and a half had passed since then but I am still awaiting that privilege.

I believe the dominee was sincere when he made the offer, but prejudices die hard and who would like to lose his sheep?

THE ACID TEST

To the lambs of Christ I say, why not apply that acid test which the Master himself wanted you to apply to any would be claimant to prophethood?

16 How the word Messiah was transmuted to Christ? Refer Part 2 following.

He had said

“BY THEIR FRUITS YE SHALL KNOW THEM. DO MEN GATHER GRAPES FROM THE THORNS, OR FIGS FROM THE THISTLES? EVERY GOOD TREE WILL BEAR GOOD FRUIT AND EVERY EVIL TREE WILL BEAR EVIL FRUIT...BY THEIR FRUITS YE SHALL KNOW THEM.”

(Holy Bible) Matthew 7:16-20.

Why are you afraid to apply this test to the teachings of Muhammad? You will find in the **Last** Testament of God – **the Holy Qur'an** – the true fulfilment of the teachings of Moses and Jesus which will bring to the world the much-needed peace and happiness. “IF A MAN LIKE MUHAMMAD WERE TO ASSUME DICTATORSHIP OF THE MODERN WORLD, HE WOULD SUCCEED IN SOLVING ITS PROBLEMS THAT WOULD BRING IT THE MUCH NEEDED PEACE AND HAPPINESS.”

(George Bernard Shaw)

THE GREATEST!

The Weekly News magazine “TIME” dated July 15, 1974, carried a selection of opinions by various historians, writers, military men, businessmen and others on the subject: **“Who Were History's Great Leaders?”** Some said that it was Hitler; others said – Gandhi, Buddha, Lincoln and the like. But Jules Masserman, a United States psychoanalyst put the standards straight by giving the correct criteria wherewith to judge. He said: **“LEADERS MUST FULFIL THREE FUNCTIONS:**

1. Provide for the well-being of the led,
2. Provide a social organization in which people feel relatively secure, and
3. Provide them with one set of beliefs.”

With the above three criteria he searches history and analyses – Hitler, Pasteur, Caesar, Moses, Confucius and the lot, and ultimately concludes:

“PEOPLE LIKE PASTEUR AND SALK ARE LEADERS IN THE FIRST SENSE. PEOPLE LIKE GANDHI AND CONFUCIUS, ON ONE HAND, AND ALEXANDER,

CAESAR AND HITLER ON THE OTHER, ARE LEADERS IN THE SECOND AND PERHAPS THE THIRD SENSE. JESUS AND BUDDHA BELONG IN THE THIRD CATEGORY ALONE. **PERHAPS THE GREATEST LEADER OF ALL TIME WAS MUHAMMAD, WHO COMBINED ALL THREE FUNCTIONS.** To a lesser degree, **MOSES DID THE SAME.**”

According to the objective standards set by the Professor of the Chicago University, whom I believe to be Jewish, – JESUS and BUDDHA are nowhere in the picture of the **“Great Leaders of Mankind”**, but by a queer coincidence **groups** Moses and Muhammad **together** thus adding further weight to the argument that JESUS is not like MOSES, but MUHAMMAD is like MOSES: *Deut. 18:18 “LIKE UNTO THEE” – Like Moses!*

Reverend James L. Dow in **Collins Dictionary of the Bible** gives further proof, that JESUS is not like MOSES, but MUHAMMAD is like Moses: “AS A STATESMAN AND LAWGIVER MOSES IS THE CREATOR OF THE JEWISH PEOPLE. HE FOUND A LOOSE CONGLOMERATION OF SEMITIC PEOPLE, NONE OF..”

“...THE ONLY MAN OF HISTORY WHO CAN BE COMPARED EVEN REMOTELY TO HIM IS MAHOMET.”

(Rev. James L. Dow)

In conclusion, I end with a quotation of a Christian Reverend the commentator of the Bible, followed by that of his Master:

“THE ULTIMATE CRITERION OF A TRUE PROPHET IS THE MORAL CHARACTER OF HIS TEACHINGS.”

(Prof. Dummelow)

“BY THEIR FRUITS YE SHALL KNOW THEM.”

(Jesus Christ)

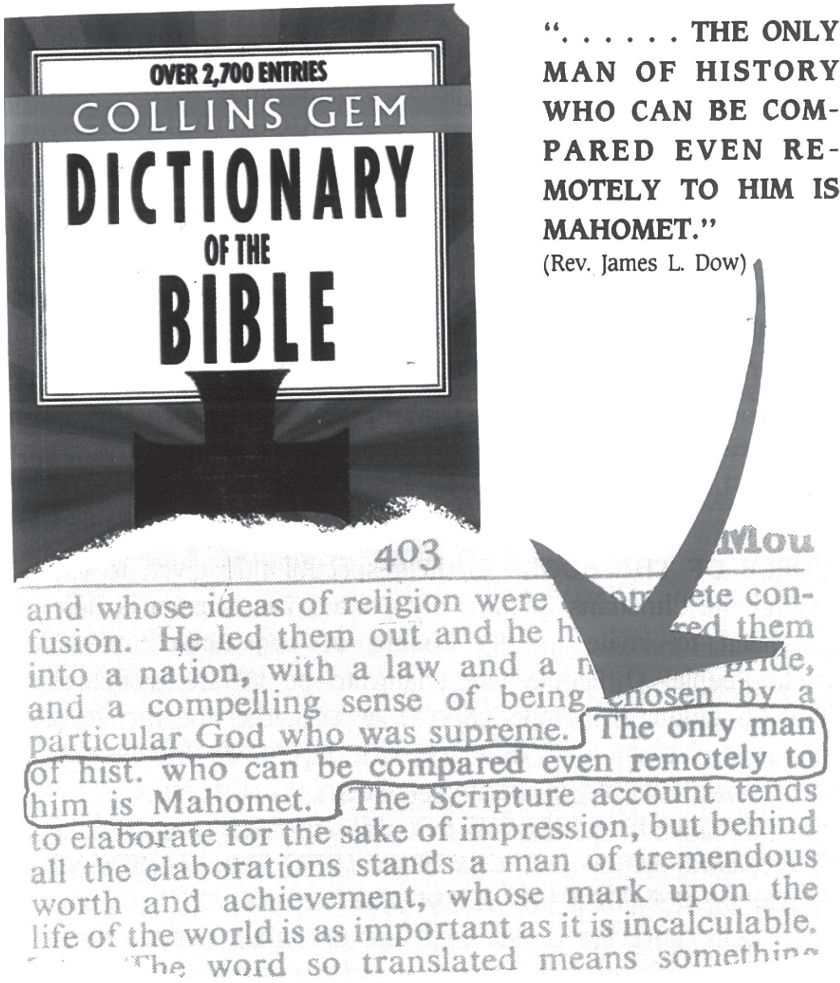


Figure 1 Reproduction of a page in Collins Gem Dictionary of the Bible

COME LET US REASON TOGETHER!

قُلْ يَٰٓأَهْلَ ٱلْكِتَٰبِ

Say, “O People of the Scripture,

تَعَالَوْا۟ إِلَىٰ كَلِمَةٍ سَوَآءٍ بَيْنَنَا وَبَيْنَكُمْ

come to a word that is equitable between us and you –

أَلَّا نَعْبُدَ إِلَّا اللَّهَ

that we will not worship except Allah

وَلَا نُشْرِكَ بِهِ شَيْئًا

and not associate anything with Him;

وَلَا يَتَّخِذَ بَعْضُنَا بَعْضًا

and not take one another

أَرْبَابًا مِّن دُونِ اللَّهِ

as lords instead of Allah.”

فَإِنْ تَوَلَّوْا فَقُولُوا اشْهَدُوا بِأَنَّا مُسْلِمُونَ

But if they turn away, then say, “Bear witness that we are Muslims (submitting to Him).”

Surah Ali 'Imran (Holy Qur'an 3:64)

“PEOPLE OF THE BOOK” is the respectful title given to the Jews and Christians in the Holy Qur'an. The Muslim is here commanded to invite – **“O People of the Book!”** – O Learned People! O People who claim to be the recipients of Divine Revelation, of a Holy Scripture; let us gather together onto a common platform – **“that we worship none but God”**, because none but God is worthy of worship, not because *“THE LORD THY LORD IS A JEALOUS GOD VISITING THE INIQUITY OF THE FATHERS UPON THE CHILDREN UNTO THE THIRD AND FOURTH GENERATION OF THEM THAT HATE ME.”* (Exodus 20:5). But because He is our Lord and Cherisher, our Sustainer and Evolver, worthy of all praise, prayer and devotion.

In the abstract the Jews and the Christians would agree to all the three propositions contained in this Qur'anic verse. In practice they fail. Apart from doctrinal lapses from the unity of the One True God, (**Allah subhanahu wa ta-ala**) there is the question of a consecrated Priesthood (among the Jews it was hereditary also), as if a mere human being – **Cohen**, or **Pope**, or **Priest**, or **Brahman** – could claim superiority apart

from his learning and the purity of his life, or could stand between man and God in some special sense. **ISLAM DOES NOT RECOGNISE PRIESTHOOD!**

The Creed of Islam is given to us here in a nutshell:

قُولُوا ءَامَنَّا بِاللَّهِ

Say, (O believers), "We have believed in Allah

وَمَا أُنْزِلَ إِلَيْنَا

and what has been revealed to us

وَمَا أُنْزِلَ إِلَىٰ إِبْرَاهِيمَ وَإِسْمَاعِيلَ وَإِسْحَاقَ وَيَعْقُوبَ وَالْأَسْبَاطِ

and what has been revealed to Abraham and Ishmael and Isaac and Jacob and

the Descendants

وَمَا أُوتِيَ مُوسَىٰ وَعِيسَىٰ

and what was given to Moses and Jesus

وَمَا أُوتِيَ النَّبِيُّونَ مِنْ رَبِّهِمْ

and what was given to the prophets from their Lord.

لَا نُفَرِّقُ

We make no distinction

بَيْنَ أَحَدٍ مِنْهُمْ

between any of them,

وَنَحْنُ لَهُ مُسْلِمُونَ

and we are Muslims (in submission) to Him."

Surah al-Baqarah (Holy Qur'an 2:136)

The Muslim position is clear. The Muslim does not claim to have a religion peculiar to himself. Islam is not a sect or an ethnic religion. In its view all religions are one, for the Truth is one. **IT WAS THE SAME RELIGION PREACHED BY ALL THE EARLIER PROPHETS.** (Holy Qur'an 42:13). It was the truth taught by all the inspired Books. In essence it amounts to a consciousness of the Will and Plan of God and a joyful submission to that Will and Plan. **IF ANYONE WANTS A RELIGION OTHER THAN THAT, HE IS FALSE TO HIS OWN NATURE, AS HE IS FALSE TO GOD'S WILL AND PLAN.** Such a one cannot expect guidance, for he has deliberately renounced guidance.

PART TWO

MUHAMMAD
THE NATURAL SUCCESSOR TO
CHRIST

(Peace be upon Him)

CHAPTER ONE

THE FINAL MESSENGER

وَمُبَشِّرًا بِرَسُولٍ

“And bringing good tidings of a messenger

يَأْتِي مِن بَعْدِي

to come after me,

أَسْمُهُوَ أَحْمَدُ

whose name is Ahmad.”

Surah as-Saf (Holy Qur'an 61:6)¹⁷

MULTI-FACETED SUCCESSION

Successions are of many kinds like the birthright of the **“first-born”** as in Jewish law. Or the ascending of the oldest son or daughter to the kingly throne. Or by election, to select a candidate by the vote of the majority. Or Theologically, an appointment by Divine Decree of God's chosen Messengers. Like the call of Abraham, Moses, Jesus or Muhammad (May the Peace and Blessings of God be upon Them All) who were appointed or **“anointed”**¹⁸ in consecration to their office.

Muhammad's (PBUH) succession to Jesus Christ (PBUH) is multi-faceted.

¹⁷ This refers to Moses. See Yusuf Ali's commentaries No. 4784 to this verse.

¹⁸ **“ANOINTED”** or appointed; Hebrew word *“Messiah”*. See my book **“Christ in Islam”** for fuller explanation.

1. Chronologically, in history as a sequence of event in time.
2. By being Chosen¹⁹ by God.
3. In the fulfilment of the prophecies of his predecessors, and last but not least...
4. By bringing the Guidance of God to perfection – **“For he will Guide you into all Truth.”** said Jesus Christ.

HISTORICALLY

The Holy Prophet Moses preceded Jesus Christ (PBUH) by some 1300 years and Muhammad (PBUH) succeeded to that high office vacated by Jesus some six centuries later.

It was the 12 years of **Rabi I.**, in the year of the Elephant, or the 29th of August 570 of the Christian Era²⁰ that Muhammad the Praiseworthy, to whom all praise is due, was born in the sacred city of Makkah in pagan Arabia. His people the Quraish remembered the year of his birth as the **“Era of the Elephant”**, because just two months before the birth of the child Abraha al-Ashram, the Abyssinian viceroy of Yemen had attacked the sacred sanctuary at Makkah at the head of the troops riding a huge African elephant. A terrifying sight never to be erased from their memory and a still more shocking end to the invasion – the miraculous destruction of Abraha and his army as recorded in **Surah al-Fil** or the Elephant –

أَلَمْ تَرَ كَيْفَ فَعَلَ رَبُّكَ بِأَصْحَابِ الْفِيلِ

Have you not considered, (O Muhammad), how your Lord dealt with the companions of the elephant?

أَلَمْ يَجْعَلْ كَيْدَهُمْ فِي تَضْلِيلٍ

Did He not make their plan into misguidance?

وَأَرْسَلَ عَلَيْهِمْ طَيْرًا أَبَابِيلَ

And He sent against them birds in flocks,

19 **“CHOSEN”** Arabic – **Mustafa**. A title of the Prophet of Islam.

20 Always use A.C. (After Christ) or C.E. (Christian Era) and not A.D. As Muslims often do unthinkingly.

تَرْمِيهِمْ بِحِجَارَةٍ مِّن سِجِّيلٍ

Striking them with stones of hard clay.

فَجَعَلَهُمْ كَعَصْفٍ مَّأْكُولٍ

And He made them like eaten straw.

Surah al-Fil (Holy Qur'an 105:1–5)²¹

GOD'S OWN STANDARDS

God Almighty chooses His Own Messengers. He uses His Own Standards although we may not always understand the wisdom of it. Paul cries the anomaly –

For the Jews require a sign
(miracles to convince) and the
Greeks seek after wisdom:

(Holy Bible) 1 Corinthians 1:22

But wordly-wise as Paul was, he found that his wisdom was “**a stumbling-block**” to the Jews and “**foolishness**” to the Greeks.

God chose Moses (PBUH) a man who was a fugitive from justice and a stutterer. The Holy Bible calls him a man with “**uncircumcised lips.**” (Exodus 6:12)

Despite his difficulties when commissioned to confront Pharaoh, the greatest tyrant of the age, Moses (PBUH) cries out to the God of Mercy –

قَالَ رَبِّ اشْرَحْ لِي صَدْرِي

(Moses) said, “My Lord, expand for me my breast (with assurance)”²²

وَيَسِّرْ لِي أَمْرِي

And ease for me my task

21 Consult Yusuf Ali's commentary on these verses.

22 Meaning give me courage, make me bold.

وَأَحْلُلْ عُقْدَةً مِّن لِّسَانِي

And untie the knot from my tongue

يَفْقَهُوا قَوْلِي

That they may understand my speech.

وَأَجْعَلْ لِّي وَزِيرًا مِّنْ أَهْلِي

And appoint for me a minister from my family

هَارُونَ أَخِي

Aaron, my brother.

أَشْدِّدْ بِهِ أَزْرِي

Increase through him my strength

وَأَشْرِكْهُ فِي أَمْرِي

And let him share my task

كَيْ نُسَبِّحَكَ كَثِيرًا

That we may exalt You much

وَنَذْكُرَكَ كَثِيرًا

And remember You much.

إِنَّكَ كُنتَ بِنَا بَصِيرًا

Indeed, You are of us ever Seeing.”

قَالَ قَدْ أُوتِيتَ سُؤْلَكَ يَمُوسَى

(Allah) said, “You have been granted your request, O Moses.”

Surah Ta-Ha (Holy Qur'an 20:25–36)

WHY “SUPPOSED”?

Then comes Jesus (PBUH) who was chosen by God. According to Christian teachings, he was a carpenter and the son of a carpenter, with dubious genealogy as recorded in the Gospels –

*And Jesus himself began to be
about thirty years of age, being
(as was supposed)²³ the son of Joseph...*

(Holy Bible) Luke 3:23

Acknowledged today by a thousand million Muslims that Jesus Christ (PBUH) was born miraculously – without any male intervention; the followers of Christ created two separate genealogies for a man who had no genealogy. Between the Gospels of Matthew and Luke that give this mighty Messenger of God sixty-six fathers and grandfathers. And of these two separate lists only one name is common to these two lists and that is of Joseph the Carpenter, who does not fit in anywhere because, as Luke records above, he was only the **“SUPPOSED”** father of Jesus.²⁴

EVEN BISHOPS DOUBT

In a “SHOCK SURVEY OF ANGLICAN BISHOPS” in June 1984 it was revealed that 31 of their 39 Bishops thought that **“Christ's miracles, the virgin birth and the resurrection might not have happened exactly as described in the Bible.”**

In deference to the Bishops of the Church of England (the “Anglicans”) the Church of Scotland most respectfully omitted any reference to the **“Virgin Birth”** from its most recent publication **“A STATEMENT OF FAITH.”** The topic of the miraculous conception of Jesus (PBUH) is getting increasingly hotter for Western Christianity to handle as you see here at Figure 2 on page 35.

23 The words you see here in brackets are the exact replica from the King James and the Roman Catholic versions of the phrase – **“(as was supposed)”** brackets and all.

24 Consult **“Is the Bible God's Word?” Vol. II Part 2** for a fuller explanation of these anomalies.

The Daily News

DURBAN, TUESDAY, MAY 22, 1990

Virgin Birth omitted by Church of Scotland

LONDON: Direct reference to the Virgin Birth has been omitted from the Church of Scotland's new publication, *A Statement of Faith*, to "avoid potential division among the church's members".

The Rev David Beckett, secretary of the special working party that produced the publication, said the omission would move the Church of Scotland away from traditional Anglo-Catholic theology and towards the more liberal faction of the Church of England championed by the Bishop of Durham, David Jenkins.

The new document was debated by the Church of Scotland's annual General Assembly in Edinburgh. Designed to express the Westminster Confession, written in the 1640s, in a more up-to-date language, the church's Panel on Doctrine also took the opportunity to tailor the text on the Virgin Birth.

Said Mr Beckett: "We wanted to come up with a statement that was inclusive rather than divisive. One that would be welcomed by the whole church, not just those who accept the Virgin Birth as a historical fact, but also by those who regard it as mainly pictorial theology."

Leading churchmen claim the Westminster Confession has not been replaced, merely summarised and updated.
—Foreign service

Figure 2 Reproduction from The Daily News - May 22, 1990

AND GOD CHOSE JESUS (PBUH)

Jesus Christ (PBUH) though spiritually rich in wisdom, light and truth; philosophised light-heartedly about the beggars of the world, when he said:

There came unto him (Jesus) a woman having an alabaster box of very precious ointment, and poured it on his head...

But when his disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose is this waste? For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poor. ...he (Jesus) said unto them... For ye have the poor always with you, but (poor) me ye have not always.

(Holy Bible) Matthew 26:7-11

But when destitution stared him in the face, when poverty, penury and need touched his own dear self; he cried pathetically:

And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the son of man (referring to himself) hath not where to lay his head.

(Holy Bible) Matthew 8:20 also repeated in Luke 9:58

And yet God chose him (Jesus PBUH): Unique and inscrutable are Thy ways O Lord!

M-U-S-T-A-F-A THE CHOSEN ONE

It is He who has sent among the unlettered a Messenger from themselves reciting to them His verses and purifying them and teaching them the Book and wisdom, – although they were before in clear error –

Surah al-Jumu'ah (Holy Qur'an 62:2)

Amazing as it may seem, I am not amazed anymore! For this is His way – He chooses an **Ummiy**²⁵ non-literate Prophet for an **Ummiy** illiterate nation.

“A poor shepherd people, roaming unnoticed in its desserts since the creation of the world: a hero-prophet was sent down to them with a word they could believe: see, the unnoticed becomes world-notable, the small has grown

25 **Ummiy**: “Unlettered”. “One other circumstance we must not forget: that he had no school-learning: of the thing we call school-learning; none at all.” *Thomas Carlyle* in his “Heroes and Hero-worship”.

world-great; within one century afterwards, Arabia is at Granada (Spain) on this hand, at Delhi (India) on that; - glancing in valour and splendour and the light of genius, Arabia shines through long ages over a great section of the world. Belief is great, life giving. The history of a nation becomes fruitful, soul elevating, great, so soon as it believes. These Arabs, the man Mahomet, and that one century, - is it not as if a spark had fallen, one spark, on a world of what seemed black unnoticeable sand; but lo, the sand proves explosive powder, blazes heaven high from Delhi to Granada! I said, the great man was always as lightning out of heaven; the rest of men waited for him like fuel, and then they too would flame."

Thus concluded the speech of Thomas Carlyle, one of the greatest thinkers of the past century. It was Friday, the 8th of May 1840. His theme – **"The Hero as Prophet"**. His audience were Anglicans – English Christians.

THE CHOSEN PEOPLE

God chooses His Messengers and God chooses His People. In the realm of the Spirit no nation was as favoured as the Jews and yet Moses (PBUH) is made to bewail against his own people –

Ye have been rebellious against the Lord from the day I knew you.

(Holy Bible) Deuteronomy 9:24

In this last will and testament of Moses (PBUH) the Israelites frustrate their "meek and gentle" Messenger who is forced to rail against their continual stubborn resistance and arrogant attitudes to God's Guidance –

For I knew thy rebellion, and thy stiff neck: behold, while I am yet alive with you this day, ye have been rebellious against the lord; and how much more after my death?

(Holy Bible) Deuteronomy 31:27

Alas how true! I am not going to philosophise on God's choice. But in the very next chapter the fire of God's anger is kindled to a blaze and He decries the Jews –

*They have moved me to jealousy with that which is not God; they (the Jews) have provoked me to anger with their vanities: and I will move them to jealousy with those which are Not a People; I will provoke them to anger with a Foolish Nation.*²⁶

(Holy Bible) Deuteronomy 32:21

JEW'S SUBSTITUTED

Anyone with a modicum of Scriptural knowledge will be able to guess who in the eyes of these arrogant, racist Jews is **“not-a-people”** – a nonentity and **‘a foolish nation’** if not their Ishmaelite cousins – the Arabs who in the words of Thomas Carlyle have been **“ROAMING UNNOTICED IN ITS DESERTS SINCE THE CREATION OF THE WORLD.”**!?

THE ARABS. Alexander the Great passed them by; the Persians passed them by; the Egyptians passed them by; and the Romans passed them by. It would have been an absolute liability for any nation to conquer and colonise them. But the Creator did not pass the by. He picked them up from the depths of darkness and transformed them into torchbearers of light and learning to the world. **“I will move them (the Jews) to jealousy.”**²⁷ This jealousy is a cultivated sickness. Remember, Sarah and Hagar the two wives of Abraham (PBUH) – the Friend of God. The jealousy of Sarah was bequeathed to her children and on to nations and tribes yet unborn.

Not so long ago I read a book on the discovery of medicine written by a Jewish medical man. I can unfortunately not remember the name of the author and failed to retrace the book. However, the wordings of the tribute paid by this Jewish author to his Semitic (Arab) cousins have made an indelible impression on my mind. And I quote from memory: **“GOATHERDS AND CAMEL DRIVERS SITTING ON THRONE OF THE CAESARS.”**

Full of spite, venom and sarcasm, but how true! This is what God did and always does. He honours whom He wills. This is what He does to show His Mighty Hand (Power)!

26 Emphasis are mine.

27 If the Romans or the Greeks had displaced the Jews as the “Chosen of God” then the envy would not have been as acute or as intolerable to the Jews.

وَأِنْ تَتَوَلَّوْا

And if you turn away,

يَسْتَبْدِلْ قَوْمًا غَيْرَكُمْ

He will replace you with another people;

ثُمَّ لَا يَكُونُوا أَمْثَلَكُمْ

then they will not be the likes of you.

Surah Muhammad (Holy Qur'an 47:38)²⁸

"It is surely one of the greatest miracles of history that from the backwater of Arabia there should have exploded a group of men, companions of a prophet, who within the space of a few brief decades were able to create a magnificent civilisation extending from the Pyrenees to the gates of China."

Abdul Wadud Shalabi in "Islam Religion of Life"

THE LAST WARNING

The foregoing is the exact fulfilment of Jesus Christ's (PBUH), (the last of the great Jewish Prophets) own prediction of the displacement of the Jewish race in the spiritual guidance of man. In the words of the Master himself –

Therefore I say unto you (Jews)

The kingdom of God²⁹ shall be taken away from you

(Jews), and shall be given to a nation bringing

forth the fruits thereof.

(Holy Bible) Matthew 21:43

28 With this book still in your hands, please memorize the Arabic words with their meaning phrase by phrase..

29 **"Kingdom of God"**: The honour, the privilege of being God's chosen people to guide mankind. **"Ye (Jews) shall be unto me (God Almighty) a kingdom of priests, and a holy nation."** (Exodus 19:6). This grand commission ended with Jesus (PBUH).

CHAPTER TWO

IN THE WORDS OF THE MASTER

JUST ONE FULL PROPHECY³⁰

وَإِذْ قَالَ عِيسَى ابْنُ مَرْيَمَ

And (mention) when Jesus, the son of Mary, said,

يَبَنِي إِسْرَءِيلَ إِنِّي رَسُولُ اللَّهِ إِلَيْكُمْ

“O children of Israel, indeed I am the messenger of Allah to you

مُصَدِّقًا لِمَا بَيْنَ يَدَيَّ مِنَ التَّوْرَةِ

confirming what came before me of the Torah

وَمُبَشِّرًا بِرَسُولٍ يَأْتِي مِنْ بَعْدِي

and bringing good tidings of a messenger to come after me,

أَسْمُهُوَ أَحْمَدُ^ط

whose name is Ahmad.”

Surah as-Saf (Holy Qur'an 61:6)

30 This section only expounds a single prophecy from the New Testament. Refer to Part 1 of this volume – **“What the Bible says about Muhammad (PBUH)”** for prophecies from the Old Testament.

A COMMON TRAIT

Just a cursory glance, a rapid reading, a hurried look at the previous verse will satisfy the Muslim that Jesus Christ (PBUH) did indeed prophesy the advent of Muhammad (PBUH), the Messenger of God. The Muslim is puzzled at the stubbornness, vanity and tunnel vision of the Christian which prevents him from seeing his own inner light and listening to his conscience so as not to recognise the obvious.

The Christian in turn is puzzled at the obstinacy of the Jews, a nation endowed with such creative genius, which, despite a thousand and one prophecies in their own Bible (the Old Testament) regarding the coming of the “**Messiah**”, are totally incapable of recognising their lord and “**saviour**”. Are they both somewhat blind?

No! Neither the Jews nor the Christians are necessarily impervious to the truth. The trouble is that we **all** pick up our prejudices from childhood. The Americans called it being “**programmed**”.

Simply reading the verses or listening to lectures and getting that smug satisfaction of being in the know will not help spreading the truth. This is the age of the “**EVERYMAN**”.³¹ The age of the woman or child to get involved. Each according to his or her capacity. Memorize the above verse with its meaning as well as the quotations preceding and those that follow so that you may feel equipped to share our **Deen** with non-Muslims. There are no short cuts to **Da’wah** (propagation)!

PRODUCE YOUR PROOF!

Perhaps this is not the first time you are reading or might have heard about the prophecies in the Jewish and Christian Scriptures regarding the advent of the last and final Messenger of God – Muhammad (PBUH) the Mercy unto all mankind. And perhaps you have at times made some half-hearted and skimpy efforts at suggesting that our **Nabi-e-Kareem** was prophesied in the Holy Bible. But when proof was demanded, you simply not able to, because you had not done any homework. Remember, there is no substitute for hard work. I believe what I say and I practice what I preach, **Insha-Allah!**

I have personally memorized various selections from the Bible in a

31 “**EVERYMAN**”: is a new series of books to equip every man or woman to learn an art of trade such as – plumbing, pottery, woodwork etc. by studying at home.

dozen different languages, including Arabic and Hebrew. Not for show but because of the openings these snippets of religion create for me in propagating our faith to various language groups. Languages are the keys to people's hearts.

IN THE LAND OF THE PHARAOHS

Notwithstanding many assurances, I got stranded in Cairo for lack of an entry visa.³² A kind gentleman from the Al-Azhar, who was trying to help is obtain the relevant documents, got frustrated with the delay and in order to attend to his Friday prayers, handed me and my son Yousuf to a young Egyptian lady, well-groomed in Western attire.

After much effort and time she returned to us with the good news. "Forty dollars," she said. I asked, "For what?" "The Visas," she answered. Twenty dollars for me and twenty for my son. "But I am a guest of the Government," I insisted, she said that she knew nothing about it, so I smiled and paid.

From the lady's speech and deportment, I had sensed that she was well-educated and a lady of culture, so undauntedly I asked her again what her name was in my broken Arabic. However, her name was too novel for me to remember. I asked her further: "Are you a Muslim?" She said, "No, I am an Egyptian Christian." This was the opening I was waiting for. I began, "Do you know that before Jesus Christ departed from this world, he told his disciples," and I started to quote, now in meticulous Arabic, a verse from the Arabic Bible, which I had memorized for opportunities just like this particular one.

THE TRANSLATION

I had no need to translate the above Arabic to her, because as an Arab she understood the verse perfectly. But for the benefit of those who do not know Arabic I give you its exact equivalent from the English Bible, which I also had taken the trouble to memorize in my spare time. You can create that spare time also if you have true love for Allah's **Deen** and wish to share it with others.

***Nevertheless, I tell you the truth;
it is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not***

32 The Muslims of South Africa have a very rough time in all the O.A.U. and Arab countries. The poor ignorant customs officers do not know the difference between the oppressors and the oppressed of my country.

away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you.

(Holy Bible) John 16:7

“AL-MOOUZZI” THE COMFORTER

I implore my brethren who can read the Arabic to memorize it together with the English translation above and create opportunities for using it. Learn the verses in conjunction with other languages that you know. There will be a definite all-round improvement in your fluency, and proficiency in preaching Islam to other people.

The word “**comforter**” above is “*al-Moouzzi*” in Arabic. I asked the lady, “Who is the “*al-Mouzzi*” of this prophecy?” She said, “I do not know.” She was honest. She did not beat around the bush. So I said that we are told in the Holy Qur’an that Jesus Christ (PBUH) had told his disciples –

وَمُبَشِّرًا بِرَسُولٍ

“...and bringing good tidings of a messenger

يَأْتِي مِنْ بَعْدِي

to come after me,

أَسْمُهُ أَهْمَدُ

whose name is Ahmad.”

Surah as-Saf (Holy Qur’an 61:6)

I continued that, “This **Ahmed** is another name for **Muhammad**, and **Muhammad** is **Mouzzi!**” “Very funny,” she exclaimed, “these Egyptians” (meaning the Muslim Egyptians) “take us to the cinema, they take us” (meaning Christian women) “to the dance, but no one ever tells us anything about this **Mouzzi!**” Through her Allah **subhanahu wata-ala**, armed me with a fourteen-pound sledgehammer before leaving Cairo Airport. **Alhumdo-lillah!** And, did I use that sledgehammer!

An integrated explanation of Comforter/Mouzzi if John 16:7 and Ahmed/Muhammad of the Holy Qur’an 61:6 will be slotted in place when explaining the **Ayah** (the verse) heading this chapter.

BIBLICAL CONFIRMATION

Remember, that in the sixth century of the Christian Era, when Muhammad (PBUH) was chanting God's words which was systematically **“put into his mouth,”**³³ the Arabic Bible had not yet been translated. He could never have known that he was fulfilling and confirming the utterances of his predecessor (Jesus PBUH) to the letter.

ONLY FOR THE ISRAELITES

وَإِذْ قَالَ عِيسَى ابْنُ مَرْيَمَ

1. And (mention) when Jesus, the son of Mary, said,

يَبَنِي إِسْرَءِيلَ

“O children of Israel,

إِنِّي رَسُولُ اللَّهِ إِلَيْكُمْ

indeed I am the messenger of Allah to you

JESUS FOR JEWS ONLY

These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them saying,

*Go ye not into the way of the Gentiles,*³⁴

and into the city of the Samaritans enter ye not:

But go ye rather unto The Lost Sheep of the House of Israel

(Holy Bible) Matthew 10:5-6

NOT FOR DOGS

And behold a woman of Canaan³⁵ came...and cried unto him saying, have mercy on me...my daughter is seriously possessed with a devil.

33 Muhammad (PBUH) fulfills yet another prophecy, see page 14 of part 1 “**What the Bible says about Muhammad (PBUH)**” for this aspect.

34 **Gentiles:** non-Jews

35 Mark 7:26 says that the woman was **Greek**.

But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and begged him, saying, Send her away: for she crieth after us.

But he answered and said, I am Not Sent But Unto The Lost Sheep of the House of Israel.

But she came and knelt before him saying, Lord, help me.

But he answered her and said, It Is Not Fair To Take The Children's Bread And Cast It To The Dogs.³⁶

(Holy Bible) Matthew 15:22-26

It goes to the credit of this Jewish prophet, that he practiced what he preached. In his lifetime he never converted a single Gentile (non-Jew). And of his hand-picked elect (his twelve disciples), he made sure that they belong to his tribe so that his other prophecy might find fulfilment: **“when the son of man** (Jesus PBUH referring to himself) **shall sit on the throne of his glory, ye** (the disciples) **also shall sit upon twelve tribes of Israel.”** (Matthew 19:28).

NO NEW RELIGION

مُصَدِّقًا لِّمَا بَيْنَ يَدَيِّ مِنَ التَّوْرَةِ

2. “Confirming what came before me of the Torah”³⁷

The Messiah was no mealy-mouthed Messenger among the Jews. Like his predecessors Amos and Ezekiel or Isaiah and Jeremiah, he was trenchant in his condemnation of Jewish formalism and hypocrisies. His novel approach and militant preaching created certain misgivings amongst the religious hierarchy. The Scribes and the Pharisees came to him again and again to test him as to his **bona fides**.³⁸

To allay their suspicions that he had brought no newfangled religion, and that his was the confirmation of all the teachings that had gone before him. He says –

Think not that I am come to destroy the law (Hebrew

36 Meaning non-Jews

37 **“LAW”**: The word in the Arabic text here is “*Taurat*.” (Heb. “Torah.”)

38 His Genuineness.

– *Torah*), or the prophets: I am come not to destroy, but to fulfil.

For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law (Torah) till all be fulfilled.

Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.

(Holy Bible) Matthew 5:17-19

Compare this phrase “**CONFIRMING THE LAW (WHICH CAME) BEFORE ME,**” – which is the Yusuf Ali translation on the third line of the verse (*confirming what came before me of the Torah*) at the beginning of this chapter on page 40 with the three verses of Matthew above, and you will not fail to note that there is no wordiness in the Qur’anic diction. It conveys God’s Message concisely, with clarity and precision.

“The Father³⁹ of truth chooses his own prophets, and he speaks to them in a voice stronger than the voice of thunder.”

Sayed Amir Ali in “*The Spirit of Islam*”

The Qur’an had to **Confirm**, **Correct** and **Complete** Divine Revelation, or whatever was left of it in unworthy hands.

وَمَا كَانَ هَذَا الْقُرْآنُ

And it was not (possible) for this Qur'an

أَنْ يُفْتَرَى مِنْ دُونِ اللَّهِ

to be produced by other than Allah,

39 **FATHER:** The use of the word “**FATHER**” in relation to God was cut from Islamic terminology owing to the perversion of the idea among the Christians.

وَلَكِنْ تَصْدِيقَ الَّذِي بَيْنَ يَدَيْهِ

but (it is) a confirmation of what was before it

وَتَفْصِيلَ الْكِتَابِ

and a detailed explanation of the (former) Scripture,

لَا رَيْبَ فِيهِ مِنْ رَبِّ الْعَالَمِينَ

about which there is no doubt, from the Lord of the worlds.

Surah Yunus (Holy Qur'an 10:37)

THE GOOD NEWS

وَمُبَشِّرًا بِرَسُولٍ يَأْتِي مِنْ بَعْدِي

3. *"And bringing good tidings of a messenger to come after me,*

أَسْمُهُ أَهْمَدُ

whose name is Ahmad."

Surah as-Saf (Holy Qur'an 61:6)

I will not apologise, nor am I called upon to apologise for reproducing here **verbatim** (a word for word) commentary on the word "**AHMED**", from ABDULLAH YUSUF ALI'S English translation. But before I do that permit me to pay a fitting tribute to the **KING FAHD HOLY QUR'AN PRINTING COMPLEX** in Al-Madinah Al-Munawwarah which is turning out millions of Holy Qur'ans in many different languages.

Their reason for using YUSUF ALI'S as a base for their reproduction is summed up in these words:

"A number of individuals have in the past ventured to translate the Qur-an, but their works have generally been private attempts, greatly influenced by their own prejudices. In order to produce a reliable translation free from personal bias, a Royal decree (No. 19888, dated 16/8/1400 AH) was issued by the Custodian of the

Two Holy Mosques, King Fahd ibn Abdul Aziz, at that time the deputy prime minister ... by the late Ustadh **ABDULLAH YUSUF ALI** was consequently chosen for its distinguishing characteristics, such as a highly elegant style, a choice of words close to the meaning of the original text, accompanied by scholarly notes and commentaries.”

The Presidency of Islamic Researches, Ifta, Call
and Guidance

Out of over six thousand profound explanatory notes in Yusuf Ali's translation, the following is just one of three explaining prophecy in the words of Jesus (PBUH) regarding the advent of Muhammad (PBUH) the Messenger of God.

Note No. 5438:

“**Ahmed**”, or “**Muhammad**”, the Praised one, is almost a translation of the Greek word **Periclytos**. In the present Gospel of John 14:16, 15:26, and 16:7, the word “Comforter” in the English version for the Greek word “**Paracletos**”, which means “Advocate”, “one called to the help of another, a kind friend”, rather than “Comforter”. Our doctors contend that Paracletos is a corrupt reading for Periclytos, and that in the original saying of Jesus there was a prophecy of our holy Prophet **Ahmed** by name. Even if we had read Paraclete, it would imply to the Holy Prophet, who is “a Mercy for all creatures” (H.Q. 21:107) and “most kind and merciful to the Believers (H.Q. 9:128) See also note 416 to H.Q. 3:81.

فَلَمَّا جَاءَهُمْ بِالْبَيِّنَاتِ قَالُوا هَذَا سِحْرٌ مُّبِينٌ

4. But when he came to them with clear evidences, they said, “This is obvious magic.”

Thus concludes (**Ayah**) verse 6 of (**Surah**) chapter 61 under discussion. “The Prophet of Islam was foretold in many ways; and when he came he showed forth many Clear Signs, for his whole life from beginning to end was one vast miracle. He fought and won against odds. Without learning from men he taught the highest wisdom. He melted hearts that were hard, and he strengthened hearts that were tender and required support. In all his sayings and doings men of discernment could see the working of God's hand; yet the sceptics called it *SORCERY* – jugglery – magic!

FORGER AND JUGGLER! NO, NO! THIS GREAT

*FIERY HEART, SEETHING, SIMMERING LIKE A GREAT
FURNACE OF THOUGHTS,
WAS NOT A JUGGLER'S.*

Thomas Carlyle, page 88 in his book – “Heroes
and Hero-worship”

And they called his miraculous fulfilment of prophecy magic, jugglery,
enchantment – that which became the most solid fact of human history –
Islam!

CHAPTER THREE

MUHAMMAD (PBUH) IS THE “PARACLETE”

To the sincere seekers of Truth it is obvious that Muhammad (PBUH) is the promised **Paraclete** or Comforter, alternatively called Helper, Advocate, Counsellor, etc of the prophecies of Jesus (PBUH) in the Gospel of St. John. There are millions of Christians – men and women like our good lady at the Cairo Airport (see page 42) who are hungry for this simple straightforward Message. But alas, we can only weep with Jesus (PBUH) for our utter ineptitude –

***The harvest truly is plenteous, but
the workers are few.***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 9:37

LANGUAGE OF JESUS (PBUH)

In the Holy Qur'an God Almighty puts the name **“Ahmed”** which is another name for Muhammad (PBUH) in the mouth of Jesus (PBUH). The Christian controversialist, Bible-thumper, Hot-Gospeller flippantly scoffs at the suggestion. The Christian missionary does not deny that Jesus (PBUH) did make a prophecy about someone coming after him. But “Ahmed” to him seems to far-fetched.

The most commonly accepted name by Christendom is **“Comforter.”** It does not really matter. Comforter or any other equivalent term will do. We will settle for Comforter as used in the most popular Bible Translation the **“King James Version.”**

Ask your adversary, your disputant whether Jesus (PBUH) spoke the English language? “Most definitely not!” any Christian will say. If you are sharing this with an Arab Christian then you ask him whether his “lord” used the word “MOUZZI?” Surely not, because Arabic was not his language. Did Jesus (PBUH) prophesy “**uMthokozisi?**” (Comforter in Zulu) or “**Trooster**” from the Afrikaans Bible? The answer again is a definite “NO!”

The Christians are rightfully boasting that they now have translated the complete Bible into hundreds of different languages and dialects, and the New Testament (in which this prophecy abounds) into more than two thousand different languages and dialects. So the Christian genius has invented more than 2000 different names in 2000 different languages for this one candidate – Comforter!

PNEUMA: GHOST OR SPIRIT?

The Church fathers has developed a sickness by translating names of people, for which they had no right to do. For example like **Esau** to Jesus, **Messiah** to Christ, **Cephas** to Peter and so on.

The closest one can ever get to the original utterance of Jesus (PBUH) in the Christian Scriptures is the Greek word “**Paracletos**”, which also has to be rejected because the Master did not speak Greek! But let’s not be difficult for the purpose of this discussion and accept the Greek word Paracletos and its English equivalent Comforter.

Ask any learned Christian man as to who the Comforter is? You will unmistakably hear – “**The Comforter is the HOLY GHOST!**” from John 14:26. This sentence is only part of verse twenty six. We will deal with the verse fully in due course. But first we must educate the Christian mind with regards to this misnomer – “**Holy Ghost**”. “Pneuma” is the Greek root word for SPIRIT. There is no separate word for GHOST in the Greek manuscripts of the New Testament, and the Christians now boast 24,000 different manuscripts in their possession on which no two are identical!

The editors of the KJV (*The King James Version*) alternatively called AV (*The Authorised Version*) and the DOUAY (*The Roman Catholic Version*) of the Bibles gave preference to the word “**GHOST**” instead of the word SPIRIT when translating “**pneuma**”.

The revisers of the RSV (*Revised Standard Version*),⁴⁰ the most up-to-date version of the Bible, are going back, as claimed, to the Most Ancient manuscripts. These revisers, described as **“thirty-two scholars of the highest eminence, backed by fifty co-operating denominations,”** who courageously replaced the shady word “ghost” with the word “spirit”. Hence from now on you will read in all modern translations – **“The Comforter which is the Holy SPIRIT”**! However, the Christian crusaders and the televangelists stubbornly cling to the spooky (“ghost”-ly) past. They will not opt for the Newer Versions. It’s better fishing with the old bait – the KJV and the RCV (*Roman Catholic Version*).

With the new change in spirit, the verse under scrutiny will read:

But the Comforter, Which Is The Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

(Emphasis added)

(Holy Bible) John 14:26

You do not have to be a Bible scholar of any calibre to sense that the expression **“which is the Holy Spirit”** is actually an interpolation. It ought to be in parenthesis, in brackets, like my words which have been interpolated in the quotation, i.e. **“(emphasis added)”**. Although the editors of the RSV have expunged dozens of interpolations from their boasted Revised Standard Version, they have retained this jarring phrase which contradicts other explicit predictions of Jesus (PBUH) on the subject of the Comforter itself.

“HOLY SPIRIT” IS THE HOLY PROPHET

(i) It may be noted that no Biblical scholar of any standing has ever equated the **“paracletos”** of John in the original Greek with the Holy Ghost. Now we can say with one breath that is the Comforter is the “Holy Spirit” then that Holy Spirit is the **Holy Prophet!**

As Muslims we acknowledge that every true prophet of God is Holy and without sin. But whenever the expression “The Holy Prophet” is used among Muslims it is universally accepted as referring to the Holy Prophet

40 For greater detail on the RSV see **“Is the Bible God’s Word?”**

Muhammad (PBUH). So even if we accept the incongruous saying – **“the Comforter which is the Holy Spirit”**, as Gospel truth, even then this prophecy will fit Muhammad (PBUH) like a glove, without any stretching of its meaning.

The same John, who is supposed to have authored the Gospel bearing his name, also penned three more Epistles which are also part of the Christian Bible. Amazingly he has used the same terminology of “Holy **Spirit**” for “Holy **Prophet**”.

***Beloved, believe not every Spirit,
But try the Spirits whether they are of God; because
many false Prophets are gone out into the world.***

(Holy Bible) 1 John 4:1

You can observe that the word spirit is used here synonymously with a prophet. A true spirit is a true prophet, and a false spirit is a false prophet. But for the so-called “born-again” Christians who see only with eyes of emotion, I recommend that they lay their hands on C.I. Scofield’s Authorized King James Version of the Bible who with an Editorial Committee of 9 D.D’s adding their notes and comments. When they come to the first word **“spirit”** in the above verse they should give a notation to compare it with Matthew 7:15 which confirms that false prophets are false spirits. So according to St. John the Holy **Spirit** is the Holy **Prophet**, and the Holy Prophet is Muhammad (PBUH) the Messenger of God.

A VALID TEST

But St. John does not leave us in the air, guessing the true from the false. He gives us an acid test for recognising the true Prophet, he says –

***Hereby know ye the Spirit⁴¹ of God: Every Spirit that
confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of
God.***

(Holy Bible) 1 John 4:2

According to John’s own interpretation in verse one above the word “spirit” is synonymous with the word prophet. So verse two **“Spirit of God”** would mean Prophet of God and **“Every spirit”** would stand

41 For **SPIRIT**, read **PROPHET**.

for every Prophet. You have a right to know as to what the Holy Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) says about **Jesus Christ**.⁴²

Jesus Christ (Peace be upon Him) is spoken by name no less than 25 times in the Holy Qur'an. He is honoured as –

Isa ibn Maryam

Jesus, the son of Mary

As-saaliheen

The Righteous

Kalimatu-Llah

Spirit of God

Masih-uLlah

Christ of God

إِذْ قَالَتِ الْمَلَكَةُ يَمْرَيْمُ إِنَّ اللَّهَ يُبَشِّرُكِ بِكَلِمَةٍ مِّنْهُ اسْمُهُ
الْمَسِيحُ عِيسَى ابْنُ مَرْيَمَ وَجِيهًا فِي الدُّنْيَا وَالْآخِرَةِ وَمِنَ
الْمُقَرَّبِينَ

(And mention) when the Angels said, “O Mary, indeed Allah gives you good tidings of a word from Him, whose name will be the Messiah, Jesus, the son of Mary – distinguished in this world and the Hereafter and among those brought near (to Allah).”

Surah Ali 'Imran (Holy Qur'an 3:45)⁴³

MUHAMMAD (PBUH) IS THE “OTHER”

(ii) The Comforter in John 14:26 can never be the “Holy **Ghost**” because Jesus (PBUH) had already explained –

**And I will pray the Father, and he
shall give you Another Comforter,
that he may abide with you
for ever.**

(Holy Bible) John 14:16

42 See Vol. III Part 1 – “**Christ in Islam**” for detailed information of the high position that Jesus (PBUH) occupies in the house of Islam.

43 You can do **no** better than get your Christian friends to read this verse with its commentary directly from the Holy Qur'an.

The emphasis here is on the word **“ANOTHER”** an other, a different one, an additional one, but of the same kind, yet distinctly different from the first. Who is then the first Comforter? The Christian world is unanimous that in this case the speaker himself – Jesus Christ (PBUH) is the **first** Comforter; **then the other**, the one to follow must be of like nature, subject to the same conditions of hunger, thirst, fatigue, sorrow and death. But this promised Comforter was to **“abide with you for EVER!”** No one lives forever. Jesus (PBUH) was mortal so must the coming Comforter also be mortal. No son of man can ever be immortal.

كُلُّ نَفْسٍ ذَائِقَةُ الْمَوْتِ

Every soul will taste death.

Surah Ali 'Imran (Holy Qur'an 3:185)

ALIVE IN THEIR TEACHINGS

The soul does not really die, but when it separates from the body at the time of the death of the body, the soul will get a taste of death. But our Comforter was to **“ABIDE”**, continue, endure forever. All Comforters abide with us forever. Moses is here with us today in his **teachings**. Jesus is here with us today in his **teachings** and Muhammad is also here with us in his **teachings** today. (May the Peace and Blessings of God be upon Them All). This is not my novel idea trying to justify the preposterous. I say this with conviction and on the authority of Jesus Christ (PBUH) himself.

In Luke, chapter sixteen, Jesus (PBUH) tells us the story of the **“Rich Man, Poor Man”**. At death both find themselves at opposite ends – one in Heaven and the other in Hell. The rich man (Dives) simmering in Hell cries to Father Abraham to send the beggar (Lazarus) to assuage his thirst. But when every plea fails, he, as last favour, requests that Father Abraham send the beggar back to earth to warn his living brothers against their impending doom if they heeded not the warnings of God.

But Abraham said, “If they (those still alive on earth) won’t listen to Moses and the prophets, they won’t listen even though someone rises from the dead.” (to warn them)

(Holy Bible) Luke 16:31

Jesus (PBUH) uttered the above fact centuries after the demise of the prophets of Israel like Jeremiah, Hosea, Zechariah, etc and over thirteen hundred years after Moses (PBUH). The Pharisees at the time of Jesus (PBUH) and we today can still listen to **“MOSES AND THE PROPHETS”**, for today they are still alive, and with us here today in their **teachings**.

‘YOU’ OF THE TIME

It is said that the Comforter was promised to the immediate disciples of Jesus (PBUH) and not to a people six hundred years later:

*and he (God) shall give You another Comforter,
that he may abide with You for ever.*

(Holy Bible) John 14:16

Surprisingly, the Christian sees no difficulty in justifying the fulfilment of prophecies **“since the world began”**⁴⁴ and after over a millennium⁴⁵ when Peter in his second sermon to the Jews, reminds them:

*For Moses truly said unto the fathers,
A prophet shall the Lord
Your God raise up unto You of
Your BRETHREN, like unto me;
him shall ye hear in all things
whatsoever he shall say unto You.*

(Holy Bible) Acts 3:22

All these **“YE, YOU and YOURS”** are from the Book of Deuteronomy, chapter 18,⁴⁶ when Moses (PBUH) addressed his people and not the Jews at the time of Peter, thirteen hundred years later. The Gospel writers have out the same compromising words in the mouth of their Master which are begging for fulfilment for two thousand years. I think just one example will suffice:

*But when they persecute You in
this city, flee Ye into another:*

44 Acts 3:21

45 **Millennium:** A thousand years.

46 This prophecy also refers to the Holy Prophet.

*for verily (most assuredly) I (Jesus)
say unto You, Ye shall not have
gone over the cities of Israel till
the son of man (Jesus) be come.*

(Holy Bible) Matthew 10:23

SCANNING THE CLOUDS

These early followers of the Messiah, forever ran, forlornly fleeing persecution. They ran from one city to another in Israel, scanning every dark cloud for the descent of Jesus (PBUH) in his second coming. The missionaries see no anomaly in their millennium of unfulfilled prophecies. God Almighty did not keep them waiting for even a quarter of the time for the advent of the “**paracletos**”, – the Comforter or **Ahmed** which is another name for the Praised One. Let them show gratitude to God by accepting this Last and Final Messenger of God – **Muhammad (PBUH)!**

ADVENT OF COMFORTER CONDITIONAL

(iii) The comforter is definitely not the “**Holy Ghost**” because the coming of the Comforter was conditional whereas that of the Holy Ghost was not as we observe in the prophecy –

*Nevertheless, I tell you the truth:
It is expedient for you that I go
for If I Go Not Away, The
Comforter Will Not Come unto
you; but if I depart, I will send
him unto you.*

(Holy Bible) John 16:7

“**If I don’t go he won’t come, but if I go, I will send him.**” There are numerous instances in the Holy Bible about the coming and going of the HOLY GHOST, before the birth and departure of the Messiah. Do yourself a favour, please verify these references in your Bible –

B.C. BEFORE CHRIST’S BIRTH:

*1....and he (John the Baptist) shall be
filled with the Holy Ghost*

even from his mother’s womb.

(Holy Bible) Luke 1:15

2. ...and Elizabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost

(Holy Bible) Luke 1:41

3. And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost.

(Holy Bible) Luke 1:67

A.C. AFTER CHRIST’S BIRTH

4. ...and the Holy Ghost was upon him (Simeon).

(Holy Bible) Luke 2:26

5. And the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him (Jesus).

(Holy Bible) Luke 3:22

From the above quotations, before and after the birth of Jesus (PBUH), one cannot help admiring St. Luke who appears to be a **specialist** on the Holy Ghost. We may well ask the Christians, after the descent of the “dove”, with whose help did Jesus (PBUH) perform his many miracles if not with the help of the Holy Ghost? Let the Master himself tell us. When accused by his own people, the Jews, that he was working in league with Beelzebub (the chief of the devils) to work his miracles, Jesus (PBUH) rhetorically questions them, “**How can Satan cast out Satan?**” The Jews imputed that this spirit of holiness – the Spirit of God – which was helping him, was devilish. This was treason of the highest order. So he gives them a dire warning:

...but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, it shall never be forgiven...

(Holy Bible) Matthew 12:31

This “Holy Ghost” is none other than what Matthew himself has described in three verses before quoting the Master:

But if I (Jesus) cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the Kingdom of God is come upon you.

(Holy Bible) Matthew 12:28

Compare the same statement by another Gospel writer⁴⁷

But if I (Jesus) by the Finger Of God cast out devils, no doubt the kingdom of God is come upon you.

(Holy Bible) Luke 11:20

You do not have to be a Bible scholar to understand that the expressions (a) **“Finger of God”** (b) **“Spirit of God”** and (c) **“Holy Ghost”** are all synonymous phrases. So the Holy Ghost was helping Jesus (PBUH) in his ministry. The Holy Ghost was also helping his disciples on their missions of preaching and healing. If there is still any doubt in your minds about the workings of the Holy Ghost then please read:

EMPTY PROMISE

...as my Father hath sent me, even so I send you (the disciples of Jesus), and even when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive Ye The Holy Ghost.

(Holy Bible) John 20: 21-22

This was surely no empty promise. The disciples must have received the gift of the Holy Ghost. So if the **“Holy Ghost”** was with (1) John the Baptist, (2) Elizabeth, (3) Zacharias, (4) Simeon, (5) Jesus and (6) the Disciples of Jesus; then all this makes nonsense of the saying that **“if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you.”** Therefore the Comforter is

⁴⁷ Give a second glance at the two verses, top and bottom and you cannot help concluding that they are almost identical. Why? The answer is in **“Is the Bible God’s Word?”** See Vol. II Part 2.

not the Holy **Ghost**!

The verse under discussion is John 16:7. I remember the thrill and joy I got out of it when quoting it in Arabic to the Coptic Christian lady in the land of the Pharaohs (page 42). The pleasure is immense when expounding Biblical verses in the standard native language of a country or locality. I have done it in a dozen different vernaculars. Won't you master the above verse in a language or two of your choice for the good of Islam?

AFRIKAANS A UNIQUE LANGUAGE

Of all the languages in which I have mastered the verse in question, I have derived the greatest excitement and benefit from Afrikaans. It is a language of the ruling race in South Africa. It is the youngest of the world's languages. The language is unique. In fact every language is unique. But Afrikaans is in a class of its own. It also happens to be the mother tongue of half the Muslim population of South Africa who were brought here as prisoners of war and enslaved by the Christians; that is simply by force of circumstances. For **their** immediate benefit and for your information I reproduce the verse here:

***Maar ek sê julle die waarheid: dit is
vir julle voordelig dat ek weggaan;
want as ek Nie weggaan Nie, sal
die Trooster⁴⁸ Nie na julle kom
Nie; maar as ek weggaan, sal ek
hom na julle stuur.***

(Holy Bible) Johanness 16:7

Believe it or not! It is the genius of this language that it uses four negatives **NIE, NIE, NIE, NIE** to prove a positive! The departure of Jesus is an absolute imperative for the coming of the “**Trooster**,” the Comforter to come! This verse in this language has opened many doors for me, other than religious, and it locks the door against the idea of the “**Comforter which is the Holy Ghost**”. (John 14:26).

48 **Trooster**: Now changed to “**Voorspraak!**” See page 75.

DISCIPLES NOT FIT

We now come to the four most comprehensive and decisive verses in John, chapter sixteen to solve the enigma of the Successor to Christ. For Jesus (PBUH) did truly say:

***I have yet Many Things to say
unto you, but Ye Cannot Bear
Them Now.***

(Holy Bible) John 16:12

We will later tie up the phrase “**many things**” from the above verse with “**guide you into all truth**” from the verse that follows, when discussing it.⁴⁹ For now, let us discuss the phrase – “**YE CANNOT BEAR THEM NOW**”.

The truth of this statement “**ye cannot bear them now**” is repeated monotonously throughout the pages of the New Testament:

***And he (Jesus) saith unto them (the disciples),
Why are ye fearful,
O Ye Of Little Faith?***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 8:26

***And (Jesus) said unto him (Peter)
O Thou of Little Faith...***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 14:31

***...he (Jesus) said unto them (the disciples),
O Ye Of Little Faith,
why reason among yourselves...***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 16:8

***And he (Jesus) said unto them
(his disciples), Where is Your Faith?***

(Holy Bible) Luke 8:25

49 Discussed on page 65.

We must bear in mind that this is not the indictment of Jesus (PBUH) on the indecisiveness of the Jews, but on his very own elect. He stoops down to the level of little children to make things plain to his disciples but he is compelled to burst out in frustration –

***And Jesus said,
Are Ye Even Yet Without
Understanding?***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 15:16

And when he was provoked to breaking point, he rails against his chosen ones –

***...O Faithless And Perverse Generation,
How long shall I be with you,
how long shall I bear with you?***

(Holy Bible) Luke 9:41

OWN FAMILY THOUGHT HIM MAD

If Jesus (PBUH) would have been a Japanese instead of a Jew, he would happily have committed that honourable “**harakiri**” (suicide). Sadly, he was the most unfortunate of God’s Messengers. His family disbelieved him **For neither did his** (Jesus’) **BRETHREN believe in him** (John 7:5). In fact they went to the extent of wanting to apprehend him, believing that he was mad.

***And when his relatives heard of it,
they went out to lay hold on him
(Jesus); for they said, he is beside
himself.***

(Holy Bible) Mark 3:21

Who were these friends and relatives of Jesus (PBUH) which had concern for his sanity? Let Rev. J.R. Dummelow, M.A. in his One Volume Bible Commentary tell us. On page 726 he says –

“FROM V.31 (just 10 verses following the above quotation)
“They appear to have been his mother and brethren...His family said, ‘**He is beside himself,**’” (meaning that he is

not right in his head); the Scribes said, '**He is possessed by the devil himself.**' It is not, however, implied at all that his family was in sympathy with the Scribes" (the learned men of the Jews), "Their apprehension being simply that his mind was unsettled, and that he needed to be put under restraint.

JESUS – REJECTED BY HIS NATION

That was the verdict of the close relations of Jesus (PBUH). What then was the response of his own nation, the Jews, after all his beautiful preachings and mighty miracle workings? His disciple puts it very mildly:

He came unto his own (the Jews) and his own received him (Jesus) not.

(Holy Bible) John 1:11

Actually "his own" mocked him, scorned him and vehemently rejected him. To the extent of making an attempt to crucify him. Despite two thousand years of Christian persecutions and pogroms, and now their overweening love and infatuation for them, so as to salve their own conscience, the Jews as a people and as a whole can never accept Jesus as their Saviour, their Deliverer, their God, simply because of their one sound judgement –

**"THAT NO JEW CAN EVER ACCEPT ANOTHER
JEW AS A GOD!"**

It is only in Islam that the Jews, the Christians and the Muslims can find accommodation – all believing in Jesus Christ (PBUH) for what he really was – one of the mightiest Messengers of God; and not as **God** or **His son!**

DISCIPLES DESERTED HIM

What was the response of the chosen twelve; of his own "**mother and brethren!**" (*Mark: 3:34*), as he called them? I will allow Professor Momerie to describe it in his own inimitable words –

"His immediate disciples," says Professor Momerie, "were always misunderstanding him and his work: wanting him to call down fire from heaven; wanting him to declare

himself king of the Jews; wanting to sit on his right hand and on his left hand in his kingdom; wanting him to show them the Father, to make God visible to their bodily eyes ; wanting him to do, and wanting to do themselves, anything and everything that was incompatible with his great plan. This was how they treated him until the end. (and) When that came, they all forsook him, and fled.”

Quoted from Sayed Amir Ali in his “*The Spirit of Islam*” Page 31.

It was most unfortunate that Jesus Christ (PBUH) had no real choice in selecting his disciples. They let him down as no other group of devotees had ever let down their prophet before. It was no fault of the Master. He bewailed his plight: “**The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak**” (Matthew 26:41). Truly this is not the clay, out of which a new Adam could be made. He passes on that responsibility to his Successor, whom he calls here – “**The Spirit of Truth,**” i.e. the Prophet of Truth, the Prophet of Righteousness!

“SPIRIT” AND “PROPHET” SYNONYMOUS

*Howbeit when he, the Spirit Of
Truth, is come, he will guide you
into all truth*

(Holy Bible) John 16:13

It has already been established that, Biblically, the word “**Spirit**” is used synonymously for “**prophet**”, by the same author in 1 John 4:1 (see page 51)

Hence the “Spirit of Truth” would be the Prophet of Truth. A prophet in whom **Truth** is personified. He had walked through life so honourably and industriously that he had won for himself even from his pagan fellow countrymen the noble designation of **as-Saadiq** (the Truthful One) and **al-Amin**, “the Honest,” “the Upright,” “the Trustworthy,” the Man of Faith who never broke his word. His life, his personality, his teachings are the veritable proof of Muhammad (PBUH) being the embodiment of Truth (al-Amin) – the Spirit of Truth!

CHAPTER FOUR

TOTAL GUIDANCE!

“MANY” AND “ALL”

As promised on page 61, we will now combine, **“I have yet MANY things to say unto you”** from verse twelve, with **“he will guide you into ALL truth.”** From John 16: 12 and 13.

If the Christian still persists that the Spirit of Truth of this prophecy is the Holy Ghost then ask him or her whether in their language does **“MANY”** means more than one? Also if **“ALL”** in the above verse means more than one? If you get a halting, wavering, hesitant **“y-e-s”** then close the book, it is not worth pursuing dialogues with opinionated fools. But if you get the answer “yes!” with alacrity then proceed...

The one prophesied by Jesus (PBUH) was to unravel **many** things which he had left unsaid, as well as to guide humanity into **all** truth. There are many problems facing mankind today, for which we are fumbling for answers. Can you please give me one new thing that the alleged Holy Ghost gave to anybody in the past two thousand years, which Jesus Christ had not already given in so many different words? I don't want many, I am looking for **just one!**

NO SOLUTION FROM HOLY GHOST

Believe me, in my forty years of questioning, I have not come across a single Christian with a single “new Truth” inspired by the Holy Ghost, yet the promise **was** that the coming Comforter – **“he will guide you into all truth!”** If the Spirit of Truth of this prophecy is the Holy Ghost then every Church and denomination, and every **‘born-again’** Christian is claiming the gift of the Holy Ghost. The Roman Catholics claim that

they have the whole Truth because of the so-called “in-dwelling” of the Holy Ghost. The Anglicans make the same claim, and the Methodists, the Jehovah’s Witnesses, the Seventh Day Adventists, the Baptists, the Christadelphians etc., not forgetting the **‘born-again’** who claim to be numbering over 70 million in the United States alone.

You have the right to demand solutions from them, on the authority of the Holy Ghost, for the problems listed below:

1. **Alcohol**
2. **Gambling**
3. **Fortune Telling**
4. **Idol Worship, Devil Worship**
5. **Racism**
6. **Problem of Surplus Women etc, etc.**

PROBLEM OF ALCOHOL

The republic of South Africa with a small “white”⁵⁰ population of 4 million among its total population of 30 million, has over 300,000 alcoholics. In neighbouring Zambia, Kenneth Kaunda calls such people “drunkards!” It is recorded that the **“coloureds”**⁵¹ in South Africa have five times the amount of alcoholics as any other race in the country. For the Indians and the Africans no statistics are available for their respective drunkards.

Jimmy Swaggart the televangelist records in his book “ALCOHOL” that the United States has 11 million alcoholics⁵² and 44 million “heavy drinkers!”, and he, like a good Muslim, goes on to say that he sees no difference between the two. To him they are all **drunkards!** The rampant evil of drunkenness is universal. The Holy Ghost has not yet made its pronouncement on this evil through any Church. Christendom winks at drunkenness on three flimsy pretences based on the Holy Bible.

**(a) Give strong drink (hard liquor) to
him who is perishing (one who is dying)
And wine to those who
are bitter of heart.
Let him drink and forget his**

50 Of European extraction.

51 A mixture between the Black and White Races.

52 The Americans euphemistically call them **“Problem Drinkers”**.

***poverty, And remember his
misery no more.***

(Holy Bible) Proverbs 31:6-7

A very good philosophy to keep the subject nations under subjugation, you will agree.

HIS VERY FIRST MIRACLE

(b) Jesus (PBUH) was no “killjoy,” the imbibers say, he turned water into wine in his very first recorded miracle in the Bible:

***Jesus saith unto them, Fill the waterpots with water.
And they filled them up to the brim.
And he saith unto them, Draw out now...
When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that
was made wine...
and saith...(why) thou has kept the good wine until
now.***

(Holy Bible) John 2:7-10

Since this is alleged miracle, wine continues to flow like water in Christendom.

SOBER ADVICE

(c) Saint John the thirteenth self-appointed disciple of Christ, the real founder of Christianity, advises his new convert protege – Timothy, born of a Greek father and a Jewish mother:

***Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy
stomach's sake and thine often infirmities.***

(Holy Bible) 1 Timothy 5:23

The Christians accept all the Bible quotations on stimulating and intoxicating drinks given above as the infallible word of God. They believe that the Holy Ghost inspired the authors to pen such dangerous advices. Rev. Dummelow (see page 59) seems to have some qualms about this verse. He says,

“IT TEACHES US THAT IF THE BODY NEEDS THE STIMULANT OF WINE, IT IS RIGHT TO TAKE IT IN MODERATION.”

ABSTINENCE THE ONLY ANSWER

There are thousands of Christian priests who have been lured into alcoholism by sipping the so-called mild wine in the Church rite of the Holy Communion. Islam is the only religion on the face of the earth which prohibits intoxicants in total. The Holy Prophet (Spirit) Muhammad (PBUH) had said, “WHATEVER INTOXICATES IN GREATER QUANTITY, IS FORBIDDEN EVEN IN SMALLER QUANTITY.” There is no excuse in the house of Islam for a nip or a tot. The **Kitab-al-Haq**, the Book of Truth (**Haq**) one of the titles of the Holy Qur'an condemned in the strongest terms not only the evil of alcohol but also items 2, 3 and 4, namely “gambling”, “fortune telling and idol worship,” with just a single stroke –

يَا أَيُّهَا الَّذِينَ ءَامَنُوا إِنَّمَا الْخَمْرُ وَالْمَيْسِرُ وَالْأَنْصَابُ
وَالْأَزْلَمُ رِجْسٌ مِّنْ عَمَلِ الشَّيْطَانِ فَاجْتَنِبُوهُ لَعَلَّكُمْ
تُفْلِحُونَ

O you who believed, indeed, intoxicants, gambling, (sacrificing on) stone alters (to other than Allah), and divining arrows are but defilement from the work of Satan, so avoid it that you may be successful.

Surah al-Ma'idah (Holy Qur'an 5:90)⁵³

When this verse was revealed, wine barrels were emptied in the streets of Madinah, never to be refilled. This simple straight-forward directive has created of the Muslim **Ummah** (religious community) the biggest society of teetotallers⁵⁴ in the world.

53 See Yusuf Ali's commentary for further clarification. I hope you are heeding my plea to memorize these Qur'anic quotations with their meaning.

54 **Teetotaller:** A person who abstains completely from all alcoholic drinks.

U.S.A. FAILS WITH “PROHIBITION”

The question arises, how is it that this Spirit of Truth – the Holy Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) succeeded with one verse whereas mighty America with the brain power of the nation and the money power of the Government, supported by its powerful propaganda machinery failed with **“Prohibition,”** the law outlawing alcohol?

Who coerced the American nation to enact prohibition? Which Arab nation threatened this mighty power with if you do not prohibit alcohol in your country, we will not supply you with oil? Not the Arabs as there was no such thing as oil as a **“POLITICAL INSTRUMENT”**⁵⁵ in the hands of the Arabs during the twenties to egg the United States. It was an intellectual awareness among the American (founding) fathers, based on study and statistics which brought them to the conclusion that intoxicants must be banned. They failed, notwithstanding the fact that the overwhelming majority of the nation was Christian, and it was they who had voted their Congressmen into power. It is rightly said that which comes from the brain (intellectually) tickles the brain, but that which comes from the heart and soul of a man, will move the heart. The verse just quoted above from the Holy Qur’an on prohibition, had and has the power for change; we will allow Thomas Carlyle to reveal the source of that power:

“If a book come from the heart, it will contrive to reach other hearts; all art and author-craft are of small amount to that. One would say the primary character of the Koran is this of its *genuineness*, of its being a *bona-fide* book.”

HIGH SPIRITUALITY- A SOURCE OF POWER

All the beautiful thoughts, words and expressions, never mind how artistically constructed, remain like ringing bells or clanking cymbals unless they are backed up by a powerful personality. And that type of super spirituality comes only as Jesus (PBUH) put it through **“fasting and prayer”** (*Matthew 17:21*).

Muhammad (PBUH) practiced what he preached. After his demise someone asked his dear wife Ayesha Siddiqa about the life-style of her husband. She said, **“He was the Qur’an in action.”** He was the walking Qur’an. He was the talking Qur’an. He was the living Qur’an.

55 From **“Yamani-The Inside Story”** by Jeffrey Robinson.

“If these men and women, noble, intelligent, and certainly not less educated than the fishermen of Galilee, had perceived the slightest sign of earthliness, deception, or want of faith in the Teacher himself, Muhammad's hopes of moral regeneration and social reform would all have crumbled to dust in a moment.”

“*Spirit of Islam*” by Sayed Amir Ali, page 21

CRITIC’S HERO

If it is said that these are the words of a devoted Believer about his beloved, then let us hear what a sympathetic Christian critic had to say about HIS “**Hero Prophet!**”

“A poor, hard-toiling, ill-provided man; careless of what vulgar men toil for. Not a bad man, I should say; something better in him than **HUNGER** of any sort, — or these wild Arab men, fighting and jostling three-and-twenty years at his hand, in close contact with him always, would not have revered him so! They were wild men, bursting ever and anon into quarrel, into all kinds of fierce sincerity; without right worth and manhood, no man could have commanded them. They called him Prophet, you say? Why, he stood there face to face with them; bare, not enshrined in any mystery; visibly clouting his own cloak, cobbling his own shoes; fighting, counselling, ordering in the midst of them: they must have seen what kind of a man he **WAS**, let him be **CALLED** what you like! No emperor with his tiaras was obeyed as this man in a cloak of his own clouting. During three-and-twenty years of rough actual trial. I find something of a veritable **HERO** necessary for that, of itself.

“*Hero and Hero-worship*” by Thomas Carlyle, page 93

PROBLEM OF RACISM

...**For he** (the Spirit of Truth) **will guide you into all truth!**

(*Holy Bible*) John 16:13

NOT WITHOUT A SYSTEM

It is very easy for the followers of any religion to talk glibly about “THE FATHERHOOD OF GOD AND THE BROTHERHOOD OF MAN” but how is this beautiful idea implemented? How to devise a system to bring mankind into a single brotherhood? Five times a day, every Muslim is obligated to gather together at the local mosque to strengthen himself spiritually. The black and the white; the rich and the poor; people of different nationalities, of varying hues are made to rub shoulders in the daily *Salaat*, the Muslim at Prayer.⁵⁶ Once a week, that is on Fridays, he has to congregate at the cathedral Mosque (*the Jaame Masjid*) for a wider gathering from the surrounding districts. And twice a year during the two Eids at still a larger venue, preferable in the open air, for a vaster communion. A-n-d, at least once in a life-time at the *Kaaba*, the Central Mosque in Makkah, for an international gathering; where one can witness the blonde-haired Turk, the Ethiopian, the Chinese, the Indian, the American and the African, all get levelled-up in the same pilgrim’s garb of two unsown sheets. Where is there such a great leveller in the religious rites of other faiths?

The infallible precept as enunciated in the Book of God is that the only standard recognised by God is on the basis of one’s conduct, one’s behaviour towards one’s fellow human beings and not because of one’s race or riches. These are the only true bases on which the “**Kingdom of God**” can be established. All this does not mean that the Muslim is immaculate, that he is altogether free from this sickness of racism, but you will find the Muslim the least racist of all the religious groupings strutting the world today.

PROBLEM OF SURPLUS WOMEN

Nature seems to be at war with mankind. It appears that it wants to take revenge for his cleverness. Man will not listen to the healthy, practical solution to his problems, which a Beneficial, Benevolent Providence offers him. So it says, “**go simmer in your SOUP!**” (in a manner of speaking).

It is an accepted fact that at birth the ratio of male and female is about equal everywhere. But in child mortality more males die than females. Amazing! The “**weaker sex**”? At any given time there are more widows

56 Take your non-Muslim friends to the Mosque to watch “The Muslim at Prayer.”. You will not fail to learn a lot of easy entertaining ways of discussing Islam.

in the world than widowers. Every civilized nation has a surplus of women. Great Britain 4 million. Germany 5 million. Soviet Russia 7 million, etc. But a solution acceptable to the problem of the mighty United States of America, will be a solution acceptable to nations everywhere. The statistics of this most sophisticated nation on earth is more readily verifiable.

AMERICA, O AMERICA!

We learn that the U.S.A. has a surplus of 7.8 million women. It means that if every man in America got married, there would still be 7 800 000 women left over, women who would be unable to get their share of a husband. One thing we do know, and that is every man will never get married for so many different reasons. Man gets cold feet and finds many excuses. A woman, even if frigid, would not mind getting married. She would marry, even if it is just for shelter and protection.

But the American problem of surplus women is compounded. Ninety-eight percent of its prison population is male. Then they have 25 million sodomites. Euphemistically they call them **“gays”** a once beautiful word meaning – **happy and joyous** – now perverted!

America does everything in a big way. She produces everything mighty. Mighty in promoting God and also mighty in promoting the Devil. Let us for once, join the mighty televangelist (now fallen) Jimmy Swaggart, in his prayer. In his well-researched book – **“HOMOSEXUALITY,”** he cries.

“AMERICA – GOD WILL JUDGE YOU (destroy you), **HE** (God) **MIGHTY HAVE TO APOLOGIZE TO SODOM AND GOMORRAH”** for their hasty, utter destruction because of their practice of homosexuality or their wanton gratification of unnatural lust.

NEW YORK AS AN EXAMPLE

The City of New York has one million more women than men. Even if the total male population in this city mustered enough courage to unite with the opposite sex in matrimony; there would still remain 1 000 000 women without husbands.

But to make things worse, it is reputed that one third of the male population in this city is **“gay”** (homosexuals/sodomites). The Jews, a very vociferous lot in every controversy, remain quiet as mice, for fear of being labelled backward Easterners. The Church, with their millions of **born again** votaries claiming to be the dwelling houses of the Holy Ghost, are also

silent on this topic.

The founders of the Mormon Church, Joseph Smith and Brigham Young, claiming a new revelation in 1830 preached and practised unlimited polygamy to solve the problem of surplus women. The present day prophets of Mormonism⁵⁷ have abrogated the teaching of their Church fathers to placate American prejudice on the subject of polygamy. What is the poor American/Western/European surplus women to do? They have literally gone to the dogs.⁵⁸

ONLY SOLUTION – RESTRICTED AND REGULATED POLYGAMY

Al-Amin, the Prophet of Truth, the Spirit of Truth, under inspiration of God supplies the solution to their unfortunate plight. God ordains –

فَأَنْكِحُوا مَا طَابَ لَكُمْ مِنَ النِّسَاءِ

...then marry those that please you of (other) women,

مَثْنَىٰ وَثُلَاثَ وَرُبْعَ

two or three or four.

فَإِنْ خِفْتُمْ أَلَّا تَعْدِلُوا

But if you fear that you will not be just,

فَوَاحِدَةً

then (marry only) one...

Surah an-Nisa (Holy Qur'an 4:3)

The Western world feigns tolerance towards the millions of sodomites and lesbians in their midst. It is a joking matter in the West for a man to keep a dozen mistresses, and beget a dozen bastard⁵⁹ children every year. Such

57 The Mormons believe in an unbroken chain of living prophets in their Church.

58 Consult **“The Life of the American Female,”** by Dr. Alfred Kinsey and the latest on the subject by Masters and Johnson.

59 **Bastard:** is Biblical. The Holy Bible has used it **three** times. Deut: 23:2, Zech: 9:6 and Heb 12:8.

lecherous creatures are proudly labelled as “**studs**”.⁶⁰ “**Let him sow his wild oats, but don’t hold him responsible!**” says the West.

Islam say: “make man responsible for his pleasures.” There is a type of man who is prepared to take an extra responsibility, and there is a type of woman who is prepared to share a husband. Why place obstacles in their way? You mock at (polygamy), which was practised by the prophets of God as recorded in the Holy Bible, you forget that Solomon the Wise had a thousand wives and concubines as recorded in the Good Book (1 King 11:3), a healthy solution to your momentous problem, and yet smugly wink at the gratification of unnatural lusts by sodomites and lesbians! What a perversion? Polygamy was practised by the Jews and the pagans in the time of Jesus (PBUH). He did not say a single word against it. Not his fault. The Jews gave him no peace to propound solutions. His was a natural cry, “**when he the Spirit of Truth is come, he will guide you into All truth.**” (John 16:13).

COMFORTER TO BE A MAN

If I take the liberty of quoting the prophecy under discussion, with an emphasis on the pronouns, you will agree without any persuasion that the coming Comforter was to be a **man** and not a **ghost**.

***Howbeit when He, the Spirit of Truth, is come, He will guide you into all truth
For He shall not speak of Himself
but whatsoever He shall hear,
that shall He speak: and He will
show you things to come.***

(Holy Bible) John 16:13

Please count the number of **HE’s** in the above verse. There are **s-e-v-e-n!** Seven masculine pronouns in a single verse! There is not another verse in the 66 books of the Protestant Bible or in the 73 Books of the Catholic Bible with seven masculine pronouns, or seven feminine pronouns, or with seven neuter genders. You will agree that so many masculine pronouns in one verse ill befits a **Ghost**, holy or not!

60 **Stud:** a slang used for a man considered to be excessively virile. The term usually reserved for animal husbandry.

NON-STOP INTERPOLATIONS

When this point of the seven masculine pronouns in a single verse of the Bible was mooted by the Muslims in India in their debates with the Christian missionaries, the Urdu version of the Bible has the pronouns presently changed to SHE, SHE, SHE! So that the Muslims could not claim that this prophecy referred to Muhammad (PBUH) – **a man!** This Christian chicanery; deception I have seen in the Urdu Bible myself. This is a common trickery by the missionaries, more specially in the vernacular. The very latest ruse I have stumbled across is in the Afrikaans Bible, on the very verse under discussion; they have changed the word **“Trooster”** (Comforter), to **“Voorspraak”** (Mediator), and interpolated the phrase – **“die Heilige Gees”** – meaning THE HOLY GHOST, which phrase no Bible scholar has ever dared to interpolate into any of the multifarious English Versions. No, not even the Jehovah’s Witnesses.⁶¹ This is how the Christians manufacture God’s word!⁶²

NINE MASCULINE PRONOUNS

The only other place an author has unknowingly used so many masculine pronouns for this mighty Messenger Muhammad (PBUH) is given below:

“His gentle disposition, **his** austerity of conduct, the severe purity of **his** life, **his** scrupulous refinement, **his** ever-ready helpfulness towards the poor and the weak, **his** noble sense of honour, **his** unflinching fidelity, **his** stern sense of duty had won him, among **his** compatriots, the high and enviable designation of Al-Amin, the Trusty.”

“Spirit of Islam” by Sayed Amir Ali, page 14

“AL-AMIN” the Faithful, the Trustworthy, **“even the Spirit of Truth”** (*John 14:17*). This expression is a figurative way of saying that SPEAKING TRUTH would be so characteristic of him that people would regard him as TRUTH PERSONIFIED: exactly as Jesus (PBUH) said about himself, **“I am the way, the truth and the life...”** (*John: 14: 6*) that these noble qualities are personified in me. Follow me! But **‘when he the Spirit of**

61 **Jehovah’s Witnesses:** an incorrigible Christian sect which has contrived its own Bible translation.

62 See Vol. II Part 2 – **“Is the Bible God’s Word?”** and learn how the Christian has been interpolating his own prejudices in a Book he claims to be from God.

truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth” (*John 16:13*), then you must follow him! But prejudices die hard, therefore we must work harder. But believe me, with the laser truth that Allah has given us, we can change the world with only a fraction of the energy that the Christian is expending.

SOURCE OF REVELATION

Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth! For He Shall Not Speak From Himself But Whatsoever He Shall Hear, That Shall He Speak.

(Holy Bible) John 16:13

I have consistently been using the King James Version in my Biblical quotations, but for greater clarity, I give below, alternate rendering from some different versions of the above emphasised sentence:

1. For he will not speak on his Own Authority, But will tell only what he hears.

The New English Bible

2. He will not speak On His Own; He will Speak Only What He Hears.

New International Version

3. for he will not be presenting His Own Ideas, but He Will Be Passing On To You what He Has Heard

The Living Bible

This “**Spirit of Truth**,” this Prophet of Truth, “Al-Amin,” will not be speaking spiritual truths on his own impulse, but he will speak on the same basis as his previous Comforter – Jesus (PBUH) had spoken:

For I speak not from myself; but the Father that sent me; he hath given me the commandment, what I

should say, and what I should speak. ...even as the Father hath saith unto me, so I speak.

(Holy Bible) John: 12:49-50

In an **identical** manner God Almighty testifies His revelation to His Messenger Muhammad (PBUH).

وَمَا يَنْطِقُ عَنِ الْهَوَىٰ

Nor does he speak from (his own) inclination.

إِنْ هُوَ إِلَّا وَحْيٌ يُوحَىٰ

It is not but a revelation revealed,

عَلَّمَهُ شَدِيدُ الْقُوَىٰ

Taught to him by one intense in strength⁶³ —

Surah an-Najm (Holy Qur'an: 53:3–5)

This is how God communicated with all His chosen Messengers, whether Abraham, Moses or Jesus. It would be absurd to think that this **“Spirit of Truth”** is the Holy Ghost, because we are told that ***“he will not speak from himself, but what he hears,”*** surely not from himself?

GOD - A TRINITY?

It is universally accepted in Christendom, all orthodox Christians who believe in what they call the Holy Trinity; that the Father is God, the son is God and the Holy Ghost is God, but they are not three Gods but one God. (?) Let an erudite Christian theologian, like the Rev. Dummelow tell us of this indivisibility, indissolubility of the Christian's “triune” God. Commenting on ***“We will come”*** of John 14:23 he says —

“Where the son is, there of necessity is the Father also, as well as the Spirit, for the ***three are one***, being different forms of the subsistence and manifestation of the same

63 All Qur'anic Commentators understand this to refer to the archangel Gabriel. Call him “Holy Ghost” if you like.

divine being. This passage illustrates that the persons of the holy trinity ***are inseparable, and contain one another.***

Please don't worry. You are not really expected to understand the above verbiage. In short the Christian believes that the "THREE" (I beg your pardon, the Christian says, "ONE!"), all the **three** are supposed to be Omnipresent and Omniscient and as such lead us to an amusing and ridiculous conclusion. Jesus (PBUH) according to the Christians agonized on the cross at Calvary. Being **"inseparable,"** the Father and the Holy Ghost also must have agonized with the Son, and when he died, the other two died with him! Little wonder we hear the cry in the West – **"God is Dead!"** Don't laugh. All this imposes on us a more sombre responsibility of extricating our Christian brethren from the spiritual quagmire into which they are wallowing.

CHAPTER FIVE

FULFILLED PROPHECIES

And he will show you things to come.

(Holy Bible) John 16:13

REFUGEE: ONLY FOR A WHILE

The Christians put great weight on the fulfilment of prophecies. Muhammad (PBUH) fulfilled many prophecies of the Old⁶⁴ and the New Testaments. To them, the prediction of events is considered to be the function of true prophecy – true prophet hood.

The Prophet of Islam uttered many prophecies which are recorded for posterity in the Holy Qur'an. Here are a few taken at random.

1.

إِنَّ الَّذِي فَرَضَ عَلَيْكَ الْقُرْآنَ لَرَأْدُكَ إِلَى مَعَادٍ

Verily, He Who (God Almighty) ordained the Qur'an for thee, (He) will bring thee back to the Place of Return...

Surah al-Qasas (Holy Qur'an 28:85)

“Place of Return,” is a title of the Holy City of Makkah. During the **Hijrat** (Migration) when the Holy Prophet was fleeing from Makkah to Madinah. It was a hopeless situation. Most of his followers had already migrated to Madinah. Now it was his turn. Together with Abu Bakr (**as-**

64 You will find some of these prophecies expounded in Part 1 – **“What the Bible says about Muhammad (PBUH)”** in this volume.

Siddiq) he had reached a place called Juhfa, when this assurance was given by God that once again he will return to his birthplace Makkah, and so he did.

He migrated as refugee and God returns him as a conqueror, fulfilling yet another prophecy.⁶⁵

And he (Moses) said, the Lord came from Sinai, and rose from Seir unto them; he shines forth from mount Paran (that is in Arabia), and he (Muhammad) came with Ten Thousand Saints.⁶⁶ from his right hand went a fiery law for them.

(Holy Bible) Deuteronomy 33:2

SUPERPOWERS: IN CONFLICT

2.

غَلِبَتِ الرُّومُ

The Byzantines have been defeated

فِي أَدْنَى الْأَرْضِ

In the nearest land.

وَهُمْ مِّنْ بَعْدِ غَلِبِهِمْ سَيَغْلِبُونَ

But they, after their defeat, will overcome.

فِي بَضْعِ سِنِينَ ۖ لِلَّهِ الْأَمْرُ

Within three to nine years. To Allah belongs the command

65 For a detailed exposition of this prophecy read “**Muhammad (PBUH) in the Bible**” by Abdul-Ahad Dawud, former Bishop of Uramiah obtainable from the Centre.

66 The Holy Prophet was accompanied by 10 000 **Sahabas** (companions – veritable saints) at the conquest of Makkah.

مِنْ قَبْلُ وَمِنْ بَعْدُ

before and after.

وَيَوْمَئِذٍ يَفْرَحُ الْمُؤْمِنُونَ

And that day the believers will rejoice

Surah ar-Rum (Holy Qur'an 30:2–4)

The above prophecy was revealed to the Holy Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) in the year 615/16 of the Christian era. The Christian Empire of Rome had lost Jerusalem to the Persians, and Christianity had been humbled in the dust. In this holocaust between two of the two superpowers of the day, the **Mushriks** (polytheists) of Makkah derived vicarious pleasure in the discomfiture of the Romans by the pagan Persians.

“The pagan Arabs naturally sided with the Persians in their destructive zeal, and thought that the destruction of the Christian’ power of Rome would also mean a setback to the message of the Prophet, **‘the true successor to Christ’**⁶⁷... while the whole world believed that the roman empire was being killed by Persia, it was revealed to him that the Persian victory was short-lived and that within a period of a few years the romans would conquer again and deal a deadly blow at the Persians”

Abdullah Yusuf Ali

Within ten years of the revelation of this divine prediction, the prophecy was fulfilled!

CHALLENGE OF THE QUR'AN

3. The Holy Prophet claimed that the Holy Qur'an was from God Almighty, and that it was revealed to him by inspiration. The proof of its Divine authorship is its own beauty and nature, and the circumstances in which it was promulgated. To prove the veracity of his claim, he has placed before you many Surahs. Can the unbeliever produce one like it? This is a standing challenge! An eternal prophecy of mankind's inability to

67 The emphasis is mine. Though I own Yusuf Ali's translation for over half-a-century, I have only very recently come across the above phrase for the first time.

equal or excel, or to rival successfully any of its chapters.

Your plea, “I don’t know Arabic,” is useless. There are millions of Christian Arabs living today. The Christians boast that there are at least 10-15 million Coptic Christians in Egypt alone and these are not all **fellaheens**.⁶⁸ Here is the challenge of God in His Own Words –

(a)

وَمَا كَانَ هَذَا الْقُرْآنُ أَنْ يُفْتَرَى مِنْ دُونِ اللَّهِ

*And it was not (possible) for this Qur'an to be produced by other than Allah*⁶⁹

Surah Yunus (Holy Qur'an 10:37)

(b)

قُلْ لِّئِنْ أَجْتَمَعَتِ الْإِنْسُ وَالْجِنُّ عَلَى أَنْ يَأْتُوا بِمِثْلِ هَذَا
الْقُرْآنِ لَا يَأْتُونَ بِمِثْلِهِ وَلَوْ كَانَ بَعْضُهُمْ لِبَعْضٍ ظَهِيرًا

Say, “If mankind and the jinn gathered in order to produce the like of this Qur'an, they could not produce the like of it, even if they were to each other assistants.”

Surah al-Isra (Holy Qur'an 17:88)

(c)

أَمْ يَقُولُونَ افْتَرَاهُ قُلْ فَأْتُوا بِسُورَةٍ مِثْلِهِ وَادْعُوا مَنِ اسْتَطَعْتُمْ
مِّنْ دُونِ اللَّهِ إِنْ كُنْتُمْ صَادِقِينَ

Or do they say (about the Prophet), “He invented it?” Say, “Then bring forth a surah like it and call upon (for assistance) whomever you can besides Allah, if you should be truthful.”

Surah Yunus (Holy Qur'an: 10:38)

68 **Fellaheen**: A peasant or agricultural labourer in Arab countries.

69 **Allah**: A proper noun for God Almighty in the Semitic languages. See Vol III, Part 3 – “**What is His name?**” which explains this word in detail.

(d)

وَإِنْ كُنْتُمْ فِي رَيْبٍ مِّمَّا نَزَّلْنَا عَلَىٰ عَبْدِنَا فَأْتُوا بِسُورَةٍ مِّثْلِهِ ۚ

And if you are in doubt about what We have sent down upon Our Servant (Muhammad), then produce a surah the like thereof

وَادْعُوا شُهَدَاءَكُمْ مِّنْ دُونِ اللَّهِ إِنْ كُنْتُمْ صَادِقِينَ
and call upon your witnesses other than Allah, if you should be truthful.

فَإِنْ لَّمْ تَفْعَلُوا وَلَنْ تَفْعَلُوا
But if you do not – and you will never be able to –

فَاتَّقُوا النَّارَ الَّتِي وَقُودُهَا النَّاسُ وَالْحِجَارَةُ أُعِدَّتْ لِلْكَافِرِينَ
Then fear the Fire, whose fuel is men and stones, prepared for the disbelievers.

Surah al-Baqarah (Holy Qur'an 2:23–24)

It is now fourteen hundred years since the above challenges, but mankind has singularly failed to produce anything similar or something better. This is an **Eternal Testimony** of the **Divine Origin** of the Holy Qur'an.

CHRISTIAN ARABS HAD A TRY!

The Arab Christians in the Middle East, not to be outwitted, launched a sixteen-year project lately and produced selected portions of the New Testament in Arabic, with a wholesale borrowing⁷⁰ of words and phrases verbatim from the Arabic Qur'an. It is an ignoble attempt! In this unashamed plagiarism,⁷¹ **every** chapter of this **new** Arabic New Testament of theirs begin with the verse of the Holy Qur'an –

70 “He who goes a borrowing goes a sorrowing!”

71 **Plagiarism:** the act of stealing and using (the ideas or writings of another) as one's own. Stealing in literature.

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

In the name of Allah, the Entirely Merciful, the Especially Merciful.

Surah al-Fatihah (Holy Qur'an 1:1)

Can you beat that?

There are many more challenges and prophecies in the Holy Qur'an and in the **Ahadith** (traditions of the Prophet) which can be expounded. It is a neglected field. Perhaps books can be written on the subject. I trust that Muslim scholars will take up the challenge. But let me end this theme of prophecy with one last reference from Allah's **Kalaam** (the book of God).

ISLAM TO PREVAIL

(e)

هُوَ الَّذِي أَرْسَلَ رَسُولَهُ بِالْهُدَىٰ وَدِينِ الْحَقِّ

Is is He who sent His Messenger with guidance and the religion of truth

لِيُظْهِرَهُ عَلَى الدِّينِ كُلِّهِ

to manifest it over all religion,

وَلَوْ كَرِهَ الْمُشْرِكُونَ

although those who associate others with Allah dislike it.

Surah as-Saf (Holy Qur'an 61:9)

Within decades the above promise became true. Islam prevailed. The two superpowers of the day, the Persian and the Roman Empires crumbled at the hands of the Muslims. And for centuries the power of Islam predominated – from the Atlantic to the Pacific.

Alas, the Muslims are in the doldrums today. But fear not, the world of Islam is arising. There is hope. Even non-Muslim Visionaries in the West have predicted its destiny to be in the skies.

“Africa is a fair field for all religions but the religion which the African will accept is a religion which best suits his needs. And that religion, everyone who has a right to speak on the subject says, is Islam”

“The Shape of Things to Come” H.G. Wells

“If any religion had a chance of ruling over England, nay Europe within the next hundred years, it could be Islam.”

George Bernard Shaw

Without any real effort on the part of the Muslims, we are told by the Westerner themselves that Islam is the fastest growing religion in the world today. I hope, this pleasant news does not lull us to sleep. The promise of God is true, the destiny is there, only a little exertion is required on our part. Allah can transform nations and peoples by His Own will, but He has given us the privilege of serving his **Deen** by personal self-sacrifice. To be an effective soldier in this battle, arm yourself with John 16:7 in one or more languages (see page 42), and how watch how Allah fills you with more knowledge. It is our destiny to master, supercede and bulldoze every **ism**, never mind how much the unbeliever may be averse to the Message of Islam.

GLORIFYING JESUS (PBUH)

*He (the Spirit of truth) shall Glorify Me (Jesus):
for he shall receive of mine,
and shall shew it unto you.*

(Holy Bible) John 16:13

*But when the Comforter is come,
whom I will send unto you from the Father,
even the Spirit of Truth,
which proceedeth from the Father,
he shall Testify of Me.*

(Holy Bible) John 15:26

The promised Comforter, **even** the Spirit of Truth in whom Truth is personified, when he comes, will bear witness to the truth – fullness of the Messiah and absolve him from the calumnies of his enemies.

This, Muhammad (PBUH), **al-Amin**, the Prophet of Truth, eminently succeeded in doing. He made it possible that today, **a thousand million Muslims believe in Jesus Christ (PBUH) as one of the mightiest Messengers of God. They believe in his miraculous birth, which many modern day Christians, even Bishops do not believe. And they also believe in his many miracles, including those of giving life to the dead by God's leave; and healing those born blind and the lepers by God's leave.** What a mighty testimony! Listen to the moving terms of the story of his Annunciation:

MIRACULOUS CONCEPTION

وَأَذْكُرُ فِي الْكِتَابِ مَرْيَمَ إِذِ انْتَبَذَتْ مِنْ أَهْلِهَا مَكَانًا شَرْقِيًّا

And mention, (O Muhammad), in the Book (the story of) Mary, when she withdrew from her family to a place toward the east.

فَاتَّخَذَتْ مِنْ دُونِهِمْ حِجَابًا فَأَرْسَلْنَا إِلَيْهَا رُوحَنَا فَتَمَثَّلَ لَهَا بَشَرًا سَوِيًّا

And she took, in seclusion from them, a screen. Then We sent to her Our Angel, and he represented himself to her as a well-proportioned man.

قَالَتْ إِنِّي أَعُوذُ بِالرَّحْمَنِ مِنْكَ إِنْ كُنْتَ تَقِيًّا

She said, "Indeed, I seek refuge in the Most Merciful from you, (so leave me), if you should be fearing of Allah."

قَالَ إِنَّمَا أَنَا رَسُولُ رَبِّكِ لِأَهَبَ لَكِ غُلَامًا زَكِيًّا

He said, "I am only the messenger of your Lord to give you (news of) a pure boy."

قَالَتْ أَنَّى يَكُونُ لِي غُلَامٌ وَلَمْ يَمَسِّنِي بَشَرٌ وَلَمْ أَكُ بَغِيًّا

She said, "How can I have a boy while no man has touched me and I have not been unchaste?"

قَالَ كَذَلِكَ قَالَ رَبُّكَ هُوَ عَلَىٰ هَيْنٍ وَلَنَجْعَلَنَّهُ ءَايَةً لِلنَّاسِ
وَرَحْمَةً مِنَّا وَكَانَ أَمْرًا مَّقْضِيًّا

He said, “Thus (it will be); your Lord says ‘It is easy for Me, and We will make him sign to the people and a mercy from Us. And it is a matter (already) decreed’”

فَحَمَلَتْهُ فَانْتَبَذَتْ بِهِ مَكَانًا قَصِيًّا

So she conceived him, and she withdrew with him to a remote place...

Surah Maryam (Holy Qur'an 19:16–22)

At the present moment a billion Muslims throughout the world accept the Immaculate Conception of Jesus (PBUH) on the authority of Muhammad alone. Jesus (PBUH), his mother Mary and the whole Christian world can never thank **al-Amin** – the Spirit of Truth, enough.

JEWISH RESPONSE TO JESUS

O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I (Jesus) have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, but ye would not let me!

(Holy Bible) Matthew 23:37

That mighty Messenger of God went after the Jews like a hen after her chickens, but they turned on him like vultures to tear him into pieces. Not satisfied with their relentless assaults and harassment and the eventual attempt on his life;⁷² they charged his mother for having ill-begotten him in sin.

And (We cursed them) for their disbelief and their saying against Mary a great slander.

Surah an-Nisa (Holy Qur'an 4:156)

72 For a detailed record of how God foiled the Jewish plot on the life of the Messiah, consult Vol. II. Part 3 – “**Crucifixion or Cruci-fiction?**”

What was that **“grave false charge”**? – The nearest to uttering the actual calumny, Muhammad (PBUH) the true **“Glorifier”** of Jesus (John 16:13) is made to record.

“O sister of Aaron, your father was not a man of evil, nor was your mother unchaste.”

Surah Maryam (Holy Qur'an 19:28)

WHAT SAY THE TALMUDISTS

The Jewish charge of the illegitimacy of Jesus (PBUH) and the adultery of Mary is referred to here as an insinuation of the Jews, questioning Mary's **chastity**. The Holy Qur'an does not stoop down to even reproducing the actual monstrous slander. Now compare this Qur'anic terminology with what the erudite and famous Rev. Dummelow, backed by no less than a team of sixteen Christian divines, all Reverends and D.D.s; as to **their** choice of words in recording the calumny of the enemies of Christ:

“The Jewish Talmudists said, 'the son of the adulteress' (i.e. of the virgin Mary) 'brought magic out of Egypt, by cuttings which he had made in his flesh.' 'Jesus practised magic and deceived, and drove Israel to idolatry.' It is interesting to notice that Mahomet indignantly repudiated these Jewish calumnies.”

(Emphasis added)

Dummelow's Bible Commentary, page 668

EVANGELIST CORROBORATES JEWS

Josh Mc Dowell, described as a graduate of Wheaton College and magna cum laude graduate of Talbot Theological Seminary, and who is reputed to have spoken to more than five million students and faculty at over 550 universities in 53 countries, seems to have done more research than the whole galaxy of Biblical scholars, mentioned above, on the subject of the Jewish Talmud regarding the birth of his “Lord”.

In his book – **“Evidence that Demands a Verdict,”** just to prove that Jesus (PBUH) was not a myth but a historical person, he quotes extensively from the **Jewish Talmud** without any inhibitions. I give you below a few brief excerpts from pages 85/86 of his book.

“Tol’doth Yeshu. JESUS US REFERRED TO AS ‘BEN PENDERA’”⁷³

Yeb. IV 3; 49a:

“R. Shimeon ben Azzai said [concerning Jesus]: ‘I found a genealogical roll in Jerusalem wherein was recorded, Such-an-one is a bastard of an adulteress.’”

Joseph Klausner adds to the above:

“Current editions of the *Mishnah*, add: ‘To support the words of Rabbi Yehoshua’ (who in the same *Mishnah* says: What is a bastard? Everyone who's parents are liable to death by the Beth Din), that Jesus is here referred to seems to be beyond doubt...”

MISSIONARY LOLLS HIS TONGUE

Josh McDowell, the great evangelist, **“born-again”** Christian; worshipper of Christ, filled with the Holy Ghost (?) lolls his tongue when quoting calumnies of the enemies against his Lord and God – Jesus! And the Christian world laps it up. His books are bestsellers in Christendom. A taste for filth and insults has been created in the votaries of Christ. I refuse to quote further from that filthy narration. If Jesus (PBUH) has such devoted friends (?), what need is there for him to have enemies.

73 “**BEN PANDERA:**” means – son of Pandera, a Roman soldier alleged by the Jews to have raped Mary to produce her illegitimate offspring. (May God Forbid!) May He forgive us for even reproducing such blasphemies.

CHAPTER SIX

EXTREMISM CONDEMNED

We will now allow the Spirit of Truth to lay the Ghost of Jewish and Christian extremism, and put the records straight regarding their controversies about the Messiah. The Jews said that Jesus (PBUH) was the illegitimate son of Mary because he could not point a finger to a father. The Christians for the same reason made him into a God and the “**begotten**” son of God. Just one verse to debunk this lie!

يَا أَهْلَ الْكِتَابِ

O People of the Scripture,

لَا تَغْلُوا فِي دِينِكُمْ وَلَا تَقُولُوا عَلَى اللَّهِ إِلَّا الْحَقَّ

do not commit excess in your religion or say about Allah except the truth.

إِنَّمَا الْمَسِيحُ عِيسَى ابْنُ مَرْيَمَ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ وَكَلِمَتُهُ أَلْقَاهَا إِلَى
مَرْيَمَ

The Messiah, Jesus, the son of Mary, was but a messenger of Allah and His word which He directed to Mary⁷⁴

⁷⁴ **Christ:** In the Arabic text of the Holy Qur'an the word is **Masih**, which is the same as the Hebrew word Messiah.

وَرُوحٌ مِّنْهُ فَآمِنُوا بِاللَّهِ وَرُسُلِهِ^ط

and a soul (created at a command) from Him. So believe in Allah and His messengers.

وَلَا تَقُولُوا ثَلَاثَةً ۚ أَنْتَهُوَ خَيْرٌ لَّكُمْ

And do not say, "Three"; desist – it is better for you.

إِنَّمَا اللَّهُ إِلَهٌُ وَاحِدٌ سُبْحَانَهُ أَنْ يَكُونَ لَهُ وَلَدٌ لَهُ مَا فِي السَّمَوَاتِ وَمَا فِي الْأَرْضِ^ط

Indeed, Allah is but one God. Exalted is He above having a son. To Him belongs whatever is in the heavens and whatever is on the earth.

وَكَفَى بِاللَّهِ وَكِيلًا

And sufficient is Allah as Disposer of affairs.

Surah an-Nisa (Holy Qur'an 4:171)

Note 657/6 on the above verse

Just as a foolish servant may go wrong by excess of zeal for his master, so in religion people's excesses may lead them to blasphemy or a spirit the very opposite of religion.

The Jewish excesses in the direction of formalism, racialism, exclusiveness, and rejection of Christ Jesus have been denounced in many places in the holy Qur'an.

Here the Christian attitude is condemned, which raises Jesus to an equality with God; in some cases venerates Mary almost to idolatry; attributes a physical son to God; and invents the doctrine of the Trinity, opposed to all reason, which according to the Athanasian Creed, unless a man believes, he is doomed to hell for ever."

The attributes of Christ are mentioned here:

1. That he was the son of a woman, Mary, and therefore a man.
2. But an apostle, a man with a mission from God, and therefore entitled

to honour.

3. A Word bestowed on Mary, for he was created by God's word "Be" (**kun**) and he was. H.Q. 3:59
4. A spirit proceeding from God, but not God: his life and his mission were more limited in the case of some other apostles, though we must pay equal honour to him as a man of God.

The doctrines of Trinity, equality with God, and sonship, are repudiated as blasphemies. God is independent of all needs and has no need of a son to manage His affairs.

Abdullah Yusuf Ali⁷⁵

NOTHING FROM SELF

You give this Spirit of Truth (Muhammad PBUH) too much credit, when you allege that he wrote the preceding verses and further authored more than six thousand other verses of the Noble Qur'an.

He cries to us over and over again in the Book of God, that this is not my handiwork – **"IT IS NO LESS AN INSPIRATION SENT DOWN TO HIM** (Muhammad)" (Holy Qur'an 53:4). Exactly as it was prophesied by Jesus (PBUH).

...for he shall not speak from himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak...

(Holy Bible) John 16:13

CHRISTIAN "TRILEMMA"

All the testification and glorification by this **"another comforter,"** does not placate the Christians. Because Muhammad (PBUH) did not pander to their prejudices. To them glorification meant to deify Jesus (PBUH) – to make him into a God. Instead of solving their **dilemma**⁷⁶ whether Jesus (PBUH) "died" on the cross as a man, or as a God? They have now invented a **trilemma**. A word not to be found in any dictionary in the world. Josh McDowell the Travelling Representative for Campus Crusade for Christ

75 The above consists of just two notes out of over six thousand explanatory notes from Yusuf Ali's translation.

76 **Dilemma:** A situation that requires one to choose between two equally balanced and often equally unpleasant alternatives.

International, in his book – **“Evidence that Demands a Verdict,”** actually uses his new inspired (by the “holy ghost”?) conundrum⁷⁷ for his chapter 7 – **“TRILEMMA – Lord, Liar or Lunatic?”** You have now guessed it! The three L’s! He wants his readers to answer whether Jesus Christ is your **Lord** (God), or was he a **Liar**, or a **Lunatic**? Very ingenious, you will agree! No Muslim could utter that Jesus Christ was a liar, or a lunatic: then what? It is more than any dilemma! It is actually blasphemy of the highest degree. But he is blinded by his preconceived notions. Roger Bacon, the philosopher who was born too soon, rightly said: **“IT IS EASIER FOR A MAN TO BURN DOWN HIS OWN HOUSE THAN TO GET RID OF HIS PREJUDICES.”**

WISDOM OF THE CHILD

To say of any man that he is God, the **“begotten”** Son of God, or that his father is God; is not an honour but an insult. A French peasant understood this distinction better than the millions of erudite Christian scholars walking the earth today.

It is reputed that Louis XV, King of France was a very lecherous person. No woman was safe from his debaucheries. After his death, when his son was well settled on the throne, a rumour was spread around Paris that an exact duplicate of the young king was seen roaming about the capital. The King was naturally intrigued to see his double. It did not take the King’s men long to have the rustic from the countryside presented before the King. The King was amused by the stark resemblance to himself and his late father. He was tickled to have a dig at the poor farmer. He politely asked, “Did your mother ever visit Paris during my father’s reign?” **“No!”** the rustic replied, **“But my father did!”** This was a death-knell for the King, but he had asked for it!

DON’T GO TO EXTREMES

This rank hatred of the Jews which lead them to slander Jesus and his mother is bad, and the over-infatuation of the Christians for Christ is also bad. Muhammad (PBUH) the Messenger of God condemned both these extremes, and elevated Jesus (PBUH) to his true status, as the Messiah, a great prophet and reformer.

Love him, respect him, revere him, follow him; but do not

77 **Conundrum:** A puzzling problem or question admitting of no satisfactory solution.

worship him! For worship is due to God alone, the father in heaven: Allah!⁷⁸

This is true glorification – for,

“He shall glorify me!”

(Holy Bible) John 16:14

Historically, morally and prophetically, Muhammad the last and final Messenger of God, **“The Spirit of Truth,”** is the only one to guide mankind into all truth. He is pre-eminently **the Natural Successor to Christ.**

Your further inquiries, comments and criticisms are welcome. Don’t just sit there, for the sake of God, act now!

EPILOGUE

Dear reader, it has been suggested that some Christian propagandists might lure you from your exposition of the preceding pages, by dangling before you the “Pentecostal” experience.

Pentecost was a Jewish festival day, celebrated on the fiftieth day after the beginning of corn harvesting. The Jew gathered in Jerusalem from far and wide for the feast. Peter with **“the eleven,”**⁷⁹ together with others were in one place, when suddenly they heard the roaring of a mighty windstorm in the skies above them where they were sitting. This electrified the people and they began to **“speak in tongues,”** in dialects and languages foreign to themselves. Some marvelled while others mocked, saying **“they’re drunk, that’s all!”** It reminded them of the **“babbling”** at Babel (Genesis 11:9).

The Christian missionaries contend that that was the fulfilment of what Jesus (PBUH) had prophesied in John chapters 14, 15 and 16. Astounding as the whole drama may sound, Peter, the one, the Master had appointed to **“feed my lambs...feed my sheep”** (John 21:15-16), rose to defend the disciples, saying, “These men are not drunk! It’s much too early for

78 **Allah:** The name for God Almighty in the semitic languages. See Vol III, Part 3 – **“What is His Name?”**

79 **“The eleven”** (Acts 2: 14) No Bible commentator dare discuss as to who these eleven were, because Judas the traitor was long since dead. The Holy Ghost failed to inform Luke. That at best there could only be ten beside Peter and not **eleven!**

that! People don't get drunk so early in the morning!"

***But this is that which was spoken
by the prophet Joel...***⁸⁰

(Holy Bible) Acts 2:16

Pentecost was the fulfilment of the prophecy of the prophet **Joel** and not of any predictions of Jesus (PBUH). Christendom believes that Peter was inspired to record the same. Both obviously tickled by the Holy Ghost! Not a **single word**⁸¹ is recorded anywhere as to what these apostles of Christ has babbled or murmured on Pentecost day, yet as to the Comforter, he was to guide mankind **"into all Truth!"** Proving once again that the Comforter is **not** the Holy **Ghost!**

80 **"Prophet Joel"**: In **"The New English Bible,"** published by the Bible Societies in association with the Oxford University Press in their fourteenth impression of 1984, expunged the name **JOEL**, without an apology. He was too insignificant (?) a prophet, having written only two pages in a thousand of the Bible. If Christendom can edit out names of their own prophets, what will they not do to names like **Ishmael** and **Ahmed**?

81 On the contrary, hear what Muhammad (PBUH) the Comforted uttered in his trances in fulfilment of the prophecies. Get your **"Future World Constitution"** today!



PART THREE

MUHAMMAD

(Peace be upon Him)

THE GREATEST

CHAPTER ONE

EVERYBODY'S CHOICE

وَإِنَّكَ لَعَلَىٰ خُلُقٍ عَظِيمٍ

And indeed, you are of a great moral character.

Surah al-Qalam (*Holy Qur'an* 68:4)⁸²

HOW THE TOPIC AROSE

About ten years ago, a distant cousin of mine – Mr. Mohamed Mehtar (Farooki)⁸³ gave me a typed quotation by the French historian, Lamartine. The quotation⁸⁴ purported to prove that Muhammad, the prophet of Islam, was the greatest man that ever lived. Mr. Mehtar was in the habit of passing information on to me, believing that I might put the same to some good use at the proper time and place. Before this he had presented me with **“The Call of the Minaret”** an expensive book written by Bishop Kenneth Cragg. By analysing this book I discovered the masterful deceit of the Christian orientalists.

Lamartine's tribute to our prophet inspired me and I had a great desire to share his thoughts about our **Nabee** with my Muslim brethren. The opportunity to do so was not long in coming.

I received a phone call from a Muslim community in Dannhauser, a small town in Northern Natal, who were organising a birthday celebration of

82 I urge my Muslim brethren to memorize the verse in Arabic and its meaning.

83 Mr. Mehtar was for a long time editor of the Muslim newspaper **“The Indian Views,”** in South Africa.

84 A detailed exposition of the quotation will be found on page 128.

the Holy Prophet. They invited me to give a lecture on that auspicious occasion. So I deemed it an honour and a privilege, I readily agreed. When they inquired, in view of their advertising needs, as to the subject of my lecture, I suggested on the inspiration from Lamartine, **“Muhammad (PBUH) the Greatest.”**

REPEATED LET-DOWNS

On my arrival in Dannhauser, I noticed a lot of posters advertising the meeting which in essence said that Deedat would be lecturing on the subject “MUHAMMAD THE GREAT”. I was somewhat disheartened and, on inquiring was told that the change in the title was due to a printer’s error.

Some two months later, I got another, similar invitation. This time from the Muslim community of Pretoria the administrative capital of South Africa. The subject I had mooted was the same – **“Muhammad (PBUH) the Greatest”**. To my dismay the identical reasons and excuses were given. Both these incidents happened in South Africa, my own country. But, let me give you one more example of our inferiority complex – so much part of the sickness of the *Ummah*.

USA NO DIFFERENT

On my lecture tour of the mighty United States in 1977, I discovered that our soldiers in the New World also had feet of clay. Out of the many sad experiences I have had, I think that this one will suffice to prove the point.

The Muslims of Indianapolis were advised to organise a lecture for me on the subject **“What the Bible says about Muhammad (PBUH)”**. They agreed to advertise just that, but their timidity did not permit them to do so. They thought the topic was too provocative, so they, in their wisdom (?), toned it down to “A PROPHET IN THE BIBLE”. A lifeless, insipid title you will no doubt agree. Which Hindu, Muslim, Christian or Jew would be intrigued to attend? What does **“A PROPHET”** mean? To most A PROPHET means **ANY** PROPHET, and who would be interested in attending a meeting where just **any** prophet in the Bible was debated? Jo, Joel, Jonah, Ezra, Elisha, Ezekiel are just a few of the many mentioned in the Bible. As was to be expected the attendance left much to be desired.

INFERIORITY COMPLEX

What is the cause of this sickness? This inferiority complex? **“Yes!”** We are an emasculated people. Dynamism has been wrung out of us, not only by our enemies but by our won spiritless friends. We even dare not repeat Allah’s own testimony regarding his beloved:

وَإِنَّكَ لَعَلَىٰ خُلُقٍ عَظِيمٍ

And indeed, you are of a great moral character.

Surah al-Qalam (Holy Qur’an 68:4)⁸⁵

THE MOST INFLUENTIAL

Normally, it is quite, natural for anyone to love, praise, idolize or here-worship one’s leader, be it a guru, saint or prophet: and very often we do.

However, if I were to reproduce here⁸⁶ what great Muslims have said or written about our illustrious prophet, it could be played down as exaggeration, fancy or idolization by the sceptics and the opponents of Islam. Therefore, allow me to quote unbiased historians, friendly critics and even avowed enemies of that mighty Messenger of God – Muhammad (PBUH). If the tributes of the non-Muslims do not touch your hearts, then you are in the wrong faith. Opt out of Islam! There is already too much deadwood on the “ship” of Islam.

In recent times, a book has been published in America titled **“The 100”**, or The Top One Hundred, or the Greatest Hundred in History. A certain Michael H. Hart, described as a historian, mathematician and astronomer was written this novel book. He has searched history, seeking for men who had the greatest influence on mankind. In this book he gives us the hundred most influential men who had the greatest influence on mankind. In this book he gives us the hundred most influential men, including Asoka, Aristotle, Buddha, Confucius, Hitler, Plato, and Zoroaster. He does not give us a mere chart of the topmost **“one hundred”** from the point of view of their influence on people, but he evaluates the degree of their influence on people, but he evaluates the degree of their influence and rates them in

85 This verse, together with its Arabic text heads this chapter: memorize the verse with its meaning.

86 For an example, see Appendix “A” at the end of this book.

order of their excellence from No. 1, through to No. 100. He gives us his reasons for the placing of his candidates. We are not asked to agree with him, but we cannot help admire the man's research and honesty.

The most amazing thing about his selection is that he has put our **Nabee-e-Kareem**, the Holy Prophet Muhammad (PBUH) as No. 1,⁸⁷ the first of his "100"! Thus confirming, unknowingly, God's Own testimony in His Final Revelation to the World:

لَقَدْ كَانَ لَكُمْ فِي رَسُولِ اللَّهِ أُسْوَةٌ حَسَنَةٌ

There has certainly been for you in the Messenger of Allah⁸⁸ an excellent pattern

Surah al-Ahzab (Holy Qur'an 33:21)

JESUS (PBUH) NO. 3!

Hart placing the Prophet of Islam as No. 1, has naturally pleased the Muslims. But his choice has shocked the non-Muslims, more specially the Jews and the Christians, who consider this as an affront. What? Jesus (PBUH) No. 3 and Moses (PBUH) No. 40! This is for them very difficult to stomach, but what says Hart? Let us hear his arguments⁸⁹ –

“Since there are roughly twice as many Christians as Moslems in the world, it may initially seem strange that Muhammad has been ranked higher than Jesus. There are two principal reasons for that decision.

There are two principal reasons for that decision. First, Muhammad played a far more important role in the development of Islam than Jesus did in the development of Christianity. Although Jesus was responsible for the main ethical and moral precepts of Christianity (insofar as these differed from Judaism), St. Paul was the main developer of Christian theology, its principal proselytizer, and the author of a large portion of the New Testament.

87 With the kind permission of Mr. Hart, we have just reproduced the whole chapter on Muhammad (PBUH) from the “**Top 100**”.

88 **ALLAH**: A proper noun for God Almighty in the Semitic languages: i.e. in the languages of Moses, Jesus and Muhammad (Peace be on Them All).

89 The latest estimate is that there are one thousand million Muslims in the world and one thousand two hundred million Christians.

Muhammad, however, was responsible for both the theology of Islam and its main ethical and moral principles. In addition, he played the key role in proselytizing the new faith, and in establishing the religious practices of Islam.”

Michael H. Hart in his book – *“The 100”* pages 38/39.

PAUL THE FOUNDER OF CHRISTIANITY

According to Hart, the honour for founding Christianity is to be shared between Jesus (PBUH) and St. Paul. The latter he believes to be the real founder of Christianity.

I cannot help agreeing with Hart. Out of the total 27 Books of the New Testament, more than half is authored by Paul. As opposed to Paul, the Master has not written a single word of the twenty-seven books. If you can lay your hand on what is called **“A Red Letter Bible”**, you will find every word alleged to have been uttered by Jesus (PBUH) – in red ink and the rest in normal black ink. Don’t be shocked to find that in this so-called **“Injeel,”** the Gospel of Jesus, over ninety percent of the 27 Books of the New Testament is printed in black ink!

This is the candid Christian confession of what they call the **“Injeel”**. In actual confrontation with Christian missionaries, you will find them quoting one hundred percent from Paul.

NO ONE FOLLOWS JESUS (PBUH)

Jesus (PBUH) said,

“If you love me, keep my commandments”

(Holy Bible) John 14:15

He said further,

“Whosoever therefore shall break one of these last commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven...”

(Holy Bible) Matthew 5:19

Every Christian controversialist you question, “Do you keep the laws and the commandments?” will answer, **“No!”** if you ask further, “Why don’t you?” he will if he is a Bible-thumper, invariably reply, **“The law is nailed to the cross!”** Meaning the law is done away with. **“We are now living under grace!”**

Every time you prod him with what his Lord and Master Jesus (PBUH) had said, he will confront you with something from Corinthians, Galatians, Ephesians, Phillipians, etc. If you ask, “Who are they?” You will hear, “Paul, Paul, Paul!” “Who is your master?” you question, and he will say, “Jesus!” But he will ever and anon contradict his own Jesus (PBUH), in slot number three.

WHY PROVOKE YOUR CUSTOMER?

This placing of Christ in the number three spot by Michael H. Hart poses a very serious question for us. Why would an American publish a book of 572 pages in America and selling in America for \$15 each, go out of his way to provoke his potential readers?

Who will but his books? Surely, not the Pakistanis and the Bangladeshis, neither the Arabs nor the Turks! Except for a few copies here and there, the overwhelming number of his customers will be from the 250 million Christians and the 6 million Jews of America. Then why did he provoke his customers? Did he not hear the dictum – **“the customer is always right!”** Of course he did. Then why his daring choice. But before I close this episode of Hart, I will allow him to make his one last apology for his “temerity”.

“My choice of Muhammad to lead the list of the world's most influential persons may surprise some readers and may be questioned by others, but he was the only man in history who was supremely successful on both the religious and secular levels.”

Michael H. Hart

“The 100: A Ranking of the Most Influential Persons in History”,

New York: Hart Publishing Company, Inc. 1978, p.33.

WHO WERE HISTORY'S GREAT LEADERS

TIME, JULY 15, 1974

The world famous **"Time"**⁹⁰ carried the above rubric on its front cover. Inside the magazine were numerous essays as to **'What makes a great leader?' 'Throughout history, who qualifies?'** TIME asked a variety of historians, writers, military men, businessmen and others for their selections. Each gave his candidate according to his "light" as objectively as is humanly possible, depending on one's own awareness and prejudice.

WHO KNOWS DR. SALAZAR?

It is my habit and pleasurable duty to take non-Muslims on a guided tour of the largest mosque in the Southern Hemisphere – *"The Jumma Masjid"*, Durban.

On one occasion I was hosting a Portuguese couple, a husband and wife team. At some stage during the discussion the Portuguese gentleman said that **"Dr. Salazar was the greatest man in the world!"** I did not debate the point with him as I personally knew little about Dr. Salazar except that he was a one-time dictator of Portugal albeit to many a great benefactor to his nation. My poor visitor was, however, speaking according to his own knowledge, point of view and prejudice.

MUHAMMAD (PBUH) CANNOT BE IGNORED!

Among the contributors to the **"Time"**, it seems that none could ignore Muhammad (PBUH). **WILLIAM McNEILL**, a United States historian, of the University of Chicago, records:

"If you measure leadership by impact, then you would have to name Jesus, Buddha, Mohammed, Confucius, the great prophets of the world..."

McNeill does not go into details, nor does he give us any explanation as to why he placed Jesus (PBUH) first and Muhammad (PBUH) number three. Perhaps it was by force of habit. It is very likely that McNeill is a Christian.

90 **"Time"**: We are at loggerhead with this magazine. Believe it or not; they have spurned our paid advertisement. The words **"FUTURE WORLD CONSTITUTION"** was referred back to us in their correspondence as **"The Future World CONFRONTATION"**.

However, we will not argue with him. Then comes –

JAMES GAVIN, described as a United States army man, a retired lieutenant general. He says –

“Among leaders who have made the greatest impact through ages, I would consider Mohammed, Jesus Christ, Maybe Lenin, Possibly Mao. As for a leader whose qualities we could most use now, I would choose John F. Kennedy.”

The general does not say much more, yet we have to salute him. It calls for tremendous fortitude to pen the name Muhammad before that of Christ (Peace be upon Them Both). It surely, was no slip of the pen.

JULES MASSERMAN, United States psychoanalyst and professor of the Chicago University, gives us, unlike the other contributors, the basis for making his selection. He gives us his reason for choosing his greatest LEADER of all times.

He wants us to find out, what we are really looking for in the man, the qualities that sets him apart. We may be looking for any sets of qualities. As in the case of Michael H. Hart, he was looking for a person wielding the **MOST influence**.⁹¹

However, Masserman does not want us to depend on our fancies or prejudices: he wants to establish objective standards for judging, before we confer greatness upon anybody.

He says that **“Leaders must fulfil three functions –”**

1. THE LEADER MUST PROVIDE FOR THE WELL-BEING OF THE LEAD...

The leader, whoever he is, must be interested in your welfare. He must not be looking for milking cows for his own greed like the Rev. Jim Jones of Jonestown, Guyana, of the **“Suicide Cult”** notoriety. You will remember him as the man who committed suicide together with 910 of his followers, all at the same time **EN MASSE!**

The United States was on his trail and he was on the verge of being caught for certain felonies. But before they could apprehend him, he thought it wise to eliminate himself, together with all his followers, so

91 Since Hart published his **“TOP 100”** many people have published books with the same theme. **“100 GREAT GOLFERS”** or **“100 GREAT BATSMEN.”** Many more will no doubt follow.

that no one would be left to testify against him. He laced lemonade with cyanide and inspired his devotees to drink it, and so they did and they all died in disgrace! In the meantime, it was discovered that the Rev. Jim Jones had salted away fifteen million dollars and stacked in his own account in banks throughout the world. All his victims were his milking cows and he was exploiting them to satisfy his own lust and greed. Masserman's hero must be found to benefit his sheep, flock, and not himself.

2. THE LEADER OR WOULD BE LEADER MUST PROVIDE A SOCIAL ORGANIZATION IN WHICH PEOPLE FEEL RELATIVELY SECURE...

Unlike the Marxist, the Fascist, the Nazi, the Neo-Nazi, the Ashkenazi⁹² the Zionist, and their fellow travellers, Professor Masserman, in his brief essay in the TIME magazine, did not spell this out. But his beliefs and feelings are abundantly clear. He is in search of a Leader who will provide a social order free of selfishness, and greed and racism: for all these "isms" carry within them seeds of their own destruction.

*There's still with us much sorrow and sin,
Injustice, oppression, wrong and hate.
Still does Arrogance deaden Conscience,
Rob struggling souls of e'en the crumbs
Of Pity, and make, of loathsome flesh,
And crumbling dust, fair - seeming Idols
For worship. Still does Ignorance blow
A mighty Horn and try to shame
True Wisdom. Still do men drive Slaves,
Protesting smoothly the end of Slavery!
Still does Greed devour the substance
Of helpless one within her power.
Nay, more, -- the fine Individual Voice
Is smothered in the raucous sin
Of groups and Crowds that madly shout
What they call Slogans New; --*

92 **Ashkenazi:** the Jews from Germany, Central Europe, mostly from Russia who are in unlawful occupation of Palestine. There is something prophetic in the name itself – the Jews are doing to the people of the occupied territories exactly what the Nazis did to them. What an irony!

Old Falsehoods long discredited...

Abdullah Yusuf Ali

3. THAT THIS LEADER MUST PROVIDE HIS PEOPLE WITH ONE SET OF BELIEFS...

It is easy to talk to Fellowship of Faith and the Brotherhood of Man, but in South Africa today, there are a thousand different sects and denominations among the Whites (people of European descent) and three thousand among the Blacks (of African descent).

The White Churches in my country are spawning “Black” Bishops, fast, but in the first three hundred years of European conquest, they did not produce a single Black Bishop. Even now, the Black, the White, the Coloured and the Indian cannot pray together in most of the Dutch Reformed Churches. The hatred between the Christian sects was aptly described by the Christian Emperor Julian, who said:

“No wild beasts are so dangerous to men as Christians are to one another”

Sayed Amir Ali in his “*Spirit of Islam*”, page 1 ii

With the foregoing three standards, Masserman searches history, and analyses Louis Pasteur, Salk, Ghandi, Confucius, Alexander the Great, Caesar, Hitler, Buddha, Jesus and the rest;⁹³ finally coming to the conclusion that –

“Perhaps the greatest leader of all times was Muhammad, who combined all three functions (and) to a lesser degree, Moses did the same.”

We cannot help marvelling at Masserman, that as a Jew he condescends to scrutinize even Adolf Hitler, the arch-enemy of his people. He considers Hitler to be a great leader. His race, the mighty German nation of 90 million people, was ready to march to destiny or destruction at his behest. Alas, he led them to ruin.

Hitler is not the question. The question is why would Masserman, as an American Jew, a paid servant of the Government proclaim to his countrymen of over two hundred million Jews and Christian that **not**

93 For Masserman’s full essay see Appendix “C” on page 147.

Jesus, **not** Moses **but** Muhammad⁹⁴ was **“The greatest Leader of all times!”** ACCOUNT FOR THAT!

WHAT SAYS THE SCEPTICS?

Michael H. Hart put Muhammad No. 1 on his list and his own Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ (PBUH) No. 3.

Why? **“Was he bribed!”** (?)

William McNeill considers Muhammad as worthy of honour in his list of the first three names of his.

Why? **“Was he bribed!”** (?)

James Gavin puts Muhammad (PBUH) before Christ (PBUH).

Why? **“Was he bribed!”** (?)

Jules Masserman adjudges Muhammad No. 1 and his own hero Moses (PBUH) a close second.

Why? **“Was he bribed!”** (?)

“Are we to suppose that all the glowing adulation of Muhammad was a miserable piece of intellectual legerdemain, hocus pocus ... I, for my part, cannot form any such supposition ... one would be entirely at a loss what to think of mankind at all if quackery so grew and flourished in the world.”⁹⁵

Yet the scoffers bemoan anyone who has anything good to say about Muhammad (PBUH) or Islam AS HAVING BEEN BRIBED by the Arabs! They are giving too much credit to my brethren. I repeat: **“It is possible, but it is improbable!”**

During the Second World War, Norway produced only one “Quisling.”⁹⁶ He was tried for treason and executed. It is unlikely that America and the Western world have just reached puberty to spawn a breed of Quislings nurtured by hot petro-dollars from the Middle East. Please do not demean your honest, courageous men, who without fear or favour are prepared to suffer obloquy for their convictions. We must all admire them!

94 Blessing of God on all His Messengers.

95 With apologies to Thomas Carlyle and his *“Hero and Hero-worship”*.

96 **“Quisling”** has come to mean a person who is a traitor to his nation and his country.

We can now justifiably conclude that the God of Mercy, Who forever recognizes the sincere efforts of His servants, is only fulfilling His Promise to Muhammad (PBUH) His Chosen Messenger –

وَرَفَعْنَا لَكَ ذِكْرَكَ

And raised high for you your repute.

Surah ash-Sharh (Holy Qur'an 94:4)

Alternative renderings:⁹⁷

- (a) **Have We not exalted thy fame?**
- (b) **And have We not raised thy name for thee?**
- (c) **Have We not given you high renown?**

Friends and foe alike, as if by some secret compulsion are made to pay unsolicited tribute to this Mighty Messenger of God. But the Almighty enlists even the devil into His service, as He had done in the time of Jesus (PBUH), (Matthew 4:1-11). Even the devil sometimes speaks Gospel truths.

Professor K.S. Ramakrishna Rao, a Hindu philosopher, in his book **“MUHAMMAD – The Prophet of Islam”**, quotes the arch-devil himself, yes, Adolf Hitler, to prove the unique greatness of Muhammad (PBUH).

The Professor, like Jules Masserman who had evaluated the Prophet of Islam on three grounds (see appendix “C” on page 147) also saw in Hitler's **“Mein Kampf”** a three faceted jewel, a rare commodity which he found in our hero under discussion. Quoting Hitler, he says:

“A great theorist is seldom a great leader. An agitator is far more likely to possess these qualities. He will always be a better leader. For leadership means the ability to move masses of men. The talent to produce ideas has nothing in common with the capacity for leadership.” But he says: “The union of the **theorist**, **organizer**, and **leader** in one man is the rarest phenomenon on this earth; therein consists greatness.”

97 These quotes are from different translations of the Holy Qur'an. There are no separate “Versions” of the Holy Qur'an. For **“What is a Version,”** obtain my book – **“Is the Bible God's Word?”**

Professor Rao concludes, in his own words,

“In the person of the Prophet of Islam the world has seen this rarest phenomenon walking on the earth, walking in flesh and blood.”

SHARE THE ANGER

Before anyone assails the Professor of undue bias and **“bribery”**, let me give them a few more names of admirers of Muhammad (PBUH).

1. *“Muhammad was the soul of kindness, and his influence was felt and never forgotten by those around him.”*

A Hindu scholar – Diwan Chand Sharma in his **“The Prophets of the East”**, Calcutta 1935, p.122

2. *“Four years after the death of Justinian, 569 AD, was born at Makkah, in Arabia the man who, of all men, has exercised the **greatest influence**⁹⁸ upon the human race...MOHAMMED...”*

John William Draper, M.D.,LLD., in his **“A History of the Intellectual Development of Europe”**, London 1875.

3. *“I doubt whether any other man, whose external conditions changed so much, ever himself changed less to meet them.”*

R.V.C. Bodley in **“The Messenger”**, London 1946, p.9

4. *“I have studied him – the wonderful man and in my opinion far from being an anti-Christ, he must be called the Saviour of Humanity.”*

George Bernard Shaw, in **“The Genuine Islam”**, Vol. 1, No. 81936

5. *“By a fortune absolutely unique in history, Mohammed is a threefold founder of a nation, of an empire, and of a religion.”*

R. Bosworth-Smith in **“Mohammed and Mohammedanism”**, 1946

98 I wonder whether Michael H. Hart, as a historian, had stumbled across Draper's remark to inspire him to write his **“THE 100,”** a ranking of the Most Influential Persons in history? See page 100.

6. *“Mohammed is the most successful of all Prophets and religious personalities.”*

Encyclopedia Britannica, 11th Edition

CHAPTER TWO

FROM THE HISTORICAL PAST

It is not difficult to reproduce a further dozen or more eulogies by the admirers and critics of Muhammad (PBUH). Despite all their objectivity, jaundiced minds can always conjure up some aspersions. Let me take my readers deep down in past history.

It was Friday the 8th of May, 1840, that is about a hundred and fifty years ago, at a time when it was a sacrilege to say anything good about Muhammad (PBUH), and the Christian West was trained to hate the man Muhammad (PBUH) and his religion, the same way as dogs were at once trained in my country to hate all black people.⁹⁹ At that time in history, Thomas Carlyle, one of the greatest thinkers of the past century delivered a series of lectures under the theme – **“Heroes and Hero-worship”**.

DEVELOPED SICKNESS

Carlyle exposed this blind prejudice of his people at the beginning of his talk. He made reference to one of the literary giants a Dutch scholar and statesman, by the name of Hugo Grotius,¹⁰⁰ who had written a bitter and abusive invective against the prophet of Islam. He had falsely charged that the Holy Prophet trained pigeons to pick out peas from his ears, so that he could by this trick bluff his people that the Holy Ghost in the shape of a dove was revealing God’s revelation to him, which he then had them recorded in his Bible the Qur’an. Perhaps Grotius was inspired into this fairy-tale from his reading of his own Holy Scriptures:

99 By the way **“dogs are colour blind!”** Yet it can be done.

100 From page 57 of the book – “On Heroes Hero-Worship and the Heroic in History” by *Thomas Carlyle*, London 1959.

Then Jesus, when he had been baptized (by John the Baptist in the Jordan River), came up immediately from the water; and behold, the heavens were opened to him, and he saw the Spirit of God Descending Like A Dove and alighting upon him.
(emphasis added)

(Holy Bible) Matthew 3:16

WHERE'S THE AUTHORITY

Pococke, another respected intellectual of the time, like “doubting Thomas” (John 20:25), wanted proof about Muhammad (PBUH), that pigeons and the peas? Grotius answered “THAT THERE WAS NO PROOF!”

He just felt like inventing this story for his audience. To him and his audience the “pigeons and peas” theory was more plausible than that of the Archangel dictating to Muhammad (PBUH). These falsities wrung the heart of Carlyle. He cried:

“The lies which well-meaning zeal has heaped round this man, are disgraceful to ourselves only.”

Thomas Carlyle

THE HERO PROPHET

Carlyle was a man of genius and God gifted him with the art of articulation. In his own way, he wanted to put the records straight. He planned to deliver a lecture and he chose a very provocative topic **“The Hero as Prophet.”** And he chose his hero-prophet to be the most maligned man of his time, “MUHAMMAD (PBUH)!” Not Moses, David, Solomon or Jesus but Muhammad!”¹⁰¹ To placate his overwhelming Anglican (belonging to the Church of England) fellow countrymen, he apologised –

101 May the Peace and Blessings of God be upon all his servants.

“As there is no danger of our becoming, any of us, Mahometans,¹⁰² I mean to say all the good of him I justly can.”

In other words he, as well as his elite audience, were free from the fear of converting to Islam, and could take a chance in paying some compliments to Muhammad (PBUH). If he had any fears regarding the strength of their faith, he would not have taken that chance.

In the ear of hatred and spite towards everything Islamic and to an audience full of scepticism and cynicism, Carlyle unfolded many a glowing truth about his Hero – Muhammad (PBUH). To the **“praiseworthy,”** indeed be praise. For that is what the very name Muhammad means – the Praised One – the Praiseworthy. There are times when Carlyle uses words and expressions which might not be too pleasing to the believing Muslim, but one has to forgive him as he was walking a cultural tightrope, and he succeeded eminently.

He paid our hero many ardent and enthusiastic tributes, and defended him from the false charges and calumnies of his enemies; exactly as the Prophet had done in the case of Jesus (PBUH) and his mother.¹⁰³

HIS SINCERITY

1. Thomas Carlyle mentions the following in his book:

- (a) “The Great Man's sincerity is of the kind he cannot speak of, is not conscious of: nay, I suppose, he is conscious rather of insincerity; for what man can walk accurately by the law of truth for one day? No, the Great Man does not boast himself sincere, far from that; perhaps does not ask himself if he is so: I would say rather, his sincerity does not depend on himself; he cannot help being sincere!”

Heroes and Hero-Worship, p.59

- (b) “A silent great soul; he was one of those who cannot **but** be in earnest; whom Nature herself had appointed to be sincere. While others walk in formulas and hearsays, contended enough to dwell there, this man could not

¹⁰² “Mahometans” means Muslims.

¹⁰³ See **“Muhammad the Natural Successor to Christ”** by the author, part 2 of this volume.

screen himself in formulas; he was alone with his own soul and the reality of things. The great Mystery of Existence, as I said, glared-in upon him, with its terrors, with its splendors; no hearsays could hide that unspeakable fact that, “Here am I!” **Such sincerity**, as we named it, has in very truth something of divine. The word of such a man is a Voice direct from Nature’s own heart. Men do and must listen to that as to nothing else; – all else is wind in comparison.”

Heroes and Hero-Worship, p.75

In his lengthy speech Carlyle did not have the opportunity to inform his audience about the sources of his inferences. I may furnish just one incident from the life of the Prophet. An incident which reflects the highest degree of his sincerity in recording a Revelation in the Holy Qur’an even if it seems to reprove him for some natural and human zeal.

ADMONITION AS REVEALED

It was in the early days of his mission in Makkah. Muhammad (PBUH) was deeply engrossed in trying to invite the leaders of the Pagan Quraish to his teachings. Apparently one of them was giving him an attentive hearing when a poor blind man by the name of **Abdullah ibn Umm-i-Maktum** tried to barge in into the discussion and wanted to draw attention to himself. The blessed Prophet said nothing, but a thought went through his mind (why don’t you have a little patience, can’t you see (sense) that because of your impatience I might lose these customers). I believe that lesser men, sinners and saints, will not be questioned for such lapses, but not so for Muhammad (PBUH). Did not God choose him and honour him with that lofty status as recorded?

وَإِنَّكَ لَعَلَىٰ خُلُقٍ عَظِيمٍ

And indeed, you are of a great moral character.

Surah al-Qalam (Holy Qur’an 68:4)

HE FROWNED

Whilst in the midst of the conversation with his pagan fellow tribesmen, God Almighty sends Gabriel, the Angel of Revelation, with this admonition:

عَبَسَ وَتَوَلَّى

The Prophet frowned and turned away.

أَن جَاءَهُ الْأَعْمَى

Because there came to him the blind man, (interrupting).

وَمَا يُدْرِيكَ لَعَلَّهُ وُزِّي

But what would make you perceive, (O Muhammad), that perhaps he might be purified.

أَوْ يَذَّكَّرُ فَتَنْفَعَهُ الذِّكْرَى

Or be reminded and the remembrance would benefit him.²

Surah 'Abasa (Holy Qur'an 80:1-4)

The Holy Prophet (PBUH) had naturally disliked the interruption. Perhaps the poor man's feelings were hurt. But he whose gentle heart ever sympathised with the poor and the afflicted, got new Light (Revelation) from his Lord, and without the least hesitation, he immediately published it for all eternity!

Subsequently, every time he met the blind man, he received him graciously and thanked him that on his account the Lord had remembered him. During Muhammad's (PBUH) absences from Madinah, the blind man was made the Governor of the City twice. Such was the sincerity and gratitude of Carlyle's Hero Prophet.

HIS FIDELITY¹⁰⁴

2. "It is a boundless favor. — He never forgot this good Kadijah. Long afterwards, Ayesha his young favourite wife, a woman who indeed distinguished herself among the Moslem, by all manner of qualities, through her whole long life; this young brilliant Ayesha was, one day, questioning him: "Now am not I better than Kadijah? She was a widow; old, and had lost her looks: you love me better than you did her?" — "No. by Allah!" answered Mahomet: "No, by Allah! She believed in

104 A few poetic verses on fidelity will be found in Appendix "D" on page 148.

me when none else would believe. In the whole world I had but one friend, and she was that!”

Heroes and Hero-Worship, p. 76

It would have been easier to repel the temptation of the devil than to succumb to the ego of a young, loving, brilliant and beautiful wife like lady Ayesha Siddiqah. Why not let her hear the soothing balm of flattery; it will not harm anyone. Even the soul of Bibi Khadija, the mother of the Faithful, would look light-heartedly at the ruse. There is no shamming, no innocent “white lies” with Muhammad (PBUH). Traits of this kind show us the genius man, brother of us all, brought visible through fourteen centuries, - - - the veritable son of our common mother.

‘AL AMEEN, THE FAITHFUL’

3.

- (a) “Muhammad was a man of truth and fidelity, true in what he said, in what he spoke, in what he thought; he always meant something, a man rather taciturn in speech, silent when there was nothing to be said, but pertinent, wise, sincere when he did speak, always throwing light on the matter. This is the only sort of speech worth speaking!”

Heroes and Hero-Worship, p. 6

- (b) “Mahomet naturally gave offence to the Koreish, Keepers of the Kaabah, superintendents of the Idols. One or two men of influence had joined him: the thing spread slowly, but it was spreading. Naturally he gave offence to everybody.”¹⁰⁵

Heroes and Hero-Worship, p. 77

- (c) “Not a mealy-mouthed man! A candid ferocity, if the case call for it, is in him; he does not mince matters! The War of Tabûc is a thing he often speaks of: his men refused, many of them, to march on that occasion; pleaded the heat of the weather, the harvest, and so forth; he can never forget

105 The Jews hated the Prophet: the Christians hated the Prophet: the **Mushriks** (the Polytheists) hated the Prophet, and the **Munafiqeen** (the hypocrites) hated the Prophet. It is the nature of Falsehood to hate the Truth. Light eliminates Darkness, but darkness does not take kindly to Light.

that. Your harvest? It lasts for a day. What will become of your harvest through all Eternity? Hot weather? Yes, it was hot; 'but Hell will be hotter!' Sometimes a rough sarcasm turns-up: He says to the unbelievers, Ye shall have the just measure of your deeds at that Great Day. They will be weighed out to you; ye shall not have short weight!"

Hero and Hero-worship, p.95/6

Remember, Thomas Carlyle uttered these words, and many more to a shocked and bewildered Christian audience in England, a hundred and fifty years ago. History did not record for us the lively arguments and debates which his lecture must naturally have caused. He kept to his promise: **"I mean to say all the good of him (his Hero Prophet) I justly can,"** and he went on his talk to defend Muhammad (PBUH) against the false charges, slander and calumnies of his enemies:

CHARGE OF FALSITY

4.

- (a) "A false man found a religion? Why, a false man cannot build a brick house! If he does not know and follow truly the properties of mortar, burnt clay and what else he works in, it is no house that he makes, but a rubbish-heap. It will not stand for twelve centuries,¹⁰⁶ to lodge a hundred-and-eighty millions;¹⁰⁷ it will fall straightway. A man must conform himself to Nature's laws, be verily in communion with Nature and the truth of things, or Nature will answer him, No, not at all! Speciosities are specious¹⁰⁸... It is like a forged bank-note; they get it passed out of their worthless hands: others, not they, have to smart for it. Nature bursts up in fire-flames, French Revolutions and such like, and such like, proclaiming with terrible veracity that forged notes are forged."

Hero and Hero-worship, p.58

106 Now, fourteen centuries.

107 A thousand million today.

108 **Specious:** Having the ring of truth or plausibility but actually false.

- (b) “It goes greatly against the imposter theory, the fact that he lived in this entirely unexceptionable, entirely quiet and commonplace way, till the heat of his years was done. He was forty before he talked of any mission from Heaven... All his ‘ambition’, seemingly, had been, hitherto, to live an honest life ; his ‘fame,’ the mere good-opinion of neighbours that knew him....”

Hero and Hero-worship, p.70

- (c) “Ambition? What could all Arabia do for this man; with the crown of Greek Heraclius,²³ of Persian Chosroes,” and all crowns in the Earth — what could they all do for him? It was not of the Earth he wanted to hear tell; it was of the Heaven above and of the Hell beneath. All crowns and sovereignties whatsoever, where would they in a few brief years be? To be Sheik of Mecca or Arabia, and have a bit of gilt wood put into your hand — will that be one's salvation? I decidedly think, not. We will leave it altogether, this impostor-hypothesis, as not credible; not very tolerable even, worthy chiefly of dismissal by us.”

Hero and Hero-worship, p.72/3

CHARGE OF SINNING

5. Faults? The greatest of faults, I should say, is to be conscious of none. Readers of the Bible above all, one would think, might know better. Who was called there “the man according to God's own heart?” David, the Hebrew King, had fallen into sins enough; blackest crimes; there was no want of sins¹⁰⁹. And thereupon the unbelievers sneer and ask, Is this your man according to God's heart? The sneer, I must say, seems to me but a shallow one. What are faults, what are the outward details of a life; if the inner secret of it, the remorse, temptations, true, often — baffled, never-ended struggle of it, be forgotten? It is not in man that walketh to direct his ‘steps.’ Of all acts, is not, for a man, **repentance**

109 This is the Jewish and Christian concept of God's prophets. They charge their prophets with incest, adultery and even murder. They impute horrendous crimes to them on the authority of the Holy Bible.

the most divine ? The deadliest sin, I say, were that same supercilious consciousness of no sin; — that is death; the heart so conscious is divorced from sincerity, humility and fact; is dead: it is ‘pure’ as dead dry sand is pure.

Hero and Hero-worship, p.61

CHARGE OF “THE SWORD”

The greatest crime, the greatest “sin” of Muhammad (PBUH) in the eyes of the Christian West is that he did not allow himself to be slaughtered, to be “crucified” by his enemies. He ably defended himself, his family and his followers; and finally vanquished his enemies. Muhammad’s (PBUH) success is the Christians’ gall of disappointment: he did not believe in any vicarious sacrifice for the sins of others. He believed and behaved naturally. **“IN THE STATE OF NATURE, EVERYONE HAS A RIGHT TO DEFEND HIS PERSON AND POSSESSIONS, AND EXTEND HIS HOSTILITIES TO A REASONABLE AMOUNT OF SATISFACTION AND RETALIATION,”** says Gibbon, the master historian in his *“Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire”*. His struggle and victory over the forces of unbelief and evil made the editors of the Encyclopedia Britannica to exclaim, Muhammad (PBUH) to be --- **“THE MOST SUCCESSFUL OF ALL RELIGIOUS PERSONALITIES.”**

How can the enemies of Islam account for Muhammad’s phenomenal achievements except to decry that he spread his religion at the point of the sword? He forced Islam down peoples’ throats!?

6. “History makes it clear, that the legend of fanatical Muslims, sweeping through the world and forcing Islam at the point of the sword upon conquered races is one of the most fantastically absurd myths that historians have ever repeated.”

De Lacy O’Leary in *Islam at the Crossroads*,
London, 1923, p.8

You do not have to be a historian like O’Leary to know that the Muslims ruled Spain for 736 years. The longest the Christians ever ruled over Muslims was 500 years in Mozambique, a territory captured from an Arab governor by the name of **Musa-bin-baique**, a name they could not properly pronounce, hence the name Mozambique. Even today, after five centuries of Christian overlordship the county is still 60 percent Muslim.

However, after eight centuries in Spain the Muslims were totally eliminated from that country so that not even one man was left to give the **Azaan** (the Muslim call to prayer). If the Muslim had used force, military or economic there would not have been any Christian left in Spain to have kicked the Muslims out. One can blame the Muslim for exploitation if you like but one cannot charge them with using the sword to convert Spaniards to the Islamic religion.

Today, Islam is still spreading all over the world – and Muslims have NO sword!

The Muslims were also the masters of India for a thousand years, but eventually when the sub-continent received independence in 1947, the Hindus obtained three-quarters of the country and the Muslims the balance of the one-quarter. Why? Because the Muslims did not force Islam down the Hindus' throat! In Spain and in India, the Muslims were no paragons of virtue, yet they obeyed the Qur'anic injunction to the letter –

لَا إِكْرَاهَ فِي الدِّينِ^ص

There shall be no compulsion in (acceptance of) the religion.

قَدْ تَبَيَّنَ الرُّشْدُ مِنَ الْغَيِّ

The right course has become clear from the wrong

Surah al-Baqarah (Holy Qur'an 2:256)

The Muslim conquerors understood from this command that “compulsion” was incompatible with true religion: because

- (a) Religion depends on faith and will, and these would be meaningless if induced by force. Force can conquer but cannot convert.
- (b) Truth and Error have been so clearly shown up by the Mercy of God that there should be no doubt in the minds of any person of goodwill as to the fundamentals of faith.
- (c) God's protection is continuous and His Plan is always to lead us from the depths of darkness into the clearest light.¹¹⁰

Except for some eccentrics here and there, the Muslims as a whole adhered to the commandment of God in the lands over which they held sway.

110 (a), (b), and (c) are Yusuf Ali's comments on verse 256.

But what can the enemy say about countries where no single Muslim soldier had set foot?

- (i) **INDONESIA:** It is a fact that over a hundred million Indonesians are Muslim, yet no conquering Muslim army ever landed on any of its over two thousand islands.
- (ii) **MALAYSIA:** The overwhelming numbers of its people in this country are Muslims yet no Muslim soldier had landed there either.
- (iii) **AFRICA:** The majority of the people on the East coast of Africa as far down as Mozambique, as well as the bulk of the inhabitants on the West coast of the continent are Muslims, but history does not record any invading hoards of Muslims from anywhere. What sword? Where was the sword? The Muslim trader did the job. His good conduct and moral rectitude achieved the miracle conversion.

“All what you say seems incontrovertible, Mr. Deedat,” says the Christian controversialist, “but we are talking about Islam at its very beginning, the way in which your prophet converted the pagans to his faith! How did he do it if not with the sword?”

ONE AGAINST ALL?

We can do no better than to allow Thomas Carlyle himself to defend his Hero Prophet against this false charge; - - -

- 7. “The sword indeed: but where will you get your sword! Every new opinion, at its starting, is precisely in a minority of one. In one man's head alone, there it dwells as yet. One man alone of the whole world believes it; there is one man against all men. That he take a sword, and try to propagate with that, will do little for him. You must first get your sword ' On the whole, a thing will propagate itself as it can. We do not find, of the Christian Religion either, that it always disdained the sword, when once it had got one. Charlemagne's conversion of the Saxons was not by preaching.”

Heroes and Hero-Worship, p.80

At the age of forty when Muhammad (PBUH) declared his Divine mission from heaven, there was no political party, or royalty, and certainly no family or tribe to back him up. His people – the Arabs, immersed in idol-worship and fetishism were not by any means a docile people, they were no easy

meat. They were a very volatile people, given to internecine and fratricidal wars: subject to **“all kinds of fierce sincerities”** (Carlyle). One man, single-handed, to wean such a people from barbarism required nothing short of a miracle. A miracle did happen. God alone could have made Islam and Muhammad (PBUH) to triumph through with flimsy, gossamer support. God fulfilling His promise:

وَرَفَعْنَا لَكَ ذِكْرَكَ

And raised high for you your repute.

Surah ash-Sharh (Holy Qur'an 94:4)

CHAPTER THREE

FASTEST GROWING RELIGION TODAY

THE SWORD OF THE INTELLECT

The enemy, the sceptic, the missionary and their passive camp followers will not stop bleating that “Islam was spread at the point of the sword!” but they will not venture to answer our question - - “WHO BRIBED CARLYLE?!” In 1840 when Carlyle defended Muhammad (PBUH) and refuted the allegation about the sword, there was nobody around to bribe. The whole Muslim was in the gutters. The countries of Islam were all under subjugation by the Christians, except for a few like – Persia, Afghanistan and Turkey who were only nominally independent. There were no riches to flaunt and no petro-dollars to bribe with!

That was yesterday and many yesterdays ago, but what about today, in modern times? It is claimed from the chart on Figure 3 on page 125 “Islam is the fastest growing religion in the world”. The overall increase of all the sects and denominations of Christianity was a staggering 138 percent with the incredible increase of Islam by 235 percent in the same period of time of half-a-century. It is further affirmed that in Britain and the United States of America, Islam is the fastest growing faith. It is said that in Britain **“There are more Muslims than Methodists in the country”**. You have a right to ask, “What sword?” The answer is, **“THE SWORD INDEED!”** (Thomas Carlyle)¹¹¹ **It is the sword of the intellect!** It is the fulfilment of yet another prophecy; –

¹¹¹ See full quote on page 122, No. 7.

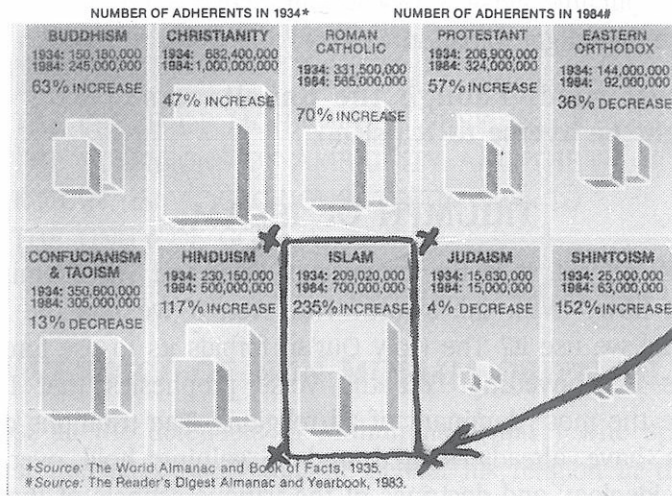
A CRUCIAL HALF CENTURY OF *Islam* RELIGION

by Keith W. Stump

We highlight the most significant developments.

235%

WORLD'S MAJOR RELIGIONS 1934/1984



The PLAIN TRUTH

Figure 3 Reproduction of a Chart from The Plain Truth

هُوَ الَّذِي أَرْسَلَ رَسُولَهُ بِالْهُدَىٰ

It is He who sent His Messenger with guidance

وَدِينِ الْحَقِّ

and the religion of truth

لِيُظْهِرَهُ عَلَى الدِّينِ كُلِّهِ

to manifest it over all religion.

وَكَفَىٰ بِاللَّهِ شَهِيدَ

And sufficient is Allah as Witness.

Surah al-Fath (Holy Qur'an 48:28)

The destiny of Islam is spelt out here in the clearest terms. Islam is to master, overcome and supersede every other faith –

That He (God Almighty) **make it** (Islam) **prevail over all religions...**

In Arabic the word is **Deen**¹¹² (literally meaning “Way of Life”), to supersede all, whether it be Hinduism, Buddhism, Christianity,¹¹³ Judaism, Communism or any other “**ism**”. This is the destiny of Allah’s **Deen**.

The same Qur’anic Verse is repeated in chapter 61 verse 9 which ends with slight variation –

*(Never mind) **Though the unbelievers might be averse to it** (Islam).*

TRIUMPH OF ISLAM

Islam will prevail. It is the promise of God, and His promise is true. But how? With the sword? Not even if we had the laser gun! Could we use it? The Holy Qur’an forbids us to use force as a means of converting! Yet the verse prophesies that Islam would be the most dominant of all religions. The triumphs of its doctrines of the various schools of thought in the world. Though not in the name of Islam, but in the name of reformation and amendments, the doctrines of Islam are being fastly grafted into the

¹¹² Usually translated as Religion, which literally Islam is not.

¹¹³ In the time of Thomas Carlyle this was the term applied to Christianity.

various religious orders. Many things which are exclusively Islamic and which were formerly unknown, of which were being opposed before with tooth and nail by the other creeds, are now part of their beliefs.

The Brotherhood of man

The abolition of the caste system and untouchability

The right of women to inherit

Opening the places of worship to all

Prohibition of all intoxicants

The true concept of the Unity of God

etc., etc.

Just one word on the last subject above, before we proceed further. Ask any theist, polytheist,¹¹⁴ pantheist,¹¹⁵ or trinitarian: how many Gods he believes in? He will shudder to say anything than ONE! This is the EFFECT of the strict monotheism of Islam.

“The creed of Mohammed is free from suspicion or ambiguity; and the Koran is a glorious testimony to the unity of God.”

Gibbon in his **“Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire”**

VERDICT OF NON-ISLAM ORIENTALS

Almost all the defenders of Muhammad (PBUH) who spoke out against the false theory that he spread his religion at the point of the sword, were Westerners. Let us now hear what some non-Muslim Easterners have to say on the subject:

8.

- (a) “The more I study the more I discover that the strength of Islam does not lie in the sword.”

Mahatma Gandhi – the father of modern India, in
“Young India”

- (b) “They (*Muhammad’s critics*) see fire instead of light,

114 **Polytheist:** One who believes in many gods.

115 **Pantheist:** The one believes that everything is god. Of course the **“trinitarian”**, you already know.

ugliness instead of beauty and evil instead of good. They distort and present every good quality as a great vice. It reflects their own depravity... The critics are blind. They cannot see that the only 'sword' Muhammad wielded was the sword of Mercy, Compassion, Friendship, and Forgiveness – the sword that conquers enemies and purifies their hearts. His sword was sharper than the sword of steel.”

Pandit Gyanandra Dev Sharma Shastri, at a meeting in Gorakhpur (India) 1928

- (c) “He preferred migration to fighting his own people, but when oppression went beyond the pale of tolerance, he took up his sword in self-defense. Those who believe religion can be spread by force are fools who know neither the ways of religion nor the ways of the world. They are proud of this belief because they are a long, long way away from the truth.”

A Sikh journalist in “**Nawan Hindustan**,”
Delhi, 17 November 1947

It was Rudyard Kipling who said, “**East is East and West is West, never the twain shall meet!**” He was wrong! In the defence of Muhammad (PBUH), **all**, who are not blinded by prejudice will converge.

THREE OTHER STANDARDS

Fourteen years after Thomas Carlyle had delivered his lecture on his **Hero Prophet**, a Frenchman by the name of Lamartine wrote the history of the Turks. Incidentally, the Turks being Muslims, Lamartine touched on some aspects of Islam and its founder. Like our Jules Masserman (see page 105) of current times, who had conceived three objective standards for discovering greatness of leadership; Lamartine had over a century ago thought of **three** other objective standards for conferring **GREATNESS**. We must give credit to the westerner for this type of insight. Lamartine opines:

9. “**If greatness of purpose, smallness of means, and astonishing results**¹¹⁶ are the three criteria of a human

116 The full quotation from Lamartine’s book will be found in Appendix “B” on page 146.

genius, who could dare compare any great man in history with Muhammad?” (*Lamartine ends his lengthy segment of literary masterpiece with the words*):.. “Philosopher, orator, apostle, legislator, warrior, conqueror of ideas, restorer of rational dogmas, of a cult without images; the founder of twenty terrestrial empires and of one spiritual empire, that is Muhammad. **As regards all standards by which human greatness may be measured, we may well ask, is there any man greater than he?**”

Lamartine, “*Historie de la Turquie*,” Paris 1854

The answer to his question, **“Is there any man greater than he?”** is reposed in the question itself. By implication he is saying.. “THERE IS NO MAN GREATER THAN MUHAMMAD. MUHAMMAD IS THE GREATEST MAN THAT EVER LIVED!”

وَرَفَعْنَا لَكَ ذِكْرَكَ

And raised high for you your repute.

Surah ash-Sharh (*Holy Qur'an 94:4*)

MOST CERTAINLY THOU HAST, O, MY LORD!

Before we absolve Lamartine of any favouritism, partiality, or of the charge of being bribed, we will scrutinize his three standards, and whether they can be justified in the case of Muhammad (PBUH).

1. GREATNESS OF PURPOSE

History of the time will tell you that it was the darkest period in the history of mankind when Muhammad (PBUH) was commanded to declare his mission. The need was for the raising of prophets in every corner of the world, or the sending of one Master Messenger for the whole of mankind, to deliver them from falsehood, superstition, selfishness, polytheism, wrong and oppression. It was to be the reclamation of the whole of humanity. And God Almighty in His wisdom chose His prophet from the backwaters of Arabia as His universal Messenger. Thus He records in His Noble Book

وَمَا أَرْسَلْنَاكَ إِلَّا رَحْمَةً لِّلْعَالَمِينَ

And We have not sent you, (O Muhammad), except as a mercy to the worlds.

Surah al-Anbiyaa (Holy Qur'an 21:107)

“There is no question now of race or nation, of a “chosen people” or the “seed of Abraham”; or the “seed of David”; or of Hindu Arya Varta; of Jew or Gentile. Arab or ‘Ajam (Persian), Turk or Tajik, European or Asiatic, White or Coloured; Aryan, Semitic, Mongolian, or African; or American, Australian, or Polynesian. To all men and creatures who have any spiritual responsibility, the principles universally apply.”

Abdullah Yusuf Ali¹¹⁷

JESUS (PBUH) DISCRIMINATES

Muhammad's (PBUH) immediate predecessor advised his disciples, **“Give not that which is holy unto the dogs”** (meaning non-Jews), **“Neither cast ye your pearls before swine”** (meaning non-Jews, Matthew 7:6). The Gospel writers are unanimous in recording that Christ lived by the precepts which he preached. In his lifetime he did not preach to a single non-Jew. In fact he spurned a gentile woman who sought his spiritual blessings (**“the woman was a Greek”** Mark 7:26). Then during the “passover” season in Jerusalem when the master with his disciples had congregated for the occasion, certain Greeks hearing of his reputation sought an audience with him for spiritual enlightenment, but Jesus (PBUH) gave them the “cold shoulder”¹¹⁸ as narrated by St. John:

*And there were certain Greeks
among them that came up to
worship at the feast:
The same came therefore to Philip
...and desired him saying, Sir, we
would see Jesus.
Philip cometh and telleth Andrew:*

117 Get your copy now of Yusuf Ali's, English translation and commentary, with over 6000 annotations. Obtain a copy for your non-Muslim friend, also.

118 Means: a deliberately unkind or unfriendly treatment; a slight; a snub.

and again Andrew and Philip tell Jesus

(Holy Bible) John 12:20-22

SELF - GLORIFICATION

The verses that follow do not even record the courtesy of **“Yea, yea;”** or **“Nay, nay;”** (Yes, yes or no, no of Matthew 5:37). They continue with his own praise –

And Jesus answered them** (Andrew and Philip), **saying, The hour is come, that the son of man** (referring to himself) **should be glorified.

(Holy Bible) John 12:23

HIGHEST STANDARDS

Muhammad (PBUH) could never afford any such latitudes. Remember, how the Almighty reminded him of the highest etiquette required from him. Even the thought of being ruffled by the untimely intrusion of a blind man, was not accepted from him (see page 115 **“He frowned”**). As a universal Messenger, God set for him the most lofty standards:

وَإِنَّكَ لَعَلَىٰ خُلُقٍ عَظِيمٍ

And indeed, you are of a great moral character.

Surah al-Qalam (Holy Qur'an 68:4)

And his diocese, his field of mission? The whole of mankind!

وَمَا أَرْسَلْنَاكَ إِلَّا رَحْمَةً لِّلْعَالَمِينَ

And We have not sent you, (O Muhammad), except as a mercy to the worlds.

Surah al-Anbiyaa (Holy Qur'an 21:107)

UNIVERSAL MESSENGER

These are not mere platitudes; beautiful sentiments bereft of action. Muhammad (PBUH) practised what he preached. Among his first **Sahabas** (companions) and converts, beside the Arab can be counted **Bilal** the Abyssinian, **Salman** the Persian and **Abdullah Bin-Salaam** the Jew. The sceptics may say that his outreach was simply incidental but what can they say about the historical fact that before his demise, he sent out five epistles, one to each of the five surrounding countries, inviting them to accept the religion of Islam.

1. The Emperor of Persia
2. The King of Egypt
3. The Negus of Abyssinia
4. The Emperor Heraclius at Constantinople, and
5. The King of Yemen

Thus he set the example for the fulfilment of his impelling mission, his **“greatness of purpose”**, the reclamation of the whole of humanity into the Master’s fold. Is there another example of such universality in another religion? Muhammad (PBUH) was not out to set or to break any records. He was simply carrying out the trust that was reposed in him by the Lord of Creation!

2. SMALLNESS OF MEANS

Muhammad (PBUH) was born with no silver spoon in his mouth. His life begins with infinitesimal support. His father has died before he was born. His mother dies by the time he was six years old. He was doubly-orphaned at this tender age, his grandfather Abdul-Muttalib takes charge of the charge of the child, but within three years he also died. As soon as he was able, he began to look after his uncle Abu Talib’s sheep and goats for his keep. Contrast this poor, doubly-orphaned Arab child with some of the great religious personalities that preceded him, and you must marvel at what Destiny had in store for him!

Abraham (PBUH) the spiritual father of Moses, Jesus and Muhammad (may the Peace of God be upon Them All), was the son of a very successful businessman of his time. Moses (PBUH) was reared in the house of Pharaoh. Jesus (PBUH) though described as **“a carpenter and the son of a carpenter”**, was well endowed with learning as well as material

means. Peter, Philip, Andrew, etc. all downed tools and followed him to be at his beck and call, not because he had any halo¹¹⁹ on his head; there was no such thing, but because of his affluent attire and princely bearing. He could command mansions in Jerusalem for himself and his disciples even during the height of the festive season; and have sumptuous suppers arranged; and you could hear him reproach the materialistic Jews –

And when they found him (Jesus) on the other side of the sea, they said to him, “Rabbi, when did you come here?”

Jesus answered them and said, “most assuredly, I say to you, you seek me, not because you saw the signs,¹²⁰ but because you ate of the loaves and were filled.

(Holy Bible) John 6:25-26

NOTHING TO OFFER

Muhammad (PBUH) had no bread nor meat to offer; no sugar plums of any kind, in this world or the next! The only thing he could offer his bedraggled, poor shepherd people was trial and tribulations and the strait-jacketing of their lives here on earth and the good pleasures of God in the Hereafter. The life of the Prophet was an open book before them. He had shown them as to what he was; the nobility of his character, his integrity of purpose, his earnestness and fiery enthusiasm for the truth he had come to preach revealed the hero; and they followed him. Mr. Stanley Lane Poole’s estimate of our hero is so beautiful and yet so truthful that I cannot resist the temptation of quoting it here:

“He was an enthusiast in that noblest sense when enthusiasm becomes the salt of the earth, the one thing that keeps men from rotting whilst they live.

Enthusiasm is often used despitefully, because it is joined to an unworthy cause, or falls upon barren ground and bears no fruit. So was it not with Mohammed. He was an enthusiast when enthusiasm was the one thing needed to set the world aflame, and his enthusiasm was noble for a noble cause.

119 **Halo:** An imaginary luminous ring or disc surrounding the head of saintly men and women in religious paintings.

120 The veracity of the Messiah’s message and his mission.

He was one of those happy few who have attained the supreme joy of making one great truth their very life-spring

He was the messenger of the one God; and never to his life's end did he forget who he was, or the message which was the marrow of his being. He brought his tidings to his people with a grand dignity sprung from the consciousness of his high office, together with a most sweet humility whose roots lay in the knowledge of his own weakness."

Lane-Poole, Stanley

"The speeches & table-talk of the Prophet Mohammad", London 1882, p.

It may easily be conceded that Muhammad (PBUH) was blessed with the flimsiest of human resources. In fact the odds were loaded against him. But what about his fortune towards the end of his earthly sojourn? He was the overlord of the whole of Arabia! What about the endless means at his disposal then? We will allow a Christian missionary to answer that –

"HE WAS CAESAR AND POPE IN ONE; BUT HE WAS POPE WITHOUT THE POPE'S PRETENSIONS, AND CAESAR WITHOUT THE LEGIONS OF CAESAR: WITHOUT A STANDING ARMY, WITHOUT A BODYGUARD, WITHOUT A PALACE, WITHOUT A FIXED REVENUE; IF EVER ANY MAN HAD THE RIGHT TO SAY THAT HE RULED BY THE RIGHT DIVINE, IT WAS MOHAMMAD, FOR HE HAD ALL THE POWERS WITHOUT ITS INSTRUMENTS AND WITHOUT ITS SUPPORTS."

R. Bosworth Smith

"Mohammad and Mohammadanism", London 1874, p. 92

HIS HANDICAPS

His "weakness" was his strength. The very fact that he had no material means of support made him to put his entire trust in God, and God the Merciful did not forsake him. His success was all the more staggering. May not the Muslims justly say, the entire work of God? **And Muhammad (PBUH) His instrument?**

3. OUTSTANDING RESULTS

In the words of Thomas Carlyle – **“One man against all men”**,¹²¹ to a hundred and twenty four thousand at the Farewell Pilgrimage alone. How many were left behind of men, women and children, believers all?

On the 12th of Rabi 1., in the 11th year after the *Hijra*,¹²² approximating to the 8th of June 632 of the Christian Era, whilst praying earnestly in whisper, the spirit of the great Prophet took flight to the **“blessed companionship on high”** (*Ibn Hisham*).

Hazrat Omar (May Allah be pleased with him), on receiving the sad news of the demise of the Holy Prophet, lost his bearings. He was so shocked that he blurted out “If anyone says that Muhammad is dead, I will chop off his head!” Hazrat Abu Bakar as-Siddiq presently verified that the Master had indeed departed from this world; and coming out from the Prophet’s apartment announced to the gathering throng outside, that **“Muhammad had indeed passed away. Those that worshipped Muhammad,”** he said, **“Let them know that Muhammad is dead, but those who worship Allah, let them know that Allah lives forever!”**

This brought Omar al-Farooq (R.A.) back to his senses. Could this man who was to become the second great *Khaleefah* of Islam at this moment imagine that fourteen hundred years later there would be a **thousand million** followers of Muhammad (PBUH) at one time? Could he have visualized that the religion of the Prophet would be the fastest growing religion in the world?

Christianity had a 600-year start on Islam. Numerically the Christians claim to outnumber the followers of any other faith; this is true but let us look at the picture in its true perspective –

**THERE ARE MORE PROFESSING CHRISTIANS
IN THE WORLD THAN PROFESSING MUSLIMS,
BUT THERE ARE MORE PRACTISING MUSLIMS
IN THE WORLD THAN PRACTISING CHRISTIANS.**

(Emphasis added)

R.V.C Bodley (the American) in **“The Messenger: The Life of Mohammed”** U.S.A. 1969

121 See full quotation by Thomas Carlyle on page 122.

122 *Hijra*: literally means Migration.

I understand from the above that Mr. Bodley is trying to tell us that there are people in the world who, when filling their census forms, will tick off the term **Christian** under “Religion”. It is not necessarily that they believe in the dogmas of the Christianity. They could actually be atheists or **bush-Baptists**,¹²³ as opposed to being a Jew or Hindu or Muslim; coming from a Christian background they would for the purpose of convenience label themselves “**Christian**”. From that point of view, and from the point of view that a person who practices what he believes, there would be more Muslims in the world than Christians.

Chronologically, Islam is six hundred years behind Christianity, but amazingly it is a very close second, and is catching up fast – the fastest growing religion today. **“One Billion”** The figure is outstanding and the sincerity and practice of the Believers astonishing!

Taking into account his own three objective standards: (a) **“greatness of purpose”**; (b) **“smallness of means”**; and (c) **“outstanding results”**; does Lamartine dare to produce another candidate greater than Muhammad (PBUH)? He further awes his readers with the multifarious roles of Muhammad (PBUH) in which he excelled, i.e. **“Philosopher, Orator, Apostle, Legislator, Warrior, Conqueror of Ideas, the Restorer of Rational Beliefs, of a Cult without Images, the Founder of twenty Terrestrial Empires and of one Spiritual Empire, that is Muhammad. As regards ALL standards (I repeat “ALL”) by which Human Greatness may be measured, we may well ask, “IS THERE ANY MAN GREATER THAN HE?”** (Emphasis added).

No! Muhammad (PBUH) was the greatest man that ever lived! According to Lamartine the French historian. And God Almighty questions –

وَرَفَعْنَا لَكَ ذِكْرَكَ

And raised high for you your repute.

Surah ash-Sharh (Holy Qur'an 94:4)

MOST ASSUREDLY THOU HAST, O MY LORD!

123 **“bush-Baptist”**: There are forty different Baptist Churches in the United States of America. But bush-Baptists are people with strong religious feelings yet will not go to any Church; and will not affiliate with any sect or denomination.

THE QUALITY OF MERCY

The Christian propagandists make the wild boast that there is nothing in the history of mankind to compare with the merciful and forgiving cry of Jesus (PBUH) on the cross...

***“Father, forgive them, for they know
not what they do.”***

(Holy Bible) Luke 23:34

Amazing as it may sound, of the four writers of the Canonical Gospel, only St. Luke was inspired by the Holy Ghost (?) to pen these words. The other three – Matthew, Mark and John never heard these words or they felt them to be too insipid or not important enough for recording. St. Luke was not even one of the twelve disciples selected by Jesus (PBUH). According to the revisers of the Revised Standard Version (RSV) of the Bible, these words are not in the most ancient manuscripts which by implication means that they are an interpolation.

In the **“The New King James”**, (copyrighted by the Thomas Nelson Publishers in 1984), we are told that these words are **“not in the original text”** of the Greek manuscripts of St. Luke. In other words they have been fabricated by some pious gentleman. Although the quotation is unauthentic, we will still entertain it because it demonstrates great piety of loving one’s enemies and of unsurpassed forgiveness as preached by the Master himself.

For forgiveness to be of any worth, the forgiver must be in a position to forgive. If the victim of injustice is still in the clutches of his enemies; in that helpless position and he would cry out, “I FORGIVE YOU!” it would be meaningless. But if the aggrieved party had turned the tables on his enemies and was in a position of taking revenge or exact retribution, and yet say “I forgive you!”, only then would it mean something!

MUHAMMAD’S (PBUH) CLEMENCY

Contrast the alleged forgiveness from the “cross” with the historical bloodless conquest of Makkah by Muhammad (PBUH) at the head of ten

thousand “saints”¹²⁴ (his companions).

“The city which had treated him so cruelly, driven him and his faithful band out for refuge amongst strangers, which has sworn his life and the lives of his devoted disciples lay at his feet. His old persecutors relentless and ruthless who had disgraced humanity by inflicting cruel outrages upon inoffensive men and women and even upon the lifeless dead were now completely at his mercy. But in the hour of his triumph, every evil suffered was forgotten, every injury inflicted was forgiven, and a general amnesty was extended to the population of Makkah....”

Sayed Amir Ali in *“The Spirit of Islam”*

Calling before him the populace of the vanquished city, he addressed them with **“What do you expect at my hands today?”** His people had known him too well, even from his childhood so they replied, ‘Mercy, O generous brother and nephew!’ Tears came into the eyes of the Prophet, and he said, **“I will not speak to you as Joseph spoke unto his brethren, I will not reproach you today; go you are free!”**

And now a scene was enacted of which there is really no parallel in the history of the world. Hosts upon hosts came forward and adopted the religion of Islam. God almighty testifies as to the lofty and exalted behaviour of His Messenger –

لَقَدْ كَانَ لَكُمْ فِي رَسُولِ اللَّهِ أُسْوَةٌ حَسَنَةٌ

There has certainly been for you in the Messenger of Allah an excellent pattern

Surah al-Ahzab (*Holy Qur'an* 33:21)

How well has Lamartine¹²⁵ unknowingly echoed these sentiments –

“As regards **ALL STANDARDS** by which human greatness may be measured, we may well ask, is there any man greater than he?”

124 A fulfilment of another prophecy in Muhammad (PBUH). **“...He came from mount Paran** (that is in Arabia) **and he came with ten thousand saints...**” Deuteronomy 33:2.

125 Full quotation of Lamartine will be found in Appendix “B” on page 146.

In reply, we too can say once more, **“No! There is no man greater than Muhammad (PBUH). Muhammad (PBUH) was the greatest man that ever lived!”**

So far, our hero has earned the unsolicited and ungrudging tributes from many non-Muslims of different religious persuasions and from varying intellectual fields of endeavour. But all this still remains incomplete without the Master’s verdict; Muhammad’s (PBUH) predecessor – Jesus Christ (PBUH). We will now apply his own standard for evaluating greatness.

JOHN THE BAPTIST

John the Baptist,¹²⁶ known throughout the Muslim world as Hazrat **Yahya** alaihis-salam (Peace be upon Him) was, a contemporary prophet of the Messiah. They were also cousins. Here is what the Master has to say of him:

Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist:

(Holy Bible) Matthew 11:11

Every son of man is **“born of women”**. By this very fact John the Baptist is greater than Moses, David, Solomon, Abraham or Isaiah; none of the Israelite prophets excluded. What gives John this ascendancy over every other prophet? It could not be any miracle, because the Bible records none to his credit. It could not be his teachings, because he brought no new laws or regulations. Then what makes him the greatest? Simply because he was the herald, a precursor, a harbinger of the happy news of the coming of the Messiah. This is what made John the greatest, but Jesus (PBUH) claims that he himself was even greater than the greatest (i.e. John). Why?

But I have greater witness than that of John I (the

126 **“JOHN”** not to be confused with John the disciple of Jesus (PBUH). A very common name among the Jews and Arabs, even today like Tarik Aziz the current Iraqi Minister of Foreign Affairs. Real name Tarik **Hanna** Aziz; **“Hanna”** short for Yuhanna meaning John. No one in the non-Arab Muslim world knowing that our friend is a Christian Marxist.

Baptist): For The Works which the Father hath given me to finish: (*Emphasis added*)

(*Holy Bible*) John 5:36

It is the “**witness**,” the commission which God Almighty had entrusted him with, which makes Jesus (PBUH) greater than even John. Applying these very standards as enunciated by the Master, we find that –

1. John the Baptist was the greatest of all the Israelite prophets, because he heralded the mighty Messiah (Jesus PBUH).

Similarly Jesus (PBUH) would be greater than even John because he heralded “**The Spirit of Truth, the Comforter**”, who was to guide mankind into **all Truth** (of the Gospel of St. John, chapter 16).

The diocese, the mission of Jesus (PBUH), or “**the works which God had given him to accomplish**”, was limited to the Lost Sheep of the House of Israel (Matthew 15:24), whereas the mission of Muhammad (PBUH) was universal. He had been told –

وَمَا أَرْسَلْنَاكَ إِلَّا رَحْمَةً لِّلْعَالَمِينَ

And We have not sent you, (O Muhammad), except as a mercy to the worlds.

Surah al-Anbiyaa (*Holy Qur'an* 21:107)

In keeping with his grand commission, Muhammad (PBUH) consistently delivered his Message to one and all who could hear, irrespective of race, class or creed, He welcomed them all in the religion of God, without any discrimination. He had no thought of dividing the creatures of God into “**dogs and pigs**” (*Matthew* 7:6) or into “**sheep and goats**” (*Matthew* 25:32). He was the Messenger of the One True God, who was sent as a Mercy unto all mankind, nay unto the whole universe (H.Q. 21:107 above). And, he never forgot this mission even right up to his dying day.

Towards the end of his earthly sojourn, when he could look back to a hectic and dangerous past, now crowned with success; he now feels that he could sit back and enjoy the fruits of his toil; he dreams of a life free from turmoil and full satisfaction and relaxation. Not for him! There is no time to rest or relax. There is work still to be done. God Almighty reminds him-

وَمَا أَرْسَلْنَاكَ إِلَّا كَافَّةً لِّلنَّاسِ

And We have not sent you except comprehensively to mankind

بَشِيرًا وَنَذِيرًا

as a bringer of good tidings and as a warner.

وَلَكِنَّ أَكْثَرَ النَّاسِ لَا يَعْلَمُونَ

But most of the people do not know.

Surah Saba (Holy Qur'an 34:28)¹²⁷

How was he to respond to this new challenge in his ripening old age? There was no electronic gadgets of modern communication methods at his disposal; there were no telex or fax machines which he could exploit. What could he do? Being an **Ummiy** (unlettered), he called the scribes and dictated five letters, one each to the Emperor at Constantinople, the King of Egypt, the Negus of Abyssinia, the King of Yemen and to the Emperor in Persia. He called forth five **Sahabaa** (his holy companions) with five Arab steeds and set them out in five different directions inviting the nations of the world to the universal religion of God.

I had the good fortune of seeing one of those holy epistles in the Topkapi Museum in Istanbul (old Constantinople) Turkey. That letter is collecting dust! Materially the Turks have preserved the parchment. But the Message is collecting dust, as I have said.

The letter begins, **“From Muhammad the Messenger of God, the Heraclius the Emperor at Constantinople: Accept Islam and be benefited.”**

Followed by his exhortation from the Book of God –

قُلْ يَٰٓأَهْلَ ٱلْكِتَٰبِ

Say, “O People of the Scripture,”¹²⁸

127 This is your last chance to memorize the text and the translation of this verse. If you are lackadaisical, we can only mourn your loss.

128 **“People of the Scripture”**, stands for the Jews and the Christians. You will never have it so good for learning Allah’s **Kalaam**. Don’t ignore this opportunity. Memorize the verses as they occur.

تَعَالَوْا إِلَى كَلِمَةٍ سَوَاءٍ بَيْنَنَا وَبَيْنَكُمْ

come to a word that is equitable between us and you –

أَلَّا نَعْبُدَ إِلَّا اللَّهَ

that we will not worship except Allah

وَلَا نُشْرِكَ بِهِ شَيْئًا

and not associate anything with Him

وَلَا يَتَّخِذَ بَعْضُنَا بَعْضًا

and not take one another

أَرْبَابًا مِّن دُونِ اللَّهِ

as lords instead of Allah.”

فَإِنْ تَوَلَّوْا فَقُولُوا اشْهَدُوا بِأَنَّا مُسْلِمُونَ

But if they turn away, then say, “Bear witness that we are Muslims (submitting to Him).”

Surah Ali 'Imran (Holy Qur'an 3:64)

After the above Qur'anic insertion in the letter, it is concluded with felicitation in the Prophet's own words, ending with a seal on which is inscribed – **“There is no other object of worship but Allah, and Muhammad is His Messenger.”**

The letter in Turkey arouses our curiosity; and interest with regards to its preservation, but the preservation itself is lost upon the sightseer. The same Qur'anic Message is in almost every Muslim home; being read and re-read a thousand times over without the reader being moved to deliver its Message to the addressees!

Glance once more at the above verse. It is addressed to the **“ahle-Kitaab”**, – the People of the Book, the Jews and the Christians. But, for over a thousand years we have utterly ignored that great directive at our own peril. We are sitting on that Message like a cobra on a pile of wealth, keeping the rightful heirs at bay. This utter neglect will continue to inflict untold suffering to the **Ummah** for generations to come.

After over fourteen hundred years of our reading, and chanting the Qur'an in every rhythmic style, we still hear this poignant cry:

وَلَكِنَّ أَكْثَرَ النَّاسِ لَا يَعْلَمُونَ

*But most of the people still do not know.*¹²⁹

Surah Saba (Holy Qur'an 34:28)

This is the concluding phrase of the verse revealed fourteen hundred years ago. It was the factual situation of the then religious world. The question which must be asked is: "Is it any different today?" **Not at all!** There are today more **Mushriks** in the world than there are believers in the One True God.

Is there any hope of changing this situation? Allah commanded His Prophet then as He is commanding us now through the first seven verses of Surah **Muddaththir** (Chapter 74).

يَا أَيُّهَا الْمُدَّثِّرُ

1. *O you who covers himself (with a garment),*

"As usual, there is these wonderful early mystical verses (including the one that follow), a triple thread of thought:

- (a) A particular occasion or person is referred to;
- (b) A general spiritual lesson is taught, and
- (c) A more profound mystical reverie is suggested.

As to (a), the Prophet was now past the stage of personal contemplation. Wearing his mantle; he was now to go forth and boldly deliver his Message and publicly proclaim Allah the One True God. His heart had always purified, but now all his outward doings must be dedicated to God, and conventional respect for ancestral customs or worship must be thrown aside. The work of his Messengership was the most generous that could flow from his personality, but no reward or appreciation was to be expected from his people, but quite contrary; there would be much call on his patience, but his contentment would arise from the good pleasure of God.

As to (b), similar stages arise in a minor degree in the life of every good

¹²⁹ For the full context of this verse, see page 141.

man, for which the Prophet's life is to be a universal pattern.

As to (c), the **Sufis** understand, by the mantle and outward wrappings, the circumstances of our phenomenal existence, which are necessary to our physical comfort up to a certain stage; but we soon outgrow them, and our inner nature should then boldly proclaim itself; not that it brings any credit or reward with men; the very hope of expectation of such would be inconsistent with our higher nature, which should bear all checks and rejoice in the favour of God."

قُمْ فَأَنْذِرْ

2. *Arise and warn*

وَرَبَّكَ فَكَبِّرْ

3. *And your Lord glorify*

وَثِيَابَكَ فَطَهِّرْ

4. *And your clothing purify*

وَالرُّجْزَ فَاهْجُرْ

5. *And uncleanness avoid (a)*

"(a) **Rujz** or **Rijz** means abomination and is usually understood to mean idolatry. It is even possible that there was an idol called **Rujz**. But these days it has a wider significance as including a mental state opposed to true worship, a state of doubt or indecision."

وَلَا تَمْنُنْ تَسْتَكْثِرُ

6. *And do not confer favor to acquire more (b)*

"(b) The legal and commercial formula is that you give in order to receive what is worth **to you** a little more than you give, but expect nothing from the receiver. You serve God and God's creatures."

وَلِرَبِّكَ فَاصْبِرْ

7. *But for your Lord be patient.* (c)¹³⁰

(*Surah Muddaththir*) Holy Qur'an 74:1-7

“(c) Our zeal for God’s Cause itself requires that we should not be impatient, and that we should show constancy in our efforts for His Cause. For we have faith, and we know that He is All-Good, All-Wise, and All-Powerful, and everything will ultimately be right.”

Abdullah Yusuf Ali¹³¹

To the Arabs in general and to our Holy Prophet in particular “**a mantle**” was the protective covering used for protection against the sun, wind and sand. He was so to say girding himself, rolling up his sleeves, to accomplish his task. Although most of the Muslims in the world do not cover themselves with shawls (mantles), in their day to day living, they carry a host of mantles in the way of inferiority complexes.

What can we do to make God's light shine forth through the darkness around us? We must first let it shine in our own true selves!

With that light in the niche of our inmost hearts, we can walk with steps firm and sure, we can humbly visit the comfortless and guide their steps.

Not we, but the Light will guide! Oh!

The joy of being found worthy to bear the torch, and to say to our brethren, “I too was in darkness comfortless, and behold, I have found comfort and joy in the grace divine.”

Thus should we pay the dues of brotherhood by walking humbly, side by side, in the ways of the Lord, with mutual aid and comfort and heartfelt prayer, backed by action,

130 Remember to memorize Allah’s **Kalaam** with its meaning!

131 The English translation was from Sahih International and the commentaries was by Abdullah Yusuf Ali.

that God's good purpose may be accomplished in us all together.

Abdullah Yusuf Ali

وَلَكِنَّ أَكْثَرَ النَّاسِ لَا يَعْلَمُونَ

But most of the people do not know.

(*Surah Yusuf*) Holy Qur'an 12:68

Thus spake, inspired our Holy Prophet,
Muhammad (PBUH) on whom we invoke
God's blessings forever and ever –

AAMEEN!

APPENDIX “A”

*He attained the height of eminence by his perfection;
He dispelled the darkness (of the world) by his grace;
Excellent were all his qualities;
Pray for blessings on him and his descendants.*

Sheikh Sa'di Sheeraazi (RA)

APPENDIX “B”

Muhammad (PBUH) The Greatest

“If greatness of purpose, smallness of means and astounding results are the three criteria of human genius, who could dare to compare any great man in modern history with Muhammad?”

The most famous men created arms, laws and empires only. They founded, if anything at all, no more than material powers which often crumbled away before their eyes. This man Muhammad moved not only armies, legislations, empires, peoples and dynasties, but millions of men; and more than that the altars, the gods, the religions, the ideas, the beliefs and the souls.

On the basis of a Book, every letter of which has become law, he

created a spiritual nationality which blended together peoples of every tongue and of every race...

The idea of the unity of God, proclaimed amidst the exhaustion of fabulous theologies, was in itself such a miracle that upon its utterance from his lips it destroyed all the ancient superstitions...

His endless prayers, his mystic conversations with God, his death and his triumph after death: all these attest not to an imposture but to a firm conviction which gave him the power to restore a dogma. This dogma was twofold, **the unity of God and the immateriality of God**; the former telling what God is, that latter telling what God is not...

“...Philosopher, orator, apostle, legislator, warrior, conqueror of ideas, restorer of rational dogmas, of a cult without images, the founder of twenty terrestrial empires and of one spiritual empire that is Muhammad. As regards all standards by which human greatness may be measured, we may well ask, is there any man greater than he?

(Lamartine, Histoire de la Turquie, Paris 1854, Vol II pp 276-277)

APPENDIX “C”

JULES MASSERMAN, U.S psychoanalyst:

TIME, JULY 15, 1974

Leaders must fulfil three functions – – – provide for the well-being of the led, provide a social organization in which people feel relatively secure, and provide them with one set of beliefs. People like Pasteur and Salk are leaders in the first sense.

People like Gandhi and Confucius, on one hand, and Alexander, Caesar and Hitler on the other, are leaders in the second and perhaps the third sense. Jesus and Buddha belong in the third category alone. **PERHAPS THE GREATEST LEADER OF ALL TIME WAS MOHAMMED, WHO COMBINED ALL THREE FUNCTIONS.** To a lesser degree Moses did the same. (Emphasis added)

APPENDIX “D”

*Fidelity is said to be a human attribute,
Which makes the modern gentleman distinguished
from the brute,
But that supreme fidelity, inborn in every hound,
Which is the mark of man's best friend,
In man, it's rarely found!*

A South African Poet

PART FOUR

AL-QUR'AN
THE MIRACLE OF
MIRACLES

CHAPTER ONE

A STANDING CHALLENGE

قُلْ لِّئِنْ أَجْتَمَعَتِ الْإِنْسُ وَالْجِنُّ

Say, "If mankind and the jinn¹³² gathered

عَلَى أَنْ يَأْتُوا بِمِثْلِ هَذَا الْقُرْآنِ

in order to produce the like of this Qur'an,

لَا يَأْتُونَ بِمِثْلِهِ

they could not produce the like of it,

وَلَوْ كَانَ بَعْضُهُمْ لِبَعْضٍ ظَهِيرًا

even if they were to each other assistants.¹³³

Surah al-Isra (Holy Qur'an 17:88)

132 **Jinn**: "I think, from a collation and study of the Qur'anic passages, that the meaning is simply a spirit, or an invisible hidden force." A. Yusuf Ali. For more details, refer to Abdullah Yusuf Ali's commentary where in his INDEX under "Jinns", he gives five Qur'anic references and as many annotations on the subject.

133 The proof of the Qur'an in its own beauty and nature, and the circumstances in which it was promulgated. **The doubters of the world are challenged to produce a Book like it and has produced none.** It is the only revealed Book whose text stands pure and uncorrupted today, after 1400 years!

WHAT IS A MIRACLE

I think it is necessary that we have a clear picture of what we mean by a miracle. Here are some definitions:-

“An event that appears so inexplicable by the law of nature, that it is held to be supernatural in origin or an act of God.”

“A person, thing or event that excites admiring awe.”

“An act beyond human power, an impossibility.”

It is logical that the greater the impossibility, greater the miracle. For example, should a person expire before our very eyes and is certified dead by a qualified medical man, yet later on a mystic or a saint commands the corpse to ‘arise’!, and to everybody’s astonishment the person gets up and walk away, we would label that as a miracle. But if the resurrection of the dead took place after the corpse had been in the mortuary for three days, then we would acclaim this as a greater miracle. And if the dead was made to arise from the grave, decades or centuries after the body has been decomposed and rotted away, then in that case we would label it the greatest miracle of them all!

A COMMON TRAIT

It has been a common trait of mankind since time immemorial that whenever a Guide from God appeared to redirect their steps into the Will and Plan of God; they demanded supernatural proofs from these men of God, instead of accepting the Messenger on its merit.

For example, when Jesus Christ (PBUH) began to preach to his people – “The Children of Israel” – to mend their ways and to refrain from mere legalistic formalism and imbibe the true spirit of the Laws and Commandments of God, his “people” demanded Miracles from him to prove his **bona fides**,¹³⁴ as recorded in the Christian Scriptures:

***Then certain of the Scribes and the Pharisees
Answered, saying Master, we would have a
SIGN (Miracle) from thee.
But he answered and said unto them, “An
evil and adulterous generation seeketh after***

134 **Bona fides** – his authenticity, his genuineness.

a SIGN (Miracle) and there shall no SIGN
(Miracle) be given to it, but the SIGN (Miracle)
of the Prophet Jonas:¹³⁵ *(Emphasis added)*

(Holy Bible) Matthew 12:8-39

Though on the face of it, Jesus (PBUH) refuses to pamper the Jews here, in fact, he did perform many miracles as we learn from the Gospel narratives.

The Holy Bible is full of supernatural events accredited to the Prophets from their Lord. In reality all those “**signs**” and “**wonders**” and “**miracle**” were acts of God, but since those miracles were worked through His human agents, we describe them as the Miracles of Prophets, i.e. Moses or Jesus (Peace be upon Them) by whose hands they were performed.

QUIRK CONTINUES

Some six hundred years after the birth of Jesus Christ (PBUH), Muhammad the Messenger of God (PBUH) was born in Makkah in Arabia. When he proclaimed his Mission at the age of forty, his fellow countrymen, the *MUSHRIKS*¹³⁶ of Makkah made an identical request for Miracles, as had the Jews, from their promised Messiah. Textbook style, it was as if the Arabs had taken a leaf from the Christian records. History has a habit of repeating itself!

وَقَالُوا لَوْلَا أُنزِلَ عَلَيْهِ آيَاتٌ مِّن رَّبِّهِ

But they say, “Why are not signs¹³⁷ sent down to him from his Lord?”

Surah al-‘Ankabut (*Holy Qur’an* 29:50)

SIGNS! WHAT SIGNS?

Miracles? cries he: What miracle would you have? Are not you yourselves there? God made **YOU**, ‘shaped you

135 What was the outcome of the “**only sign**” that Jesus (PBUH) was prepared to give? – “**What was the Sign of Jonah?**” from the IPCI which furnishes a detailed exposition.

136 **MUSHRIK** – pagans, idol worshippers, polytheists.

137 “**Signs**” The Arabic word used is ‘**AAYA**’ which literally means ‘signs’, and which is really more to the point. The Holy Qur’an does not mention the word ‘**MU’JAZAH**’ (miracle).

out of a little clay.' Ye were small once; a few years ago ye were not at all. Ye have beauty, strength, thoughts, 'ye have compassion on one another.' Old age comes on you, and grey hairs; your strength fades into feebleness; ye sink down, and again are not. **'YE HAVE COMPASSION ON ONE ANOTHER'**: this struck me much: Allah might have made you having no compassion on one another, — how had it been then! This is a great direct thought, a glance at first-hand into the very fact of things..."

"On Heroes and Hero-Worship and the Heroic in History" by Thomas Carlyle

"THIS STRUCK ME MUCH"

This, that — **"Ye have Compassion on one another,"** impressed Thomas Carlyle most from his perusal of an English translation. I presume, the verse that motivated this sentiment is:

1.

وَمِنْ ءَايَاتِهِ خَلْقَ السَّمَوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضِ وَاخْتِلَافَ أَلْسِنَتِكُمْ
وَالْوَلَدِكُمْ إِنَّ فِي ذَلِكَ لَآيَاتٍ لِّلْعَالَمِينَ

And among His signs is this, that He created For you mates from among yourselves, That ye may dwell in TRANQUILITY WITH THEM. And He has put love and mercy Between your (hearts): Verily in that are signs for those who reflect. (Emphasis added)

Surah ar-Rum (Holy Qur'an 30:21)

Translation by A. Yusuf Ali

2. *And one of signs it is, that he hath Created wives for you or your own species That YE MAY DWELL WITH THEM, and hath put love and tenderness between you. Herein truly are signs for those who reflect. (Emphasis added)*

Translation by Rev. J.M. Rodwell (M.A.)

3. *By another sign ha gave you wives from among yourselves, That ye might LIVE IN JOY WITH THEM, and planted love and kindness into your hearts. Surely there*

are signs in this for thinking men. (Emphasis added)

Translation by N.J. Dawood

The first example is from the translation by A. Yusuf Ali, a Muslim. The second is by a Christian priest the Rev. Rodwell and the last example is by an Iraqi Jew, N.J. Dawood.

Unfortunately Thomas Carlyle had no access to any one of these because none of them had seen the light of day in his time. The only one available to him in 1840 was as he said on page 85 of his book under reference –

“We also can read the Koran;¹³⁸ our Translation of it, by Sale, is known to be **a very fair one.**” (Emphasis added)

TAINT IS IN THE MOTIVE

Carlyle is very charitable to his fellow countryman. The motives of George Sale who pioneered an English Translation of the Holy Qur’an, were suspect. He makes no secret of his antagonism to the Holy Book of Islam. In his preface to his translation in 1734 he made it known that it was **avowed intention to expose than man Mohammed and his forgery**: He records:

“Who can apprehend any danger from so manifest a forgery? ... The protestants alone are able to attack the Koran with success; and for them, I trust, Providence has reserved the glory of its overthrow.”

George Sale

And he set to work with his prejudiced translation. You will be able to judge how **“fair”** and scholarly George Sale was from the very verse which **“Struck”** (Carlyle) **“much!”** Compare it with the three examples already given by a Muslim, a Christian and a Jew:

*And of his signs another is,
that he had created for you, out of
yourselves, wives that YE MAY
COHABIT WITH THEM, and hath put
love and compassion between you.*

(Emphasis added)

138 The Arabic word is **Qur’an**, it starts with a “Q” and not a “K”.

I do not think that George Sale was “a male chauvinist pig” of his day to describe out mates, wives or spouses as sexual objects. He was only keeping to his promise, which Carlyle overlooked. The Arabic word which he (Sale) perverted is “*litas-kunoo*” which means to find peace, consolation, composure or tranquillity; and not “*cohabit*” meaning “**To live together in a sexual relationship when not legally married.**” (The Reader’s Digest Universal Dictionary).

Every word of the Qur’anic text is meticulously chosen, chiselled and placed by the All-Wise Himself. They carry God’s “finger-print”, and are the Signs of God. And yet, the spiritually jaundiced...

ASK FOR A SIGN

What Signs? They mean some special kinds of signs or miracles such as their own foolish minds dictate. Everything is possible for God, but God is not going to humour the follies of men or listen to their false demands. He has sent His Messenger to explain His Signs clearly, and to warn them of the consequences of rejection. Is that not enough? The trend of their demand is generally as follows:

In specific terms they asked that he – Muhammad (PBUH) – ‘Put a ladder up to heaven and bring down a book from God in their very sight’ – “**THEN WE WOULD BELIEVE**”, they said. Or “Ye see the mountain yonder, turn it into gold” – “**THEN WE WOULD BELIEVE**”. Or ‘Make streams to gush out in the desert’ – “**THEN WE WOULD BELIEVE.**”

Now listen to the soft, sweet reasoning of Muhammad (PBUH) against the unreasonable and sceptical demands of the *MUSHRIKS* – “**Do I say to you, verily I am an angel? Do I say to you, verily in my hands are the treasures of God? Only, what is revealed to me do I follow.**”

Listen further to the most dignified reply he is commanded by his Lord to give the Unbelievers.

قُلْ إِنَّمَا الْآيَاتُ عِنْدَ اللَّهِ وَإِنَّمَا أَنَا نَذِيرٌ مُّبِينٌ

But they say, “Why are not signs sent down to him from his Lord?” Say, “The signs are only with Allah, and I am only a clear warner.”

Surah al-‘Ankabut (Holy Qur’an 29:50)

In the following **AYAH**¹³⁹ (verse) the Holy Prophet is made to point to the Holy Qur'an itself as an answer to their hypocritical demand for some special kind of **"Sign"** or **"Miracle"** for which their foolish, pagan mentality craved. For indeed all miracles are "signs"; and it is their disbelief, their scepticism, their lack of faith which motivates their request for a sign. They are asked to – "Look at the Qur'an" and again, **"Look at the Qur'an!"**

أَوَلَمْ يَكْفِهِمْ

And is it not sufficient for them

أَنَّا أَنْزَلْنَا عَلَيْكَ الْكِتَابَ

that We¹⁴⁰ revealed to you the Book

يُتْلَىٰ عَلَيْهِمْ

which is recited to them?

إِنَّ فِي ذَٰلِكَ

Indeed in that

لَرَحْمَةً وَذِكْرَىٰ

is a mercy and reminder

لِقَوْمٍ يُؤْمِنُونَ

*for a people who believe.*¹⁴¹

Surah al-'Ankabut (Holy Qur'an 29:51)

139 **AYAH** in the Holy Qur'an stands for "a sign" as well for "a verse". There are over six thousand **AYAHs** or verses in the Book of God, and every verse is a sign of God.

140 **WE** is a plural of respect and honour and not numbers. In every Eastern language, including Hebrew, this is their method of grammar. In the English Language it is called the "Royal Plural."

141 Memorize the verse with its meaning while the Book is still in your hands.

TWO PROOFS

As proof of the Divine Authorship and the miraculous nature of the Holy Qur'an, two arguments are advanced by the Almighty Himself:

1. **“THAT WE”** (God Almighty) have revealed to **YOU** (O Muhammad!) **“THE BOOK to YOU”** who are absolutely an unlearned person. An **“UMMIY”** Prophet. One who cannot read or write. One who cannot sign his own name. Let Thomas Carlyle¹⁴² testify regarding the educational qualifications of Muhammad –

“One other circumstance we must not forget: that he had no school learning; of the thing we call school-learning none at all.”

Moreover the Divine Author (God Almighty) Himself testifies to the veracity of Muhammad's (PBUH) claim that he could never have composed the contents of the Holy Qur'an; he could not have been its author:

وَمَا كُنْتَ تَتْلُواْ

And you did not recite

مِّن قَبْلِهِۦ مِن كِتَابٍ

before it any scripture,

وَلَا تَخْطُهُۥ بِيَمِينِكَ

nor did you inscribe one with your right hand.

إِذَا لَّا رَتَابَ الْمُبْطِلُونَ

Otherwise the falsifiers would have had [cause for] doubt.¹⁴³

Surah al-‘Ankabut (Holy Qur'an 29:48)

The Author of the Qur'an is reasoning with us, that had Muhammad (PBUH) been a learned man, and had he been able to read and write, than in that case the babblers in the market-places might have had some

¹⁴² Already referred to on page 36.

¹⁴³ Get into the habit learning off by heart the verses with their meanings as they occur in this Book.

justification to doubt his claim that the Holy Qur'an is God's Word. In the event of Muhammad (PBUH) being a literate person, the accusation of his enemies that he has probably copied his Book (Al-Qur'an) from the writings of the Jews and the Christians, or that he must have browsed through the "**Torat**", the "**Zabur**" and the "**Injeel**"¹⁴⁴ and had rehashed it all in a beautiful language, might have carried some weight. Then, "THE TALKERS OF VANITIES" **might have had a point**. But even this flimsy pretence has been denied to the unbeliever and the cynic: a point hardly big enough to hang a fly upon!¹⁴⁵

2. 'The Book'? Yes, the "**BOOK**" itself, carries its own evidence proving its Divine Authorship. Study the Book from any angle. Scrutinize it. Why not take up the Author's challenge if your doubts are genuine?

أَفَلَا يَتَدَبَّرُونَ الْقُرْآنَ

Then do they not reflect upon the Qur'an?

وَلَوْ كَانَ مِنْ عِنْدِ غَيْرِ اللَّهِ

If it had been from [any] other than Allah,

لَوَجَدُوا فِيهِ اخْتِلَافًا كَثِيرًا

*they would have found within it much contradiction.*¹⁴⁶

Surah an-Nisa (Holy Qur'an 4:82)

CONSISTENCY

It is inconceivable that any human author would remain consistent in his teachings and his preachings for a period of over two decades. From the age of forty, when Muhammad (PBUH) received his first call from Heaven to the age of sixty-three when he breathed his last, for twenty-three years the Holy Prophet practiced and preached Islam. In those twenty-three

144 **Torat/Zabur/Injeel**: These are the Arabic terms of the original revelations God granted Moses, David and Jesus (Peace be upon Them All) respectively.

145 The Bible was not translated into Arabic until the tenth century of the Christian Era, so written text of the Bible in his own language.

146 If you cannot muster enough enthusiasm to learn the verses with their meanings, why not hand over the Book to someone who will make better use of it?

years, he passed through the most conflicting vicissitudes of life. Any man, during the course of such a mission, would be forced by circumstances to make “honourable” compromises, and cannot help contradicting himself. No man can ever write the same always, as the Message of the Holy Qur'an is: **CONSISTENT WITH ITSELF, throughout!** Or is it that the unbelievers' objections are merely argumentative, refractory, against their own better light and judgement?

Furthermore, the Holy Qur'an contains or mentions many matters relating to the nature of the universe which were unknown to man before but which subsequently through evolution and discoveries of Science have fully confirmed – a field where an untutored mind would have most certainly lost in wild and contradictory speculations!

SELF- EVIDENT PROOF

Again and again when miracles were demanded from the Prophet of God by the cynical and frivolous few, he is made to point to the Qur'an – Message from High – as **“The Miracle”**. THE MIRACLE OF MIRACLES! And men of wisdom, people with literary and spiritual insight, who were honest enough to themselves, recognized and accepted Al-Qur'an as a genuine miracle.

Say the Holy Qur'an:

بَلْ هُوَ آيَاتٌ بَيِّنَاتٌ

Rather, the Qur'an is distinct verses

فِي صُدُورِ الَّذِينَ أُوتُوا الْعِلْمَ

(preserved) within the breasts of those who have been given knowledge¹⁴⁷

147 **“Knowledge”** (ilm) means both power of judgment in discerning the value of truth and acquaintance with previous revelations. It implies both literary and spiritual insight. To men so endowed, God's revelations and Signs are self-evident. They commend themselves to their hearts, minds, and understandings, which are typified in Arabic by the word *sadr*, “breast”.

وَمَا يَجْحَدُ بِآيَاتِنَا إِلَّا الظَّالِمُونَ

*And none reject Our verses except the wrongdoers.*¹⁴⁸

Surah al-‘Ankabut (*Holy Qur’an* 29:49)

148 Now the argument is carried a stage farther. Such rejection is also a mark of injustice, a deliberate perversity in going against obvious Signs, which should convince all honest men.

CHAPTER TWO

SCIENCE AND QUR'ANIC REVELATIONS

UNGRUDGING TRIBUTES

Today, there are in the world some one thousand million Muslims who unhesitatingly accept that the Holy Qur'an is the **"WORD OF GOD"** and that it is a **"Miracle"**.

Why should they not, even when avowed enemies are paying unsolicited tributes regarding the miraculous nature of this Book of God. The Rev. R. Bosworth-Smith in his book **"Mohammed and Mohammedanism"**¹⁴⁹ opines about the Qur'an:

- (a) "As a miracle of purity of style, of wisdom and of truth."

Another Englishman – A.J. Arberry, in the preface of his English translation of the Holy Qur'an – says:

- (b) "Whenever I hear the Qur'an chanted, it is as though I am listening to Music, underneath the flowing melody there is sounding... insistent beat of a drum, it is like the beating of my heart."

From these words and the rest of his preface he sounds like a Muslim, but regretfully he died outside of the pale of Islam. And yet another Briton, Marmaduke Picktall in the foreword to his translation of the Holy Qur'an, describes it as:

¹⁴⁹ There is no such thing as **"Mohammedanism"**, and no such thing as a **"Mohammedan"**. The name of the Religion is **Islam** and its followers are **Muslims**.

- (c) "That inimitable symphony, the very sounds of which move men to tears and ecstasy."

This Author embraced Islam before translating the Qur'an, and we are not in a position to verify whether he wrote the previous effect before or after his conversion.

- (d) "Next to the Bible,¹⁵⁰ it (The Qur'an) is the most esteemed and most powerful book in the world."

J. Christy Wilson in *"Introducing Islam"* New York 1950

- (e) "The Koran is the Mohammedan Bible, and is more revered than any other sacred book, More than the Jewish old testament or the Christian new testament."

J. Shillidy, D.D., in *"The Lord Jesus in the Koran,"* Surat 1913, p.111

We can quite easily adduce a dozen more eulogies to the above list. Friends and foes alike pay ungrudging commendations to the Last and Final Revelation of God – the Holy Qur'an. The contemporaries of Muhammad (PBUH) saw in its beauty and Message, the Sign and Miracle of God's Handiwork, and accepted Islam. To all the tributes and testimonies the unbeliever and the sceptic may say that these are all subjective feelings. He might further seek refuge in the pretext that he does not know Arabic. He is heard to say, "I do not see what you see, nor do I feel as you feel. How am I to know that God exists and that it is He Who inspired His Messenger Muhammad (PBUH) with that beautiful Message; the Qur'an?" He continues "I am not averse to the beauty of its philosophy, its practical ethics and high morality, I am prepared to concede that Muhammad (PBUH) was a sincere man and that he gave many beautiful precepts for human welfare. What I cannot subscribe to is what you Muslims claim, **'a supernatural authority for his dicta'.**"

REASONED LOGIC

To this kind of sympathetic, yet sceptical mentality, the Author of the Book (Al-Qur'an) uses various types of arguments to resolve his doubts. To the atheists and agnostics, the cynics and sceptics, who have a super-

¹⁵⁰ Coming from a Christian critic of Islam, we will not take exception to his placing the Qur'an in the second place.

abundance of scientific knowledge and who consider themselves to be “intellectual giants”, the point is driven home that they are in reality like stunted “dwarfs”. They are like the dwarf who may have acquired abnormal development in any one particular direction at the expense of other parts of his faculty, like an oversized head on a puny body, the Supreme Creator questions him.

But before we pose God’s question to him, let me satisfy my own curiosity. “You men of science who have studied astronomy and who study our Universe through your mighty telescopes as is scrutinizing an object in the palm of your hand; tell me how did this Universe come into being?” This man of science though lacking in spiritual insight, is nevertheless most generous in sharing his knowledge. He readily responds. “Well,” he begins, “Billions of years ago our Universe was a single piece of matter, and there happened a **“Big Bang”** in the centre of that huge lump of matter and mighty chunks of matter began flying in all directions. Out of that “big bang” our solar system came into being as well as the galaxies, and since there is no resistance in space to that primordial momentum generated by the initial explosion, the stars and the planets swim along in their orbits...”

At this juncture, my memory tickles me – Our materialist friends appear to have been secretly imbibing their knowledge from the **Surah Ya-Sin**.¹⁵¹

وَالشَّمْسُ

And the sun runs (on course)

تَجْرِي لِـمُسْتَقَرٍّ لَهَا^ج

toward its stopping point:

ذَٰلِكَ تَقْدِيرُ الْعَزِيزِ الْعَلِيمِ

That is the determination of the Exalted in Might, the Knowing

وَالْقَمَرَ قَدَرْنَاهُ مَنَازِلَ

And the moon – We have determined for it phases,

151 **Ya-Sin**: is the 36th chapter of the Holy Qur'an. The verses here are laid out for you to memorize in a very easy form, together with their meanings. Take advantage of it!

حَتَّىٰ عَادَ كَالْعُرْجُونِ الْقَدِيمِ

until it returns [appearing] like the old date stalk.

لَا الشَّمْسُ يَنْبَغِي لَهَا أَنْ تُدْرِكَ الْقَمَرَ

It is not allowable for the sun to reach the moon,

وَلَا اللَّيْلُ سَابِقُ النَّهَارِ

nor does the night overtake the day,

وَكُلٌّ فِي فَلَكٍ يَسْبَحُونَ

but each, in an orbit, is swimming.

Surah Ya-Sin (Holy Qur'an 36:38–40)

The atheistic scientist continues. “Ours is an **‘expanding’** universe. The galaxies are receding away from us at a faster and faster rate, and once they reach the speed of light,¹⁵² we will not be able to see them anymore. We must construct bigger and better telescopes as quickly as possible to study the sights, if not we will miss the bus!”

“When did you discover these fairy tales?” we ask. “No, these are not fairy tales but scientific facts!” our friend assures us. “All right, we accept your facts for what you say they are, but when did you really stumble upon these facts?” “Only yesterday!” he replies. Fifty years, after all, is only ‘yesterday’ in the history of the human race. “An unlettered Arab in the desert over 1400 years ago could never have had your knowledge of the **‘big bang’** and of your ‘expanding universe’, could he?” we ask. “No never!” he retorts boasting. “Well, then listen to what this **Ummiy**¹⁵³ Prophet uttered under inspiration:”

152 Light is said to travel at a speed of a hundred and eighty thousand miles per second (7.5 times around the world in one second!)

153 **Ummiy**: means unlettered, unlearned. “**And the Book is given to him that is NOT LEARNED, saying, Read this, I pray thee: and he sayeth, I am not learned**” Isaiah 29:12. See how this prophecy find fulfilment in Muhammad (PBUH).

أَوْ لَمْ يَرَ الَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا

Have those who disbelieved not considered

أَنَّ السَّمَوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضَ

that the heavens and the earth

كَانَتَا رَتْقًا فَفَتَقْنَاهُمَا

were a joined entity, and We separated them...

Surah al-Anbiyaa (Holy Qur'an 21:30)

وَهُوَ الَّذِي خَلَقَ اللَّيْلَ وَالنَّهَارَ

And it is He who created the night and the day

وَالشَّمْسَ وَالْقَمَرَ

and the sun and the moon:

كُلٌّ فِي فَلَكٍ يَسْبَحُونَ

all (heavenly bodies) in an orbit are swimming

Surah al-Anbiyaa (Holy Qur'an 21:33)

‘BIG BANG’ THEORY

Can't you see that the words **“The Unbelievers”** in the first quote above are specifically addressed to **You** – the men of science – the geographers, the astronomers, who, after having made amazing discoveries and conveyed these discoveries to mankind, still remain so ‘BLIND’ as not to ‘SEE’ its Author? **“With our Sciences and Encyclopedias, we are apt to forget the Divineness, in those laboratories of ours”**¹⁵⁴ says Thomas Carlyle.

Where on earth could a camel driver in the desert have gleaned **‘Your facts’ fourteen hundred years ago**, except from the Maker of the **‘Big Bang’** Himself?

154 From **“Heroes and Hero Worship”** by Thomas Carlyle.

ORIGIN OF LIFE

“And **You** biologists who seem to have your fingers on all organic life, and yet have the temerity to deny the existence of the Source of that Life, i.e. God: tell me, according to your vaunted research; **where and how did life originate?**”

Like his ‘unbelieving’ astronomer companion in science, he too begins – “Well, billions of years ago primaeval matter in the sea began to generate protoplasm out of which came the amoeba; and out of that mire in the sea came all **living** things. In one word ALL LIFE came from the sea, i.e. **Water!**”

“And when did you discover this fact that all living things came from water?” The answer is no different from that of his fellow scientist the astronomer – “**Yesterday!**” “No man of learning, no philosopher or poet could ever have guessed your biological discovery fourteen centuries back, could he?” we ask, and our biologist is as emphatic as the astronomer. “**No, never!**” says he. “Well, then, you just listen to this untutored son of the desert!”

وَجَعَلْنَا مِنَ الْمَاءِ كُلَّ شَيْءٍ حَيٍّ

and We separated them and made from water¹⁵⁵ every living thing?

أَفَلَا يُؤْمِنُونَ

Then will they not believe?

Surah al-Anbiyaa (Holy Qur'an 21:30)

The above statement is further elaborated in the Book of God:

وَاللَّهُ خَلَقَ كُلَّ دَابَّةٍ مِّن مَّاءٍ

Allah has created every (living) creature from water¹⁵⁶

155 Protoplasm is the basis of all living matter, and the “vital power of protoplasm seems to depend on the constant presence of water” (Lawson’s Text Book of Botany, London 1922). Textbooks on Zoology are also clear on this point. For further explanation see Yusuf Ali’s translation and commentary.

156 See Note No. 155 on page 166.

فَمِنْهُمْ مَّنْ يَمْشِي عَلَى بَطْنِهِۦ

And of them are those that move on their bellies,

وَمِنْهُمْ مَّنْ يَمْشِي عَلَى رِجْلَيْنِ

and of them are those that walk on two legs,

وَمِنْهُمْ مَّنْ يَمْشِي عَلَى أَرْبَعٍ

and of them are those that walk on four.

يَخْلُقُ اللَّهُ مَا يَشَاءُ

Allah creates what He wills

إِنَّ اللَّهَ عَلَى كُلِّ شَيْءٍ قَدِيرٌ

Indeed, Allah is over all things competent.

Surah an-Nur (Holy Qur'an 24:45)

It will not be difficult for you to note that these words of the Omnipotent, Omniscient Creator of the Universe were addressed to You men of knowledge in answer to your scepticism TODAY. Their real import was beyond the dwellers of the desert fourteen centuries ago. The Author (God Almighty) is reasoning with **YOU**, you men of science, how can **YOU** not believe in God? **YOU** should be the LAST to deny His existence and yet you are the FIRST! What sickness has overtaken **YOU** that you allow your egos to overshadow your sense of logic?

AND to the botanists and the zoologists and the physicists who, despite their amazing insight into the nature of things, refuse to acknowledge a Master Creator. Let them then account for these utterances of Muhammad (PBUH) the mouthpiece of God.

سُبْحَانَ الَّذِي

Exalted is He

خَلَقَ الْأَزْوَاجَ كُلَّهَا

who created all pairs –*

مِمَّا تُنْبِتُ الْأَرْضُ

from what the earth grows

وَمِنْ أَنْفُسِهِمْ

and from themselves

وَمِمَّا لَا يَعْلَمُونَ

and from that which they do not know.¹⁵⁷

Surah Ya-Sin (Holy Qur'an 36:36)

* “CREATED IN PAIRS” *“The mystery of sex runs through all creation, — in man, in animal life, in vegetable life, and in other things of which we have no knowledge. Then there are pairs of opposite forces in nature, e.g. positive and negative electricity, etc. The atom itself consists of a positively charged nucleus or proton, surrounded by negatively charged electrons. The constitution of matter itself is thus referred to as pairs of opposite energies.”*

(Comment by A. Yusuf Ali)¹⁵⁸

SIGNS OF GOD

The verses of this **“Perspicuous Book,”** the Holy Qur'an are evidently self-explanatory. Students of the Qur'an saw the unmistakable Finger of God in every discovery that man made. These were the **“Signs,”** the **“Miracles”** from his Beneficent Lord and Cherisher so as to remove his doubts and strengthen his faith.

157 Here is another verse from YA-SIN. Further to footnote No. 142 on page 157, a special plea is made to Muslim readers who already know the Surah in Arabic, to now master its English meaning as well.

158 Obtain your volume of Yusuf Ali's translation with over 6000 such explanatory notes.

إِنَّ فِي ذَلِكَ لَآيَاتٍ لِّلْعَالَمِينَ

Indeed in that are signs for those of knowledge.

Surah ar-Rum (Holy Qur'an 30:22)

What an irony! It is the **'people of learning'** who are actually rebellious! Their vast material knowledge has inflated them with pride. They lack the genuine humility which goes together with all true knowledge.

In the words of a modern Frenchman:

"The above observation makes the hypothesis advanced by those who see Muhammad as the author of the Qur'an untenable. How could a man, from being illiterate, become the most important author, in terms of literary merits, in the whole of Arabic literature? How could he then pronounce truths of a scientific nature that no other human being could possibly have developed at that time, and all this without once making the slightest error in his pronouncement on the subject?"

See *"The Bible, the Qur'an and Science"* p.
125 by Maurice Bucaille

EARLY INSPIRATION

The seeds of this booklet, **"AL-QUR'AN – The miracle of Miracles,"** was probably sown by the Roving Ambassador of Islam, the silver-tongue orator – Maulana Abdul Aleem Siddiqui. I was only a schoolboy when he visited South Africa on a lecture tour in 1934. Among his many erudite speeches, I heard him talk on **'Cultivation of Science by the Muslims.'** Subsequently, a booklet under the same title was published by the World Federation of Islamic Missions, Karachi, Pakistan, which brings back the earlier joy and thrill of the discourse I heard in my teens. In memory of that great servant of Islam, I reproduce here, for posterity, a few words of what the Maulana had to say on the relationship between the Holy Qur'an and the branches of scientific knowledge:

EXHORTATIONS OF THE SCIENCES

"The stress which the Holy Qur'an has laid on the scientific study of the universe is a phenomenon unique in the religious

literature of the world. Repeatedly it calls our attention to the multifarious phenomena of nature occurring around us. Repeatedly it exhorts the Muslims that the pursuit of scientific knowledge is one of their religious duties. Repeatedly it emphasises the great truth unknown to the pre-Qur'anic world that everything in nature is for his use. It exhorts us to study the structure and functions and distribution of animals, the form, structure, functions, classification and distribution of plants, and these are problems of BIOLOGY."

"It exhorts us to study the order of nature and the general properties of matter as affected by energy, which is the problem of modern PHYSICS."

"It exhorts us to study the properties of substances both elementary and compound and the laws of their combination and action one upon another which is the problem of modern CHEMISTRY."

"It exhorts us to study the structure and mineral constitution of the globe, the different strata of which it is composed, the changes that take place in its organic and inorganic matter, etc., which are the problem of modern GEOLOGY."

"It exhorts us to study the general description of the earth, its physical divisions into seas, rivers, mountains, plains, etc., and the minerals, plants and animals in each, and its political divisions which are the problems of modern GEOGRAPHY."

"It exhorts us to study the causes which bring about the alternation of day and night, the variation of the seasons, the movement of the planets and other celestial phenomena, which are the problems of modern ASTRONOMY."

"It exhorts us to study the movements of the winds, the formation and evolution of clouds and the production of rain, and other similar phenomena, which are the problems of the modern METEOROLOGY."

For centuries, Muslims were world leaders in the field of scientific learning. Then slowly, the leadership began to slip away from their hands. Muslims had failed in their leadership role and materialistic Europe moved forward to fill the vacuum in leadership created by the Muslims.

Further, the Maulana records the contribution made by the Muslims as follows:

“The intellectual upheaval created by Islam was a gigantic one. There is not a single department of learning which the Muslim scholars have left untouched and which they have not carved out a high position for themselves.”

“In truth, Islam intends the Muslim community to be a community of intellectuals, and cultivation of science and all other forms of learning is one of the primary aims of Islam. Had it not been for the Muslims, Europe would never have seen its way to the Renaissance and the modern scientific era would never have dawned. Those nations have who have received their knowledge of science from Europe are in fact indirectly the disciples of the Islamic community of the past. Humanity owes to Islam a debt which it can never repay and gratitude which it can never forget.”

The silver-tongued orator (the Maulana) ended his masterful exposition of the topic – **“CULTIVATION OF SCIENCE BY THE MUSLIMS,”** with the words:

“Before I conclude, let me affirm once more that the Muslim community is out and out a creation of Islam which in its turn is rooted in Divine revelation. Nothing but belief in and the practice of Islam can make an individual a Muslim. Islam has laid it down as a religious duty that a Muslim should enquire into the reality of objects around him, so that his scientific enquiry may lead him to the knowledge of his creator. Scientific enquiry in Islam is not an end but a means to the attainment of a higher end. And this is really the true of humanity.”

قَالُوا إِنَّا لِلَّهِ وَإِنَّا إِلَيْهِ رَاجِعُونَ

To Allah We belong, and to Him is our return.

Surah al-Baqarah (Holy Qur'an 2:156)

MY ABORTED LECTURE

I had the privilege of hearing the above speech in 1934 from the lips of the master himself. In the late thirties I had the speech in my hands as a

booklet. I memorized it with some changes and modifications, whilst still working in a Muslim shop at Adams Mission Station. I was so enthused that I made arrangements with Adam's college to speak to the students and their lectures on the same subject. At that time I might not have fully grasped the enormity of my task but I will never know for sure as my Muslim Boss came to my rescue? He threatened me with dismissal if I did not cancel my first public lecture. I backed out. My employer was no doubt ignorant of Allah's warning. I too, knew no better. I cannot say what stand I would have taken then if I was programmed with this admonition:

قُلْ إِنْ كَانَ آبَاؤُكُمْ

Say, (O Muhammad), "If your fathers,

وَأَبْنَاؤُكُمْ

your sons,

وَإِخْوَانُكُمْ

your brothers,

وَأَزْوَاجُكُمْ وَعَشِيرَتُكُمْ

your wives, your relatives,

وَأَمْوَالٌ أَقْتَرَفْتُمُوهَا

wealth which you have obtained

وَتِجَارَةٌ تَخْشَوْنَ كَسَادَهَا

commerce wherein you fear decline,

وَمَسَاكِينُ تَرْضَوْنَهَا

and dwellings with which you are pleased

أَحَبَّ إِلَيْكُمْ مِنَ اللَّهِ

are more beloved to you than Allah

وَرَسُولِهِ

and His Messenger

وَجِهَادٍ فِي سَبِيلِهِ

and jihad in His cause;

فَتَرَبَّصُوا حَتَّى يَأْتِيَ اللَّهُ بِأَمْرِهِ

then wait until Allah executes His command.

وَاللَّهُ لَا يَهْدِي الْقَوْمَ الْفَاسِقِينَ

*And Allah does not guide the defiantly disobedient people.*¹⁵⁹

Surah at-Taubah (Holy Qur'an 9:24)

Thanks (?) to our timid brother, my first ever lecture to Christian missionaries and trainee priests which I had so assiduously planned, memorized and rehearsed came to nothing. Perhaps I was set back ten years in my career in public speaking. There are millions like my Muslim boss who are just terrified by material considerations enumerated in the above verse who not only will not deliver the Message of Islam themselves but obstruct those prepared to do the job. Yet they display in their bearing the utmost piety: to no avail – Allah describes such as **“Perverved transgressors!”**

TAKE UP THE CHALLENGE

In the foregoing speech the Maulana had drawn our attention to the Qur'anic exhortations for us to ponder on, Biology, Physics, Chemistry, Geology, Meteorology etc. Scholars like Maurice Bucaille, Keith Moore and Sheikh Zindani have written on different scientific aspects of the Holy Qur'an in recent times. But the scope is limitless. The noble Qur'an is an ocean of Knowledge. In this world of specialization Muslim scientists must take up the challenges hinted at by the Maulana in the mid-thirties. They do not have to dabble in every field. To each his own particular speciality. The youth of Islam is hungry for information and articles and small tracts on different scientific subjects in order to whet their appetites.

159 (a) A video tape on the topic – “Da’wah or destruction?” is available from the IPCI,

(b) Memorize the verse together with its meaning. If you are rightly programmed, you will have the right responses in every challenging situation. **Insha-Allah!**

Encyclopedias may follow. **Insha-Allah!**

I do not have to apologise for leaving the exposition of Qur'anic sciences to Muslim scientists. Even non- Muslims should be encouraged to explore the depths. Of Wisdom as enshrined in the book of God. For my part, as a layman, I will share with you the miraculous nature of the Holy Qur'an in what appears to me to be in simple, ordinary facts.

CHAPTER THREE

AL-QUR'AN ABSOLUTELY UNIQUE
IN ITS RECORDING

Among all the extant religious literature of the world, the Holy Qur'an is absolutely unique. Its recording and preservation are miraculous! Because it stands out distinctly from the ordinary human pattern of narration; the short-sighted and the inimical say that it is incoherent or incongruous. The pattern definitely is different. It is unique. It is miraculous. Let me substantiate what I assert.

HUMAN STYLE

Every other religious book is set on the pattern of, "**Once upon a time...**" or "**The fox and the grapes....the wolf and lamb,**" etc., etc. i.e.

*1a. **IN THE BEGINNING** (Once Upon a Time)
God created the heaven¹⁶⁰ and the earth...
(Emphasis added)*

(Holy Bible) Genesis 1:1¹⁶¹

*b. **IN THE BEGINNING** (Once Upon a Time)
was the word, and the word was with God*

160 The first verse of the Bible speaks about "the heaven and the earth" in the singular. In the Holy Qur'an the word earth is always singular whereas the word heavens is in the plural. Something to ponder upon!

161 The word "**Genesis**" itself means the beginning, this is, after all how every human tale ought to start. It should begin with the "Beginning!"

and the word was God¹⁶²...(*Emphasis added*)

(*Holy Bible*) John 1:1

c. ***THIS IS THE GENEALOGY*** (*The Origin, The Beginning*) ***of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham...***(*Emphasis Added*)

(*Holy Bible*) Matthew 1:1

2. NOW AFTER THE DEATH OF MOSES THE SERVANT OF THE LORD IT CAME TO PASS (*So It Happened, Once Upon a Time*), ***that the Lord spake unto Joshua*** ...(*Emphasis added*)

(*Holy Bible*) Joshua 1:1

3. NOW AFTER THE DEATH OF JOSHUA IT CAME TO PASS (*So it Happened, Once Upon a Time*), ***the children of Israel asked the Lord...***(*Emphasis added*)

(*Holy Bible*) Judges 1:1¹⁶³

4. NOW IT CAME TO PASS (*So It happened, Once Upon a Time*) ***in the days when the Judges ruled, that there was famine in the land...***(*Emphasis added*)

(*Holy Bible*) Ruth 1:1¹⁶⁴

162 In the original Greek manuscripts of the New Testament there is no such thing as a capital letter and a small letter. The Christian theologians have contrived capitals according to their religious prejudices into their translations of the Bible i.e. God and god.

163 The editors of the RSV (The Revised Standard Version) of the Bible; supported by 32 scholars of the highest eminence; backed by 50 co-operating denominations, concluded their verdict regarding its authorship – NOT God but “ **Possibly** Samuel!”

164 Their verdict again – “Not **definitely** known, **perhaps** Samuel!” Most definitely NOT God!

5. NOW THERE WAS A CERTAIN MAN

*(Once Upon a Time) of Ramathaimzophim,
of the mount Ephraim...(Emphasis added)*

(Holy Bible) 1 Samuel 1:1¹⁶⁵

6. NOW IT CAME TO PASS *(So It Happened,
Once Upon a Time) after the death of
Saul... (Emphasis added)*

(Holy Bible) 2 Samuel 1:1

7. NOW *(Once Upon a Time) Kind David was
Old (Gone Cold) and stricken in years,
And they covered him with clothes, but
He gat no heat.*

(Holy Bible) 1 King 1:1¹⁶⁶

8. NOW *(Once Upon a Time) in the first year
of CyrusKing of Persia...*

(Holy Bible) Book of Ezra 1:1¹⁶⁷

9. NOW IT CAME TO PASS *(So It Happened,
Once Upon a Time) in the days of
Ahasuerus...(Emphasis added)*

(Holy Bible) Book of Esther 1:1

10. NOW IT CAME TO PASS *(So It Happened,
Once Upon a Time) in the thirtieth year,
in the forth month, in the fifth day of
the month...(Emphasis added)*

(Holy Bible) Ezekiel 1:1

165 Amazingly, the inspired editors of the RSV say about the authorship of the Book of Judges – “**Possibly** Samuel;” and for the Book of Ruth – “**Perhaps** Samuel”, but when they come to the Book of Samuel (?) Himself declare – Author – “**Unknown!**”

166 The same (editors’ verdict) – Author – “**Unknown!**”

167 Again they unashamedly confess – Author – “**Probably** written or edited by Ezra!” Note their guarded semantics – “Possibly, perhaps, probably, etc.

If these examples do not confuse and bewilder you, then nothing else will! You are inevitably struck with the **“once upon a time”** syndrome. You have cultivated a predilection for man made stories, even if they be true. The style, the pattern, the narration is what I am speaking about. This is how humans think, talk and write. No blame on them for humans will be humans!

All the above references are from the authorized King James Version (KJV) which is the most popular version among the Christians of the world. You must have noted that every verse in the above quotations is 1:1, 1:1, meaning the **first** chapter and the **first** verse of **every book** of the Bible. Which start with NOW, NOW, now!” Try it out, see for yourself how many more such beginnings you can find in the **“Book of Books,”**¹⁶⁸ I must however warn you that your Bible Concordances will not help you. You will have to page through the Bible the same as I did.

CONCORDANCES WON'T HELP

I consulted two Bible concordances. The one was published by the Jehovah's Witnesses – The fastest growing Christian sect on Christendom. The second is **“Young's Analytical Concordance to the Bible.”** Both these concordances boast over 300 000 entries each. The latter has no less than 277 **now's** listed, but there is not a single **“NOW”** (once upon a time) of the examples given above. You can guess the reason!¹⁶⁹

I do not want to tax your patience any further. I realise that you will want proof. **“Alright now, please tell us your story about your Qur'anic revelation!”**:

“It was the night of the 27th of the month of Ramadhan that Muhammad (PBUH) the prophet of Islam, was in cave of Hira, in the outskirts of the city of Makkah. He used to retire to Mount Hira for peace, quiet and contemplation. He used to worry about the problems of his people – their drunkenness, adulteries, idolatries, wars, their rank injustices and cruelties. So much so that Gibbon, the master historian, was constrained to record in his **“Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire”**:

168 **Book of Books**: A title of the Holy Bible.

169 Because they represent childish redundancies (**“ONCE UPON A TIME”**), which ill-befits the word of God even according to their own standards.

“The human brute, without arts or laws, almost without sense or language, is poorly distinguished from the rest of the animal creation.”

The recluse of Hira was yearning for a solution. He was wont to retire to his retreat often alone, but sometimes with his dear wife **Umm-il-Mo'mineen** (Mother of Faithful) **Khadija-tul-Kubra**.

THE FIRST CALL

One night – the night of **Lailatul-Qadr** – (the Night of Power and Excellence) when Divine peace rests on creation, and all nature is lifted up towards its Lord – in the middle of that night the book of God was opened to the thirsting soul. Gabriel, the angel of God, appears to him, and commands him in his mother tongue. اقْرَأْ **Iqra'**, which mean “read!” or “recite” or “rehearse” or “proclaim” aloud! Muhammad (PBUH) was too terrified and was totally unprepared for this shock. This was no graduating or gowning ceremony. In fear and trepidation he cries out **Maa-ana-beqaa-Ri'in** “I am not learned!” The angel repeats the command **Iqra'** for the second time, with the identical response from Muhammad (PBUH). Gabriel embraces him hard and commands him the third time:

أَقْرَأْ بِأَسْمِ رَبِّكَ الَّذِي خَلَقَ

Recite in the name of your Lord who created –...

Surah al-'Alaq (Holy Qur'an 96:1)

Muhammad (PBUH) now grasps that what he was required to do, was repeat what was being said, since this Arabic word **Iqra'** means all these things – read, recite or repeat! Following the above first verse of **Surah al-'Alaq** (Chapter 96 of the Holy Qur'an), four more verses were repeated and recited on Muhammad's (PBUH) first call and subsequently recorded in written form in the Holy Qur'an...(see on page 180).

“Hold it, Mr Deedat!” I can almost hear you shriek. All this that you are telling us about your ‘**Qur'anic revelation**’ is no different from the other numerous examples you have to prove to have had a human hand in it. Were they all fallible and not divine?”

Exactly! I am happy that you see clearly how the subjective mind of man thinks, talks and records. From the time you asked me (on page 178) “**please tell us your STORY about your Qur'anic revelation,**”

and I began to respond – **“It was the night of the 27th of the month of Ramadhan...”** up to – **“and subsequently recorded in written form on the Holy Qur'an”** were my own words, borrowed from the Holy Qur'an, from the Books of Tradition, from history and from the lips of learned men, I heard over the decades. The Qur'anic Scripture has no such taint from the hands of men. This is how it is preserved. I list below the **first** five verses of the first revelation to Muhammad (PBUH), for your critical observation and study-

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

In the name of Allah, the Entirely Merciful, the Especially Merciful.

اقْرَأْ بِاسْمِ رَبِّكَ الَّذِي خَلَقَ

Recite in the name of your Lord who created –

خَلَقَ الْإِنْسَانَ مِنْ عَلَقٍ

Created man from a clinging substance.

اقْرَأْ وَرَبُّكَ الْأَكْرَمُ

Recite, and your Lord is the most Generous –

الَّذِي عَلَّمَ بِالْقَلَمِ

Who taught by the pen –

عَلَّمَ الْإِنْسَانَ مَا لَمْ يَعْلَمْ

Taught man that which he knew not.

Surah al-'Alaq (Holy Qur'an 96:1–5)

A UNIQUE RECORD

Every Qur'anic **text**, in Arabic or in **translated** form in any language will follow this pattern. There are no ifs and buts. You will **NOT** find in the text or translation that Muhammad (PBUH) **“WAS FORTY YEARS OLD WHEN HE RECEIVED HIS FIRST CALL.”** You will **NOT** find that

“HE WAS IN THE CAVE OF MOUNT HIRA.” You will **NOT** find that “HE SAW THE ANGEL GABRIEL.” Or that he “WAS TERRIFIED,” or how he reacted and responded to the command “*Iqra’!*” That when the angel departed after having completed the first five verses, “MUHAMMAD RAN HOME SOME THREE MILES SOUTH TO MAKKAH TO HIS DEAR WIFE KHADIJA AND RELATED THAT HAD HAPPENED AND REQUESTED HER TO COVER HIM UP, COVER HIM UP!” All this is what I call a “**Once upon a time!**” style. The Holy Qur’an narrates nothing of this, it is absolutely unique in its narration and its preservation. In short it is **Miraculous!**

Further, unlike any human endeavour of literary art, where everything begins with the beginning: the first word and the first verse of the Qur’anic inspiration is **not** the first the **first chapter** and the **first verse** of the Holy Qur’an – IT OCCUPIES THE NINETY-SIXTH CHAPTER OF THE HOLY QUR’AN, as the divine Author (GOD ALMIGHTY) had instructed His Chosen Messenger Muhammad (PBUH). No religious Book on earth is like it or follows this pattern, because no alleged Revelation was preserved in its pristine purity when it was **revealed!**

A CANADIAN PSYCHOLOGIST

I had the privilege of sharing my thoughts on the first call of Muhammad (PBUH), as contained in the first five verses of ***Surah al-'Alaq*** (chapter 96) as seen on page 180, with a young man from Canada. I was taking him on a guided tour of the largest Mosque in the southern hemisphere. Whilst chatting I enquired as to his occupation. He said that he was doing a post-graduate course, majoring in psychology. “Psychology?” I said, and immediately drew his attention to the first five verses of the chapter under discussion. I asked him as to how he would account for the Message and experience of Muhammad (PBUH) speaking about “**Reading, Writing and learning things unknown before,**” things which were not his immediate problem nor the problem of his people. How could the subjective mind of man, as if out of the blue¹⁷⁰ rehearse these words. I said, “Account for it!” He said that he could not. He confessed that he had already grappled with that problem. I said, “In that case we would have to accept the man at his word.” And I quoted the first verses from ***Surah Najm***:

170 **Blue:** as from nowhere!

وَالنَّجْمِ إِذَا هَوَىٰ

By the star¹⁷¹ when it descends,

مَا ضَلَّ صَاحِبُكُمْ وَمَا غَوَىٰ

Your Companion¹⁷² is neither astray nor being misled.

وَمَا يَنْطِقُ عَنِ الْهَوَىٰ

Nor does he speak from (his own) inclination.

إِنْ هُوَ إِلَّا وَحْيٌ يُوحَىٰ

It is not but a revelation¹⁷³ revealed

عَلَّمَهُ شَدِيدُ الْقُوَىٰ

Taught to him by one intense in strength¹⁷⁴ –

Surah an-Najm (Holy Qur'an 53:1–5)

And Muhammad (PBUH) is repeatedly made to tell the people:

قُلْ إِنَّمَا أَنَا بَشَرٌ مِّثْلُكُمْ يُوحَىٰ إِلَيَّ أَنَّمَا إِلَهُكُمُ إِلَهُ وَاحِدٌ

Say, "I am only a man like you, to whom has been revealed that your god is one God"...

Surah al-Kahf (Holy Qur'an 18:110)

The young Canadian politely responded, "I will have to give this matter serious thought."

If only we would familiarize ourselves with the facts from the Holy Qur'an,

171 **"By the Star"**: an oath, an adjuration.

172 Meaning Muhammad (PBUH) the Messenger of God

173 Inspiration: Our concept of the revelation to Muhammad (PBUH) is a verbal inspiration. The words of the Holy Qur'an were so to say **"put into his mouth"** (Deut. 18:18).

174 This is referred to by the Commentators to the archangel Gabriel through whom the revelation came.

we would be able to open a conversation with the specialists in any science.

MIRACLE OF JOURNALISM

Being a beehive of activity, the IPCI Centre attracts a lot of people for dialogue and discussions, including the journalist and the newspapermen. As soon as I discover that my interviewer's field of activity is journalism, I tell him that I would like to show him the Holy Qur'an as a **"Miracle of Journalism!"** No one refuses to hear. I begin with the story of the Holy Prophet Moses (PBUH), in the style and pattern of **"Once upon a time."** It can't be helped. Yet we cannot afford the luxury of the details of **"Moses and the Bulrushes,"** or even the details of "his childhood, mother, and his sister," (Holy Qur'an 20:38-40 and 28:7-13). We have to skip the details. I begin with –

HIS MISHAP IN THE CITY

Moses (PBUH) came upon two men fighting, a man belonging to his own tribe and the other an enemy of his people. He went to help the Jew against the Egyptian and in the altercation slapped the tyrant too hard so that he died.

Moses (PBUH) then fled the country into the Sinai Desert and found himself among the Midianites. Here he helped two damsels in distress and was offered a job by their father Jethro. After having completed his indenture for a period over eight years, Moses (PBUH) was beginning to get bored of his rustic existence. For a man who had grown up with royalty in the midst of the hustle and bustle of the city, he was getting restless. He wanted a change and asked for permission to become independent from his in-laws. Jethro was a very reasonable, and a practical man. He grants Moses (PBUH) leave.

MOSES PIONEERS A TREK

Moses (PBUH) left with his wife and children, together with his share of the sheep and the goats which he used to herd for his father-in-law.

After some time he found himself his family in the Sinai. He had lost direction from the last habitation with whom he had rested. He had run out of stocks of the braised meat that he was carrying. There was still enough Matzos the dried unleavened bread of the Jews. The problem was the meat. He had to slaughter a sheep or a goat. That would be easy. The

difficulty was to start a fire which was a laborious task. It could take as long as half a day of rubbing two dissimilar materials. Obviously there were no matches or lighters in those days. He was procrastinating. Putting things off for today, or tomorrow and his meat problem would be solved, he thought... **“Where is the promised miracle!”** Mr Deedat?

So far I have given only the background to the story, the miracle is to condense all the above and more in just four terse verses – four short sentences in the most beautiful prose. But to appreciate the feat, I must draw your attention to what I would like you to notice in what is to me, the acme of Journalism.

NEWSPAPER PLACARDS

I live some thirty kilometres north of the City of Durban, where I have my offices. Prior to the construction of the N2 (Freeway) linking the City of Durban, I usually took the beach (seaside) toad to Durban. This route took me past the amphitheatre on the Durban beachfront. At the intersection of the amphitheatre I regularly observed a news vendor offering the morning paper – **“The Natal Mercury,”** for sale. He had a placard daily with headline to attract buyers. Again and again on reading the placard, I made up my mind not to buy the newspaper that day, but on parking my car in central Durban on passing other news vendors, I nevertheless bought the paper.

After numerous such changes of decision, I began to question myself as to the reasons for my change of mind. I discovered that though the same newspaper was being offered for sale the placards were different. On the beachfront the placards were made appealing to European clientele whereas the placards in the area I passed were directed to the Asian community. By extension the placard for the African and the Coloured areas would be slanted to induce them to buy the same paper.

So the master journalist would be the one who could invent a single placard that would appeal to the four major race groups ¹⁷⁵ each day.

That would be the masterpiece of journalism! Journalists no doubt all agree with this reasoning. Let us then analyse the Holy Qur'an on this basis.

175 Under the **“Apartheid”** system, the four groups live in separate areas.

UNIVERSAL APPEAL

Muhammad (PBUH), the prophet of Islam is in Madinah, and is surrounded by Jews, Christians, Muslims, **Mushriks**¹⁷⁶ and **Munaafiqs**¹⁷⁷ in the city. The Holy Prophet is to broadcast his news (Divine Revelation) to all these various people. What must he write on his placard to attract the attention of each of these varied groups? He is made to proclaim:

وَهَلْ أَتَاكَ حَدِيثُ مُوسَىٰ

*And has the story of Moses reached you?*¹⁷⁸ –

Surah Ta-Ha (Holy Qur'an 20:9)

Can you imagine the excitement? The Christians and the Jews would be waiting to hear further, wanting Muhammad (PBUH) to make a fool of himself, for they reason within themselves what could this Arab know about Moses (PBUH) since he is an **ummiy** (unlettered). The Muslims are thirsty for knowledge, they would be yearning – please tell us everything you can about Moses (PBUH).

The **Mushriks** (The polytheists) and the **Munaafiqs** (the hypocrites) were lolling their tongues to enjoy the three-sided debate on Moses (PBUH): between the Muslims, the Christians and the Jews. Everybody is “**all-ears**” (acute attentive)! Muhammad (PBUH)¹⁷⁹ continues

إِذْ رَأَىٰ نَارًا

When he saw a fire

Surah Ta-Ha (Holy Qur'an 20:10)

Dramatisation! You can almost visualize the scene. Muhammad (PBUH) is talking telegraphically. It took about two thousand years after the birth of Jesus Christ (PBUH) for the largest Christian and Jewish nations on

176 “**Mushriks**”: the pagans, the idolators of Makkah.

177 “**Munaafiqs**”: the hypocrites, running with the hare and hunting with the hounds.

178 I urge my Muslim brethren to memorise the Qur'anic text with its meaning.

179 Actually, these are not the words of Muhammad (PBUH) but the veritable Words of God as dictated to the Prophet. We say, “**Muhammad continues**,” because this is what the unbeliever is thinking. Then he let him give **full credit** to God's human mouthpiece.

earth (the mighty United States)¹⁸⁰ to reach the height of perfection in the advertising field to formulate the slogan, in the words of the Western Union Telegraph Company, **“Don’t write-Telegraph!”** Which school of Journalism did Muhammad attend to master this super American sizzlemanship?¹⁸¹ He is made to carry on:

فَقَالَ لِأَهْلِهِ امْكُثُوا إِنِّي ءَانَسْتُ نَارًا لَّعَلِّي ءَاتِيكُمْ مِنْهَا
بِقَبَسٍ أَوْ أَجِدُ عَلَى النَّارِ هُدًى

And said to his family, “Stay here; indeed, I have perceived a fire; perhaps I can bring you a torch or find at the fire some guidance.”

Surah Ta-Ha (Holy Qur’an 20:10)

DICTATING SHORTHAND

Please compare the above with any other English Translation of the Holy Qur’an by friend or foe, and you will find the same brevity and economy of words. Muhammad (PBUH) was not doing any exercise in precis writing. He was only articulating God’s words as they whispered into his heart and mind through the medium of the Archangel Gabriel. We must remember that there was no Arabic Bible, in the sixth century of the Christian era, when the Holy prophet dictated the Qur’an.

Now do yourself a favour. Please contrast this Qur’anic revelation with the Biblical story as contained in the second Book of the Holy Bible, **The Book of Exodus**, chapters 1, 2 and 3 which discusses this very aspect of the life of the Holy Prophet Moses (PBUH) we are dealing with here. I quote the beginning of the story from the Bible –

***NOW¹⁸² These are the names of the children of
Israel, which came into Egypt; every man
And his household came with Jacob.
Reuben, Simeon, Levi, and Judah, Is-sa-char,***

180 The mightiest Christian nation on earth is the USA because it boasts a Christian population of over 200 million. The USA is also the largest Jewish nation because there are more Jews in America than in Israel or in any other country.

181 **Sizzlemanship:** The art of American high-pressure salesmanship.

182 **“NOW!”** Here we start again – the **“Once upon a time”** story! Give another glance to all the other examples on the preceding pages 175 to 177

***Ze-bu-lun, and Benjamin, Dan, and Naph-ta-li,
Gad, and Asher.
And all the coils that came out of the loins of Jacob
were seventy souls; for Joseph was in Egypt already.***

(Holy Bible) Exodus 1:1-5

MOSES SET-UP

Simply warming up! Is this how God speaks? Please compare these five verses from the Bible with the four verses from the Holy Qur'an reproduced below.

To continue with the Qur'anic narrative, Moses (PBUH) was hungry for two things whilst wondering in the Sinai with his flock and family. He wanted 'fire' to cook his meat, and 'direction' to some hospitable community in the desert, Allah was unfolding his plan. Moses (PBUH) was being 'SET-UP' for his mission from the illusion of burning coal to the reality of the spiritual fire burning in the souls of mankind for thousands of years and a true direction for the guidance of humanity.

The 'fire' that Moses (PBUH) saw, was no ordinary fire. To him it meant an easy kindling of his own fire, the fire also indicated the presence of other human beings from whom he could get information: and guidance.

فَلَمَّا أَتَاهَا نُودِيَ يَمُوسَى

And when he came to it, he was called, "O Moses,

إِنِّي أَنَا رَبُّكَ فَأَخْلَعْ نَعْلَيْكَ إِنَّكَ بِالْوَادِ الْمُقَدَّسِ طَوًى

Indeed, I am your Lord, so remove your sandals. Indeed, you are in the sacred valley of Tuwa.

Surah Ta-Ha (Holy Qur'an 20:11-12)

The spiritual history of Moses (PBUH) begins here and this was his spiritual birth. In Biblical terminology – **'This day have I begotten thee!'** This is how God spoke to David (PBUH) about his appointment, in the book of Psalms 2:7.

The whole Qur'anic passage above is full of the highest mystic meaning,

which is reflected in the short rhymed verses in the original. Both of the rhythm and the meaning in the text suggest the highest mystery. For easier comparison I reproduce the four verses together –

وَهَلْ أَتَاكَ حَدِيثُ مُوسَى

And has the story of Moses reached you? –

إِذْ رَأَى نَارًا فَقَالَ لِأَهْلِهِ امْكُثُوا إِنِّي آنَسْتُ نَارًا لَّعَلِّي آتِيكُم مِّنْهَا بِقَبَسٍ أَوْ أَجْدُ عَلَى النَّارِ هُدًى

When he saw a fire and said to his family, “Stay here; indeed, I have perceived a fire; perhaps I can bring you a torch or find at the fire some guidance.”

فَلَمَّا أَتَاهَا نُودِيَ يَمُوسَى

And when he came to it, he was called, “O Moses,

إِنِّي أَنَا رَبُّكَ فَأَخْلَعْ نَعْلَيْكَ إِنَّكَ بِالْوَادِ الْمُقَدَّسِ طَوًى

*Indeed, I am your Lord, so remove your sandals. Indeed, you are in the sacred valley of Tuwa.**

Surah Ta-Ha (Holy Qur'an 20:9–12)

* **Tuwa** was the valley just below Mount Sinai, where subsequently Moses (PBUH) was to receive the Law. In the parallel mystic meaning, we are selected by trials in this humble life, whose valley is just sacred and receive God's glory just as much as the heights of the Mount (*Tur*) Sinai, if we but have the insight to perceive it, and the ‘**shoes**’ were to put off as a mark of respect. In the parallel mystic meaning again, Moses (PBUH) was now to put away his mere worldly interests, and anything of mere worldly utility, he having been chosen by the Most High God.

WHAT IS YOUR VERDICT?

How is one, inured to folklore and fairy tales to evaluate this pure elixir from heaven? Even a sympathetic critic like Thomas Carlyle, one of the greatest thinkers of the past century could not fathom its incisive brevity and perspicuousness. He called the Qur'anic reading –

“A wearisome, confused jumble, crude, incondite,...
unsupportable stupidity in short...”

Incondite, meaning a badly constructed literary or artistic composition: and ‘**unsupportable stupidity?**’ After contrasting the Qur’anic and Biblical narrations, how would your verdict go? I have yet to come across a journalist who failed to recognize the brilliance of Muhammad (?) (Peace be upon Him), in dictating direct facts, without any attempt on his part at analyzing or interpreting it: exactly as a master journalist would do for today’s newspaper or magazine. **It is nothing short of the miraculous! Do you agree?**

CHAPTER FOUR

MIRACULOUS BOOK OF TELEGRAMS

The Holy Qur'an can be appropriately described as **'A book of Telegrams.'** For this is how the Book was revealed in the form of telegraphically addressed messages in answer to the questions on:

1. ALCOHOL AND GAMES OF CHANCE

يَسْأَلُونَكَ عَنِ الْخَمْرِ وَالْمَيْسِرِ

They ask you about wine and gambling

قُلْ فِيهِمَا إِثْمٌ كَبِيرٌ

Say,¹⁸³ "In them is great sin

وَمَنْفَعٌ لِلنَّاسِ

and (yet, some) benefit for people.

وَإِثْمُهُمَا أَكْبَرُ مِنْ نَفْعِهِمَا

But their sin is greater than their benefit."

183 **"SAY"** That is Muhammad (PBUH) is commanded to **answer**: "Tell them!" O Muhammad! "Proclaim, express it in words, utter aloud, pronounce, speak out!"

وَيَسْأَلُونَكَ مَاذَا يُنْفِقُونَ^ص

And they ask you what they should spend.

قُلِ الْعَفْوَ^ظ

Say,¹⁸⁴ “The excess (beyond needs).”

كَذَلِكَ يُبَيِّنُ اللَّهُ لَكُمْ الْآيَاتِ

Thus Allah makes clear to you the verses (of revelation)

لَعَلَّكُمْ تَتَفَكَّرُونَ

that you might give thought.

Surah al-Baqarah (Holy Qur'an 2:219)¹⁸⁵

QUR'AN AND HADITH

The above is just one example of how God speaks! Other examples are to follow. Can any sincere seeker of truth be convinced in any easier way? The answer is ‘**No!**’ Yet he (God) reasons with the recalcitrant in the following words:-

قُلْ هَلْ يَسْتَوِي الْأَعْمَىٰ وَالْبَصِيرُ

Say, “Is the blind equivalent to the seeing?”

Surah ar-Ra'd (Holy Qur'an 13:16)

Of course not!

Now compare the above Words of God Almighty on the subject of “WINE” (intoxicants) with the words of His Chosen Messenger Muhammad Mustafa (PBUH), NOT FORGETTING that the above verse 2:219 and what follows from **Hadith** below were heard from the Prophet (PBUH) and recorded by his Companions.

184 The same command with the same import.

185 I cannot urge too strongly upon my Muslim brethren to memorize the verses with their meaning and share it with all who will give you a hearing.

Ibn Anas (RA) reported that the Messenger of Allah cursed everyone who was associated any way with the production and consumption of any kind of intoxicating beverages. He said:

1. **Cursed is he who grows grapes for brewing.**¹⁸⁶
2. **Cursed is he who sells it.**
3. **Cursed is he who crushes it.**
4. **Cursed is he who bottles its,** and
5. **Cursed is he who drinks it,** or words to this effect,

The Holy Prophet (PBUH) is also reported to have said:

“Whatever intoxicates if taken in greater quantity is also forbidden in smaller quantity.”

There is no excuse in the House of Islam for a nip or a tot, unlike Paul’s advice to Timothy –

“Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomach’s sake and thine often infirmities.”

(Holy Bible) 1 Timothy 5:23

Or Solomon’s sanguine yet humorous recommendation for enslaving and subjugating a conquered people:

***“Give strong drink¹⁸⁷ unto him that he is ready to perish,
and wine unto those that be of heavy heart.”
“Let them drink, and forget his poverty, and
Remember his misery no more.”***

(Holy Bible) Proverbs 31:6-7

Lest we forget, please look again at the Qur’anic diction and the words of the Prophet (PBUH) above, and you cannot help agreeing that the two are

186 It is the brewing or fermenting that invites the curse. Otherwise, the planting of fruit trees for the purpose of eating or selling their fruits is an act of virtue for which Allah will reward us.

187 **“Hard liquor is for sick men at the brink of death and wine for those in deep depression.”** Is the alternative rendering of the verses in the **“Living Bible,”** not a sure death to the dying?

worlds apart in style, structure, and sublimity though articulated by the same lips.

Another example of replying telegraphically to a question regarding the –

2. NEW MOONS

يَسْأَلُونَكَ عَنِ الْأَهْلِ

They ask you, (O Muhammad), about the new moons

قُلْ هِيَ مَوَاقِيتُ لِلنَّاسِ وَالْحَجِّ

Say, "They are measurements of time for the people and for Hajj."

Surah al-Baqarah (Holy Qur'an 2:189)

"There were many superstitions connected with the New Moon, as there are to the present day. We are told to disregard such superstitions. As a measure of time, where the lunar calendar is used, the New Moon is one great sign, for which people watch with eagerness. Muslim festivals, including the Pilgrimage are fixed by the appearance of the New Moon."

A telegram, in an identical vein to the question of –

3. C-H-A-R-I-T-Y

يَسْأَلُونَكَ مَاذَا يُنْفِقُونَ

They ask you, (O Muhammad), what they should spend.

قُلْ مَا أَنْفَقْتُمْ مِنْ خَيْرٍ فَلِلْوَالِدَيْنِ وَالْأَقْرَبِينَ وَالْيَتَامَى
وَالْمَسْكِينِ

Say, "Whatever you spend of good is [to be] for parents and relatives and orphans

وَأَبْنِ السَّبِيلِ

and the needy and the traveler.

وَمَا تَفْعَلُوا مِنْ خَيْرٍ فَإِنَّ اللَّهَ بِهِ عَلِيمٌ

And whatever you do of good – indeed, Allah is Knowing of it.”

Surah al-Baqarah (Holy Qur'an 2:215)

“Three question arise in charity:

- (a) What shall we give?
- (b) To whom shall we give?
- (c) How shall we give?

The answer is here, giving anything that is good, useful, helpful, valuable. It may be property or money; it may be a helpful hand; it may be advice, it may be a kind word: **“WHATEVER YE DO THAT IS GOOD” is charity**. On the other hand, if you throw away what is useless, there is no charity in it, or if you give something with harmful intent, e.g. a sword to a madman, or a drug or sweets or even money someone whom you want to entrap or corrupt, **IT IS NO CHARITY BUT A GIFT OF DAMNATION.**”

TO WHOM SHOULD YOU GIVE?

It may be tempting to earn the world's praise by a gift that will be talked about, but are you meeting the needs of those who have the first claim on you? If you are not, **YOU ARE A PERSON WHO DEFRAUDS CREDITORS**: is it not charity!

“Every gift is judged by its unselfish character: the degree of need or claim is a factor which you must consider; if you disregard it, there is something selfish behind it.

HOW SHOULD IT BE GIVEN?

“As in the sight of Allah; it shuts out all pretence, show, and insincerity.”

Abdullah Yusuf Ali

Muhammad (PBUH) received yet another telegram in answer to the query in the nature of:-

4. THE SOUL

وَيَسْأَلُونَكَ عَنِ الرُّوحِ

And they ask you, (O Muhammad), about the soul.

قُلِ الرُّوحُ مِنْ أَمْرِ رَبِّي

Say, "The soul is of the affair of my Lord.

وَمَا أُوتِيتُمْ مِنَ الْعِلْمِ إِلَّا قَلِيلًا

And mankind have not been given of knowledge except a little."

Surah al-Isra (Holy Qur'an 17:85)

I cannot help over-emphasising the fact that THE RECITATION OF THE HOLY QUR'AN IS UNLIKE ANY OTHER BOOK ON EARTH. IT SPEAKS STRAIGHT AND TO THE POINT. THERE ARE NO IFS AND BUTS. NO PREVARICATIONS, NO BEATING ABOUT THE BUSH. In the whole vast volume you will not get the type of script out which a "box-office hit," or a record breaking film like the "**Ten Commandments**," "**Samson and Delilah**," or a "**David and Bath-sheba**" can be produced for the silver screen – the cinema. In this regard the Holy Bible is the script writer's delight. It is all there for easy transmuting into pots of gold!

While we are at it, let me remind my readers that search as you may you will not find within the covers of the Holy Qur'an even the name of Muhammad's (PBUH) father or mother. You will not discover the names of his wives or the names of his daughters, nor the names of his beloved companions. Amazingly! Though you will find a whole chapter dedicated to Mary, the mother of Jesus Christ (PBUH)...**Surah Maryam**, or Mary, chapter 19 of the Holy Qur'an. **Jesus (PBUH) is mentioned in this Book of God no less than twenty-five times, whereas the name of the Prophet (PBUH) only five times.** Reason? Are Jesus and his mother more important than Muhammad and his mother (Peace be Upon Them)? "No! Not at all" Then why this ordinate coverage? Simply because the integrity of Jesus and his mother (Peace be upon Them) was at stake. There were various false charges, insinuations and innuendos against mother and son which had to be cleared. Hence the

story of the annunciation, the immaculate conception and the birth of Jesus (PBUH) had to be recorded. Nobody ever questioned the genealogy of the Prophet of Islam at any time, therefore not a word was wasted in the whole book about the Prophet's birth or parentage. **The Qur'an is not a biography of Muhammad (PBUH)!** This is difficult for the unbeliever to understand.

Let us give one more example of the telegraphic communication from the Holy Qur'an on the subject of the Last Day, the End of Time, that is –

5. THE FINAL HOUR

يَسْأَلُونَكَ عَنِ السَّاعَةِ أَيَّانَ مُرْسَلُهَا

They ask you, (O Muhammad), about the Hour: when is its arrival?

قُلْ إِنَّمَا عِلْمُهَا عِنْدَ رَبِّي لَا يُجَلِّيهَا لِوَقْتِهَا إِلَّا هُوَ

Say, "Its knowledge is only with my Lord. None will reveal its time except Him.

ثَقُلَتْ فِي السَّمَوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضِ لَا تَأْتِيكُمُ إِلَّا بَغْتَةً

It lays heavily upon the heavens and the earth. It will not come upon you except unexpectedly."

Surah al-A'raf (Holy Qur'an 7:187)

It will be worthwhile to compare this one verse above with the whole of chapter thirteen of the Gospel of St. Mark, which uses all of the thirty seven verses there to reach the conclusion of the single **Ayah** (verse) above. A simple test to distinguish man-made books from the Word of God. You will find the Qur'an free from frills and verboseness.

My other examples can be given from the Book of God to prove that its narration is not in the style of men; that it is an absolutely unique Book. In fact a volume can be written on this theme itself. However we will end this chapter with one last example from the Holy Qur'an. It is a classical short chapter of only four verses. All the four verses put together are less in wording than the five examples of a single verse each given above. I give you below a replica of that short **Surah** (chapter).

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

In the name of Allah, the Entirely Merciful, the Especially Merciful.

قُلْ هُوَ اللَّهُ أَحَدٌ

Say, "He is Allah, (who is) One;

اللَّهُ الصَّمَدُ

Allah, the Eternal Refuge.

لَمْ يَلِدْ وَلَمْ يُولَدْ

He neither begets nor is born,

وَلَمْ يَكُنْ لَهُ كُفُوًا أَحَدٌ

Nor is there to Him any equivalent."

Surah al-Ikhlās (Holy Qur'an 112:1–4)

In the complete translation of A. Yusuf Ali,¹⁸⁸ You will find his elucidations. They are infallible. The word of God **IS THE ARABIC TEXT** you see above, and the **English** is accepted as the best human effort at translation.

I will now give you my own observation from the angle of Revelation that we are discussing, e.g., Divine Inspiration – Word of God, under the title:

6. ACID TEST THEOLOGY

On the authority of the Messenger of Allah, it is universally accepted that a Muslim reciting the above four verses in its original form, three times, will derive the spiritual blessings of reading the whole Qur'an. What makes this short Surah (chapter) so invaluable? It is not the sound, nor the music of that inimitable symphony which move men to ecstasy and tears. It is the message, that acid test of religion which gives it that high and sublime status.

There is not a theology, or a concept of God which is out of the purview

¹⁸⁸ You will do yourself and your Muslim and non-Muslim friends a great favour by making this translation available to them.

of these four short verses. They are the touchstones about the knowledge of God. Through these you can accept or reject any idea of God, or know right from wrong. This is exactly like the **“touchstone”** the jeweller use for testing gold. Ask a jeweller friend how a touchstone works. How did our Qur’anic touchstone come about?

FROM THE “HEAD COMPUTER”

Arrangements were under way for me to visit Zambia on a lecture tour in mid-1975. I received a phone call from Lusaka that an air ticket was sent to Durban which I could pick up from the headquarters of the South African Airways in the city centre. I walked up to the airways office and approached the information counter and told the man in charge that I had come to pick up my air ticket which had been sent from Lusaka. He told me to see one of the ladies, out of a dozen that were seated in a semi-circle, each with a computer terminal with a visual screen in front. As most of them were attending to other customers, I asked “which one?” The officer was obviously irritated and flayed his hands and said roughly, “Any one!” pointing in the direction of the seated ladies.

At that moment, I could not understand the reason for this otherwise polite gentlemen getting ruffled with my humble and innocent question. I was looking forward to receiving a long booklet of ticket vouchers. I had handled and used them a few times before in my life so there was no mistaking in what I was anticipating. How can any one of those women have my ticket? I wondered. But the irritated tone of the man’s voice left me to no choice but to seek further information as indicated.

Sheepishly, I approached the first lady that I saw free to serve and told her of my mission. I was informed about a ticket waiting to be picked up. She asked me my name which I spelled out for her. As I spelt it, she began typing it on the keyboard before her. She was watching the screen as she typed. I could not see the wording from where I stood. She nodded her head and said, “Yes,” suggesting that she had got it. I said that I wanted to leave Durban for Johannesburg on the Tuesday evening. She offered me a 6 p.m. flight which I accepted, and she punched a few more words on the keyboard. I told her, further, that I wanted to leave Johannesburg to arrive in Lusaka at about 3 p.m. the next day. That was the instruction from my hosts there as they wanted the news media and the TV news to cover my arrivals. She typed some more words and enquired whether I wanted to go to Lusaka via Gaborone or Maputo.

I said, it didn't matter as long as I arrived at my destination on Wednesday at 3 p.m. She hit the keyboard again and scanning the screen said, "I am sorry but you are booked on Zambian Airlines and we cannot transfer your ticket to another airline because we cannot contact Zambian Airlines today as they are closed on account of a national holiday in that country." So I was asked to return the next day. Very interesting! I thought, but I was sorely disappointed as the ticket was almost within my reach but not within my grasp. I still imagined that she had the tickets in her desk drawer.

IGNORANCE REMOVED

In my puzzlement, I asked her, "Where did you get all that information from?" she said, "It was from the Head Computer in Johannesburg" she was kind enough to explain further that every other computer in the country with similar end terminals had access to that computer at the press of a button. I enquired that whilst she was trying to book me on that 6 p.m. flight to Johannesburg, and if there was only one seat left, and if there were other terminals trying for that seat, what would happen? She said the first one within the second would get the seat and the rest would draw a blank. I thanked her profusely and left the airways building.

On my way back to my office, my mind began to buzz with ideas. This is how it happened, I thought, I mean the **wahy** (the revelation of God to Muhammad (PBUH) His Chosen Messenger, came from the "Head Computer" – THE PRESERVED TABLET!

بَلْ هُوَ قُرْءَانٌ مَّجِيدٌ

But this is an honored Qur'an

فِي لَوْحٍ مَّحْفُوظٍ

(Inscribed) in a Preserved Slate.

Surah al-Buruj (Holy Qur'an 85:21–22)

This "**Tablet**" is not like the one Moses (PBUH) used for inscribing the Ten Commandments, a tablet of a stone. It is unlike the ones teachers use in schools, called "blackboards" or "green boards". Neither it is the Tablet of a computer screen or the silicone chip. It is God's Own tablet guarded and protected; it is not to be understood in any material sense for it is not

made of stone or metal, IT IS SPIRITUAL! How does it operate? We can only guess –

CHRISTIANS FROM NAJRAN

Whilst Islam was getting a firm foothold in Madinah, the reputation of the Messenger of God spread throughout the length and breadth of Arabia. A community of Arab Christians living in Najran, around Yemen, heard that an Arab in Arabia was now claiming Divine inspiration and had proclaimed himself to be the mouthpiece of God – a Prophet. A deputation set out for Madinah to cross-examine the Prophet, to match their wits against his test his knowledge about God and religion in general.

On their arrival they were housed in the *Masjid-e-Nabawi* (the mosque of the Prophet): a simple structure of mud walls with a thatched roof of palm leaves. The Christians, ate and slept in the Mosque and had discussions with the Messenger of Allah for three days and three nights in the mosque. The details of the dialogue can be found in the Books of Traditions.

During the course of the dialogue, the spokesman for the Christians, amongst many other things, posed the question, **“Now tell us O Muhammad, what is your concept of God?”** The Prophet did not prevaricate, he did not beat around the bush, fumbling for words and ideas, to gather his thoughts, as anyone of us would have done if we did not have a ready answer. Muhammad (PBUH), so to speak, presses his spiritual buttons (there were no buttons to press) but as I said, **“So to speak.”** As if, like the lady above, in the airways office contacting the “Head Computer” He is seeking an answer from Allah through the “PRESERVED TABLET”, the head computer of all revelational knowledge. He is asking, again I said, so to speak “O my Lord! What shall I say?” Came the answer –

قُلْ هُوَ اللَّهُ أَحَدٌ

Say, “He is Allah, (who is) One

اللَّهُ الصَّمَدُ

Allah, the Eternal Refuge.

لَمْ يَلِدْ وَلَمْ يُولَدْ

He neither begets nor is born,

وَلَمْ يَكُنْ لَهُ كُفُوًا أَحَدٌ

Nor is there to Him any equivalent.”

Surah al-Ikhlās (Holy Qur'an 112:1–4)

After uttering the above formula on the Purity of Faith, the conversation returned to the usual discourse of words. No Arab worth his name could have missed the difference in tone and intensity between the two discourses. The words above were not the Prophet's but were God's words. They were literally being put into his mouth. While he recited them, he was only being used as a mouthpiece of God, like the “speaker” in the radio. This data material was programmed into his own, God-given, computer, into his heart and mind a decade earlier in Makkah, under identical circumstances. At that time he was being prodded by the Jews who were trying to trip him on the subject of the “identity and genealogy of God.” Not unlike the Pharisees of old who were dogging the footsteps of Jesus, their awaited Messiah (PBUH).

The foregoing is a perfect example of how God Almighty sent His revelation to his chosen Messenger – by verbal inspiration – and how His Messenger had it protected and preserved, and how His human mouthpiece used and re-used that Message, and how we, the followers of the Prophet (PBUH), are to have that Message imbibed to use it at every opportunity.

In the religious literature of the word there is nothing to compare with even this short chapter of **Surah al-Ikhlās** quoted above! If this chapter 112 is the acid test of theology- God's concentrated word, then the rest of the Qur'anic text is its explanation, with which we are to discover the Qualities of God, and avoid the pitfalls into which men and nations have fallen repeatedly in trying to understand God.

CHAPTER FIVE

GOD - UNIQUE IN HIS ATTRIBUTES

God Almighty is absolutely unique in His Person and in His attributes. In no way is he to be compared, or comparable, with any other person or thing that we know or can imagine. In the last verse of the **Surah** quoted in the preceding chapter, we are reminded that not only **“Is nothing like Him, but nothing is in the likeness of Him that can be imagined.”** Then how can we know Him? We will realise him through His attributes.

The last and Final Revelation of God – the Holy Qur'an gives us ninety nine attributes of God with the crowning name – ALLAH! These ninety-nine attributes or names called **Asma-ul-husna** (the Most Beautiful names) are interspersed throughout the whole Qur'anic text, like a beautiful necklace of pearls with a magnificent pendant – Allah.

Here is a sample segment of that necklace;

هُوَ اللَّهُ الَّذِي لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا هُوَ

He is Allah, other than whom there is no deity,

الْمَلِكُ الْقُدُّوسُ السَّلَامُ

the Sovereign, the Pure, the Perfection,

الْمُؤْمِنُ الْمُهِمِّنُ

the Bestower of Faith, the Overseer,

الْعَزِيزُ الْجَبَّارُ الْمُتَكَبِّرُ

Exalted in Might, the Compeller, the Superior.

سُبْحَانَ اللَّهِ عَمَّا يُشْرِكُونَ

Exalted is Allah above whatever they associate with Him.

هُوَ اللَّهُ الْخَلِيقُ الْبَارِئُ الْمُصَوِّرُ

He is Allah, the Creator, the Inventor, the Fashioner;

لَهُ الْأَسْمَاءُ الْحُسْنَى

to Him belong the best names.

يُسَبِّحُ لَهُ مَا فِي السَّمَوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضِ

Whatever is in the heavens and earth, is exalting Him.

وَهُوَ الْعَزِيزُ الْحَكِيمُ

And He is the Exalted in Might, the Wise.

Surah al-Hashr (Holy Qur'an 59:23–24)

“THE MOST BEAUTIFUL NAMES”

In the two verses quoted above, we count thirteen of the ninety-nine attributes interspersed throughout the Holy Qur'an. Even the most jaundiced and inimical opponent of Islam will be forced to admit that even in its translated form the attributes and the phraseology are beautiful and unique. In its original Arabic the wordings and their construction are absolutely inimitable and sublime.

How could an **Ummiy**, an unlettered person, among an **ummiy** – unlearned nation contrive such a rhapsody of God fourteen hundred years ago? We must remember that there were no encyclopedias or treatises that Muhammad (PBUH) could consult even if they were lying around the deserts of Arabia. From where, then, did Muhammad (PBUH) get this treasure trove of theology? He said, “**It is all given to me by God**

through inspiration!”How else can we account for it?

It would be a good experiment to ask the most learned of our learned friends to conjure up some attributes of God for us. I assure you that with all their acquired knowledge the professors of theology and the doctors of divinity will not be able to recount even a dozen. The worldly-wise will say that **“You see, Muhammad was a genius, and after all a genius can excel ten times better than us!”** To which we respond: “It is true that a genius can do ten times better than us. The Prophet (PBUH) grace us ninety-nine attributes, but what makes his list **MIRACULOUS** and **DIVINE** is the one he left out of his list.” The word **“Father”**, that is Miracle!

THE FATHER IN HEAVEN

In our human list, no contributor will fail to utter the word FATHER in the first half-a-dozen attributes. The miracle of Muhammad’s (PBUH) list¹⁸⁹ is not the “ninety-nine” but this particular one which he kept out of his Qur’an. The word **“father”** as an attribute of God was dangled before him for the twenty-three years of his prophetic life. He eschewed it. He kept it out of his vocabulary (consciously and unconsciously) for over two decades and hence out of the theology of Islam.

You have a right to ask me, “What about the Christians’ Lord’s Prayer?” Yes, what about it? Read it Mr Deedat! So I read:

“O our father which art in heaven, hallowed by thy name; thy kingdom come, thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven.”

“What is wrong that?” you ask. “Nothing!” Then why are the Muslims so allergic to it? I am not so jaundiced as our opponents. We have to acknowledge that the Christian prayer is a beautiful prayer but there are certain deficiencies in it. You see my child will never ever learn God’s name through this prayer. What is his name? In all twenty-seven books of the New Testament God’s name does not occur even once! **“Father”** is given here as a substitute. This is not His name! As an attribute, meaning – Lord, God, Creator, Provider, I can take no exception to it. **“The loving Father in Heaven. O our Heavenly Father!”** etc. We Muslims take exception to the new meaning, the acquired connotation of the word **Father**.

¹⁸⁹ This is **not** Muhammad’s list. The Qur’an is **not** his handiwork. I am using these terms in a manner of speaking to the unbeliever.

ONLY BEGOTTEN SON ETC.

In Christian theology, this simple, innocent word “Father” has acquired a novel meaning. He is, according to Christianity, the One who **BEGOT** the son Jesus. They say in their catechism¹⁹⁰ Jesus is the very God of very God, **begotten** of the Father, **begotten** not made.” If words have any meaning, what does this mean? Of course it means what it says! God has many sons according to the Holy Bible. Adam, Israel, Ephraim, David, Solomon, etc...But all these are metaphorical sons. God Almighty as the creator and Cherisher is metaphorically the father of His every creature: every animal or human being; but Jesus (PBUH), the Christians say, is not like these. He was **BEGOTTEN**, not **MADE**! This according to Islam is the most abominable utterance, attributing to God an animal nature – the lower animal function of sex!

MEANINGS CHANGE

In the beginning the word “Father” for God did not carry any blasphemous associations, but words do change in their meanings at times. I will give you just two as examples “**Comrade**” and “**gay**.”

“**Comrade**”: originally a beautiful and innocent word, meaning-a friend, an associate or a companion derived from the Old French **comrade**, roommate or soldier sharing the same room. But today the same word stinks in the nostrils of the Americans as a “commie”, a communist, a member of the Marxist-Leninist party, any radical viewed as a subversive or revolutionary who should be eliminated as a pest or parasite. If any foolish friend addresses you today as COMRADE in the United States, he could jeopardize your career, as well as your life!

“**Gay**.” What is wrong with this word? Nothing at all! I learnt this word in my early schooling as showing or characterized by **cheerfulness** and **light-hearted excitement**; a merry person. I was taught to sing-

“GENTLE LORDS AND LADIES GAY

ON THE MOUNTAIN DAWNS THE DAY.”

I have forgotten the balance of the poem. Here, I understood the meaning of the word “gay” to mean happy and joyous. I did not have the slightest

190 Catechism A short book giving, in question-and-answer form, a brief summary of the basic principles of a religion, especially Christianity.

inkling that one day such an innocuous word which children learn at school would in time acquire a filthy, dirty meaning of being homosexual: sodomites and catamites in its very primary sense. So “LADIES GAY” would mean today- LADIES LESBIAN! In like manner the respectable word “Father has become contaminated by the belief of – **“the only BEGOTTEN of the Father!”** etc.

RABB OR ABB

God Almighty through Muhammad (PBUH) has protected Islam and the Muslims by keeping the word “Father” (**ABB**) for God, out of its religious vocabulary. It is a miraculous fact that though the Holy Qur’an lists ninety-nine attributes to God, including the word **RABB** which means – Lord, Cherisher, Sustainer, Evolver, etc, (this attributes **Rabb** occurs dozens of times in the Book of God!) – But the easier word **Abb**, meaning “Father” in Arabic and in Hebrew, is not used even once, thus preserving the Muslims from the blasphemy of the only BEGOTTEN son! To whom must we give credit for his feat: Allah or Muhammad (PBUH). The Holy Prophet (PBUH) disclaims any credit, always saying that all this is given to him by inspiration, the words ye hear are not his, they are **God’s word** as dictated to him!

CHAPTER SIX

SOLVING CONTROVERSY

The Holy Qur'an is one huge Miracle. It is a Book of Miracles which may be expounded from innumerable points of views. I have tried from some simple aspects to share with you that which I, as a layman was enthralled with. There is no end to this research. I leave this task to my more learned brethren, and the erudite scholars of Islam. May I live to see their efforts. Let me end with this, my final example, for this short publication.

CALL TO SWAZILAND

A few years ago, a controversy arose in Swaziland. King Sobuza lost his Queen elect. The Christian churches in the country began quibbling on the subject of the period of waiting before a man can remarry. It was not such a serious problem for discussion because the King still had eight more wives. So, the topic changed to **“How long must a woman wait if her husband dies.”** As the debate was raging furiously in the tiny Kingdom, the benevolent King ordered a synod of all the Churches in the country to thrash out the problem.

Mr. Moosa Borman, a Swazi brother who had embraced Islam, sought permission from the King to have his “Church” (Islam) also represented in the debate. With the King's blessings, I too was honoured to attend the discussion.

One Sunday morning, in the King's kraal, representatives of the various denominations of Christianity gathered to arrive at some consensus on the period of widowhood.

Speaker after speaker delivered his discourse. God Almighty had gifted the African, each and everyone is a potential Billy Graham or Jimmy Swaggart!

At the end of each sermon the audience applauded enthusiastically. The next speaker came and he brushed off his predecessor with the expression **“paalish”** (meaning porridge), implying rubbish, garbage! and performed to resounding applause. From Morning to evening the performance went on. Around 5 p.m., my turn came. With the volume of the Holy Qur'an you see on the cover of this booklet, in my hands, I began, “From morning till night, we have been fumbling for an answer, as to how long is a woman to wait before remarrying after the demise of her husband: and we have heard what the Old Testament says and what the New Testament says, but we have not yet got the answer! Because the solution to our problem is in the -

“LAST TESTAMENT”

“The last Testament” was a bombshell for the Christian priests and preachers. They had never heard the expression THE LAST TESTAMENT in their lives. “Quoting OLD and NEW, NEW and OLD will not help because the answer is in the LAST TESTAMENT of God to mankind! I brandished the Book above my head, and read only the English of the Holy Qur'an, chapter 2 verse 234. A reference which is very easy to remember – 2:234, just 2234!

وَالَّذِينَ يُتَوَفَّوْنَ مِنْكُمْ وَيَذَرُونَ أَزْوَاجًا

And those who are taken in death among you and leave wives behind –

يَتَرَبَّصْنَ بِأَنْفُسِهِنَّ أَرْبَعَةَ أَشْهُرٍ وَعَشْرًا

they, (the wives, shall) wait four months and ten (days).

فَإِذَا بَلَغْنَ أَجَلَهُنَّ فَلَا جُنَاحَ عَلَيْكُمْ فِيمَا فَعَلْنَ فِي أَنْفُسِهِنَّ
بِالْمَعْرُوفِ

And when they have fulfilled their term, then there is no blame upon you for what they do with themselves in an acceptable manner.

وَاللَّهُ بِمَا تَعْمَلُونَ خَبِيرٌ

And Allah is (fully) Acquainted with what you do.

Surah al-Baqarah (Holy Qur'an 2:234)

I asked the audience, “FOUR MONTHS AND TEN DAYS, do you need any interpretation!?” They all answered in chorus, “NO!” I explained to the learned clergy the wisdom behind the period of “four months and ten days.” In the preceding verses, in this Last and Final Testament of God, we are told about the period of waiting after divorce:

وَالْمُطَلَّقَاتُ يَتَرَبَّصْنَ بِأَنْفُسِهِنَّ ثَلَاثَةَ قُرُوءٍ

Divorced women remain in waiting for three periods...

Surah al-Baqarah (Holy Qur'an 2:228)

This is the order to see that the marriage conditionally dissolved was likely to result in an issue. Whereas in the case of widowhood an extra period of one month and ten days are prescribed. Very logical everyone will agree, but what is miraculous about this? Any wise man could have guessed these 3 months period after divorce and 4 months and ten days after the demise of the husband. Muhammad's (PBUH) guess is as good as anybody else's! This is true, but the proof that all his healthy useful teaching is not Muhammad's (PBUH) handiwork is in the verse following the 4 months and ten days period:

وَلَا جُنَاحَ عَلَيْكُمْ فِيمَا عَرَّضْتُمْ بِهِ مِنْ خِطْبَةِ النِّسَاءِ أَوْ أَكْنَنْتُمْ فِي أَنْفُسِكُمْ

There is no blame upon you for that to which you (indirectly) allude concerning a proposal to women or for what you conceal within yourselves.

عَلِمَ اللَّهُ أَنَّكُمْ سَتَذْكُرُونَهُنَّ

Allah knows that you will have them in mind.

وَلَكِنْ لَا تُوَاعِدُوهُنَّ سِرًّا إِلَّا أَنْ تَقُولُوا قَوْلًا مَّعْرُوفًا

But do not promise them secretly except for saying a proper saying.

وَلَا تَعْزِمُوا عُقْدَةَ النِّكَاحِ حَتَّى يَبْلُغَ الْكِتَابُ أَجَلَهُ

And do not determine to undertake a marriage contract until the decreed period reaches its end.

Surah al-Baqarah (Holy Qur'an 2:235)

GOD'S FINGERPRINT

“Do not resolve to the tying of the marriage knot till the fixed period of waiting is over.” This is not Muhammad’s (PBUH) cleverness! This is the Wisdom of the All-Wise God. The Omniscient Creator knows the weaknesses of his creatures. Man in his greed and cupidity will take unfair advantage of the poor distraught widow. She has just lost her backbone and support the breadwinner. She has a number of little mouths to feed and she has also perhaps lost her books and value in the marriage market has diminished. She is likely to clutch at any straw. In her emotional, unsettled condition when a predator makes the proposal. In her haste and insecurity she might readily accept. The Master Psychologist (not Muhammad PBUH) is fully aware of, all the snares laid by men. Hence the warning – **“NO CONTRACT until the appointed term is fulfilled!”**

The ‘**iddat**’¹⁹¹ after a divorce is three months. Here she is given an extra 40 days to regain her equilibrium. In the meantime, if suggestions of marriage had come, she would have the opportunity of discussing the matter dispassionately with her friends and relatives. She could avoid the pitfalls of a hasty acceptance with a long drawn out and painful development. Did Muhammad (PBUH) think and work out all these ramifications in the desert fourteen hundred years ago? Alas, you give him too much credit! He is made to repeat again and again that the Qur’anic Wisdom is not his making, **“It is no less than an inspiration sent down to him”**¹⁹² by his Benevolent Creator. If you still doubt his testimony then meet his challenge. He is made to say:

191 ‘**Iddat**’: period of waiting after divorce or after bereavement.

192 Holy Qur'an 53:4

قُلْ لِّئِنْ أَجْتَمَعَتِ الْإِنْسُ وَالْجِنُّ

“Say: If the whole of mankind and Jinns were to gather together

عَلَى أَنْ يَأْتُوا بِمِثْلِ هَذَا الْقُرْآنِ

to produce the like of this Qur'an,

لَا يَأْتُونَ بِمِثْلِهِ

they could not produce the lie thereof,

وَلَوْ كَانَ بَعْضُهُمْ لِبَعْضٍ ظَهِيرًا

even if they backed up each other with help and support.”

Surah al-Isra (Holy Qur'an 17:88)

The world is challenging to produce a Book like the Holy Qur'an and has not produced one in fourteen centuries. The Arab Christians who boast a population of 15 million today, not to be out done, have produced the Christian gospels in Qur'anic style. They have plagiarized¹⁹³ the Holy Qur'an by stealing words and phrases and even the style, not forgetting the ***Bismillah!***¹⁹⁴ Every chapter of their mist modern invention begins with the first verse of the Qur'anic Revelation. You have to see it to believe it. Here is a Photostat of their new man-made “revelation.” (p228)

Here is another proof, if proof was needed that Qur'an is inimitable. Try as you might. The challenge still stands. The Holy Qur'an is God's Word revealed to Muhammad (PBUH) **and it is the Miracle of Miracles!**

“AND A MIRACLE INDEED IT IS!”

Rev. Bosworth Smith

193 Plagiarize: To steal and use (the ideas or writings of another) as one's own.

194 The formula – **“In the name of Allah, Most Gracious, Most Merciful”** with which each chapter of the Holy Qur'an begins.



THE CHOICE

Islam & Christianity

VOLUME TWO

BY
AHMED DEEDAT

ADDENDUM

The ink had hardly dried on the first print order in April, 1993 of 10 000 copies of the book “THE CHOICE”, when Ahmed Deedat was inundated with call from all around the world clamouring for copies. Alhamdulillah! By the timely assistance of well-wishers another 10 000 copies were printed, ¹testimony to the amazing popularity of Ahmed Deedat’s discourses.

Amongst the enormous number of requests, readers argued that there was a need for second volume and hence the birth of the sequel “THE CHOICE” – VOLUME 2. Whereas the compilation of Volume 1 featuring the Miracle of the Qur’an and the role of our Prophet (PBUH) was in keeping with the Qur’anic teaching of the “Invite (all) to the way of thy Lord with Wisdom and Beautiful Preaching and Reason with them in ways that are Best and Most Gracious” (Surah 16 Verse 125), Volume 2 differs in strategy.

This selection examines the doctrine of the Divinity of Christ and the deep-rooted misconceptions of Christianity using the Qur’anic principle of say “Produce your Proof if ye are Truthful” (Surah 2 Verse 111). This demonstrates once again, Ahmed Deedat’s unparalleled knowledge and burning desire to share clear-cut evidences from Christian scriptures that destroy illogical arguments.

Sheikh Deedat, using the thread of logic, weaves a tapestry of Islamic thought and instruction in his own inimitable way. This enables the reader to avoid the minefield of distortions in our walk through life.

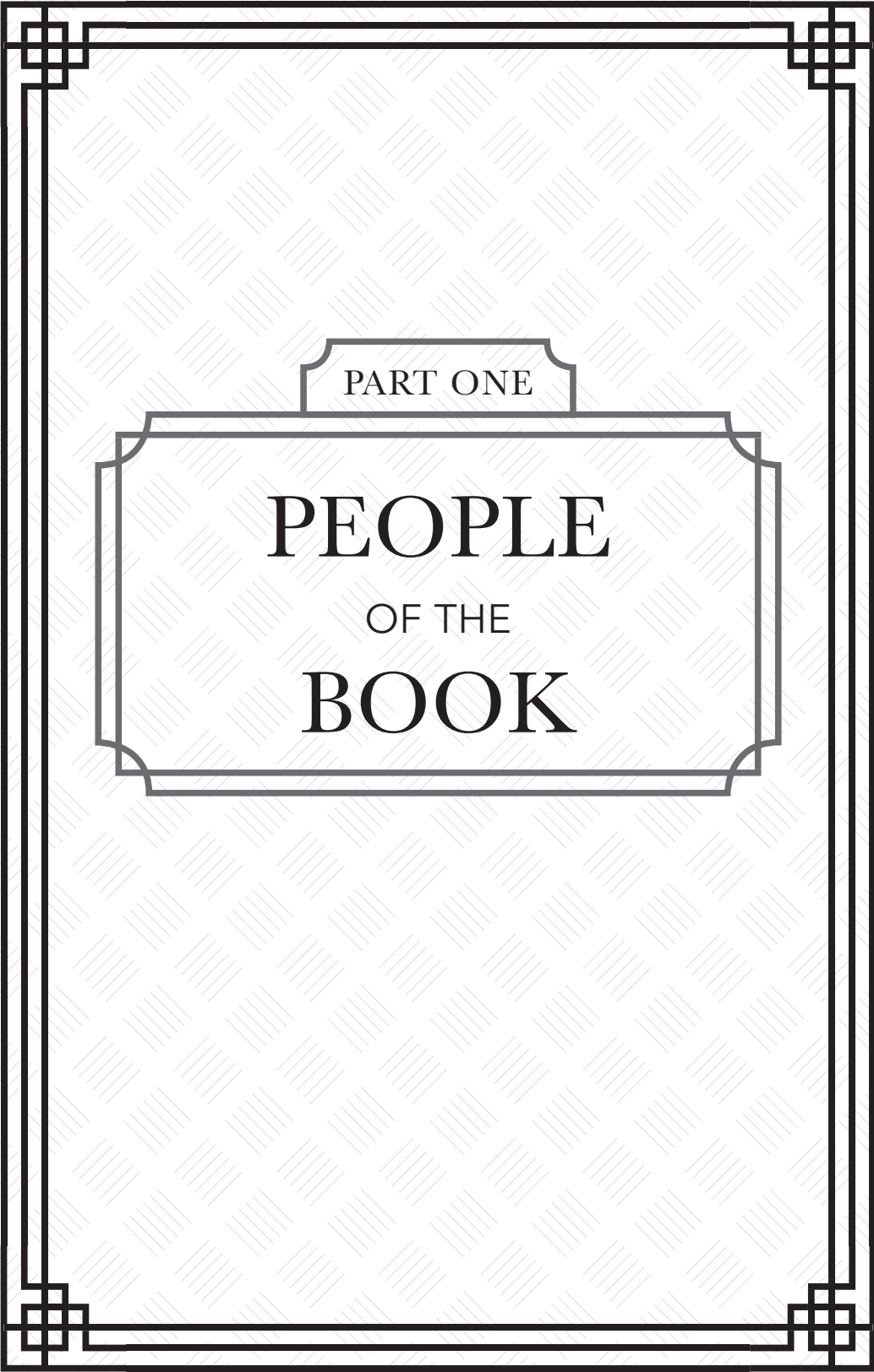
It is a perfect complement to the earlier volume, an invaluable companion to seelers of the Truth and a must for the bookshelf.

May ALLAH (SWT) give the pen of Ahmed Deedat more power and bless him abundantly for his ongoing efforts in keeping the blaze of Islam burning brightly, INSHA ALLAH!

Ebi Lockhat

18 JAMMAD-UL-AWWAL 1414/ NOVEMBER 3, 1993

¹ By May 1994 we have touched the 100 000 mark, and by the help of The Almighty are contemplating the publication of another 100 000 of Volume 1.



PART ONE

PEOPLE
OF THE
BOOK

CHAPTER ONE

OUR FIRST CUSTOMERS

كُنْتُمْ خَيْرَ أُمَّةٍ

You are the best nation,

أُخْرِجَتْ لِلنَّاسِ

produced (as an example) for mankind.

تَأْمُرُونَ بِالْمَعْرُوفِ

You enjoin what is right,

وَتَنْهَوْنَ عَنِ الْمُنْكَرِ

and forbid what is wrong,

وَتُؤْمِنُونَ بِاللَّهِ

and believe in Allah.

وَلَوْ ءَامَنَ أَهْلُ الْكِتَابِ

If only the People of the Scripture had believed,

لَكَانَ خَيْرًا لَهُمْ

it would have been better for them.

مِّنْهُمْ الْمُؤْمِنُونَ

Among them are believers,

وَأَكْثَرُهُمُ الْفَاسِقُونَ

*but most of them are defiantly disobedient.*¹⁹⁵

Surah Ali 'Imran (Holy Qur'an 3:110)

LEAVE THEM ALONE?

The above **Ayah** (verse) is one of the most versatile verses of the Holy Qur'an. I have heard dozens of lectures from our learned brethren reciting the first half of the **Ayah**, stopping at the word "Allah" followed by different dissertations. Indeed, I have done the same with the exposition of over half-a-dozen different topics.

During the Question and Answer session at the end of my lectures, in Newcastle¹⁹⁶, I was asked as to my reasons for not leaving the Jews and Christians alone in my discourse and writings. In answer to this question, I read the first half of the above verse and asked my audience to indicate the number of people who were familiar with the quotation. In the audience of about three hundred eleven brothers put up their hands. I then requested that if any of the eleven were Hafiz-ul-Qur'an they should put their hands down since they were expected to know the whole verse by virtue of their memorization of the Holy Qur'an. Three out of eleven put down their hands. I asked the remaining eight individually to complete the second half of the verse. There was a 100% failure. I too had been in the same boat with regard to the memorizing of this **Ayah** for a very long time.

In my experience, I have not yet heard an exposition of the second half this verse, and have also noted that none of the commentators of the Holy Qur'an have anything to say on it. It is as if there is some kind of conspiracy on their part. But there is no conspiracy. The first half of the **Ayah** is so versatile and adaptable, that every expositor delivers his message on righteous behavior and admonitions against straying from the path, based

195 I urge my Muslim readers to memorize this verse, phrase by phrase, with its meaning so as to open up a new world of Da'wah opportunities for them.

196 **Newcastle**: A town in Northern Natal, South Africa.

on this half of the verse. They appear to be content to conclude their comments on this half of the verse and bask in the satisfaction of a job well done.

The answer to the question, “**Why pick on the Jews and the Christians?**” is to be found in the second half of the Qur’anic quotation above, paraphrased, –

وَلَوْ ءَامَنَ أَهْلُ الْكِتَابِ

“If only the People of the Scripture had believed

لَكَانَ خَيْرًا لَهُمْ

it would have been better for them.

مِّنْهُمْ الْمُؤْمِنُونَ

Among them are believers,

وَأَكْثَرُهُمُ الْفَاسِقُونَ

but most of them are defiantly disobedient.”

Surah Ali 'Imran (Holy Qur'an 3:110)

At the very outset, in the verse introducing this treatise, Allah confers upon the **Ummah** the honour, privilege and high status of being “**The best of peoples evolved for mankind,**” i.e. “**...evolved for** (the good of) **mankind.**” This high honour and status imposes upon us, the duty and responsibility of selflessly sharing this noble status with the rest of mankind.

It is the **Ahle-Kitaab** – the People of the Book (the Jews and the Christians), with whom we should begin with since they have already been prepared for this Message. After all, numerous prophets have proclaimed the message to them. They do not deny possession of a Scripture and boast the revelation of the **Tauraat**, the **Zaboor** and the **Injeel**¹⁹⁷ by their respective prophets. Accordingly, they are the fittest and best prepared of people to accept the latest dispensation of Islam. They should have

197 “**Tauraat, Zaboor and Injeel**”: See part three of this volume for fuller explanation.

been the foremost in submitting their will to the Will of Allah in Islam – a renewal and a confirmation of the Revelation already with them. Yet they have been the first to reject it: and why the rejection? What are their considerations?

Nevertheless, theirs is not a totally lost case. Allah assures us that among the Jews and the Christians are some who are sincere, **“But the majority of them are perverted transgressors.”**

TO THE GOOD CHRISTIANS

We must apply the best methods of getting our Message through to both the goodly person as well as the rebellious, arrogant person. To the goodly among them open the Holy Qur'an and bring to light these verses of chapter three, beginning with verse 42:

And *(mention)* **when the angels said,**
“O Mary, indeed Allah has chosen you
And purified you and chosen you
Above the women of the worlds.
“O Mary, be devoutly obedient
To your Lord
And prostrate
And bow
With those who bow *(in prayer).*”

This is from the news
Of the unseen,
Which We reveal to you *(O Muhammad)*
And you were with them
When they cast their pens
As to which of them should
Be responsible for Mary.
Nor were you with them
When they disputed.

(And mention) **when the angels said,**
“O Mary, indeed Allah gives you
Good tidings of a word
From Him, whose name
Will be the Messiah, Jesus,
The son of Mary – distinguished
In this world and the Hereafter

**And among those
Brought near *(to Allah)*.**

**He will speak to the people
In the cradle and in maturity
And will be
Of the righteous.**

**She said, "My Lord,
How will I have a child
When no man has touched me?"**
(The angel) **said, "Such is Allah;
He creates what He wills.
When He decrees a matter,
He only says
To it, 'Be,' and it is.**

**And He will teach him
Writing and wisdom,
And the Torah the Gospel**

**And *(make him)*
A messenger to the Children
Of Israel, *(who will say)*,
"Indeed I have come to you
With a sign from your Lord
In that I design for you
From clay *(that which is)* like
The form of a bird,
Then I breathe into it
And it becomes a bird
By permission of Allah.
And I cure the
Blind and the leper,
And I give life the dead –
By permission of Allah.
And I inform you
Of what you eat and what you store
In your houses. Indeed
In that is a sign for you,
If you are believers."**

Surah Ali 'Imran (*Holy Qur'an* 3:42–49)

In your approach to the Christians, work on the assumption that every Christian is a good and sincere Christian unless they prove otherwise. Read the above Qura'nic verses – if possible on conjunction with their Arabic equivalent – phrase by phrase. You cannot imagine the tremendous impact Allah's words have on the listener. I have seen again and again that tears well up in the eyes of the listener exactly as recorded in the Noble Qur'an:

**And when they hear
What has been revealed
To the Messenger,
You see their eyes
Overflowing with tears
Because of what they have
Recognized of the truth...**

Surah al-Ma'idah (Holy Qur'an 5:83)

This is a positive approach. Treat them all with kindness and compassion they deserve. However, if they demonstrate their animosity, and pour out their venom against the Holy Prophet, the Holy Qur'an and Islam, we are entitled to change our approach. We have already been warned against such eventualities in the last phrase of the Ayah quoted at the beginning of this chapter –

وَأَكْثَرُهُمُ الْفَاسِقُونَ

But most of them are defiantly disobedient.

Surah Ali 'Imran (Holy Qur'an 3:110)

CHAPTER TWO

TURN THE TABLES

NEW CHRISTIAN STRATEGY

After fifteen years of strenuous efforts to obtain a visa to visit the Sudan, I received one, at last, in 1992. I was welcomed by that country, and conducted a lecture tour. The purpose of the tour was to arm my Muslim brethren against the Christian missionaries who are trying to gain ascendancy there. At question time at the end of my talks in Khartoum, a university student posed the question:

“Christian crusaders from Britain and America are knocking at our doors in Khartoum: We Muslims welcome them with our traditional Arab hospitality of *Ahlan Wa Sahlan* (loosely translated, means as being part of the family with no formalities).

“Once settled, these missionaries question us whether we Muslims believe in the Day of Judgment? Our response is ‘of course!’ They follow this up with another question: ‘After Judgment is established, you will inherit heaven if you deserve it or hell if you have earned it. Do you believe in it?’ Again our answer is ‘yes!’ In a well planned strategy, this is followed by a third question: ‘This Heaven of yours; where will it be located, on Earth or in the skies? What does your Qur’an say? We would like to know from you, Sir, as to what the answer is.’”

The dig is in the question – **“What does your Qur’an say?”** If you answer – “On Earth,” He will ask, “Show me! (i.e. in the Qur’an).” If you had answered – “In the skies,” He is ready with the same retort, “Show me!” The enemy is well-trained and well-armed. He has studied his clients closely. He has discovered that 90% of the Muslims, though they have their preferences, either for the “Earth” or the “Heavens,” they will not be

able to point to any specific verses in the Holy Qur'an to support them. This is exactly what he wants you to admit. Once you have admitted your inability to prove your point from the Holy Qur'an, then he will spring the trap and say, "Let me show you what my Bible says." He had given you the first opportunity to expound to him your Qur'an and since you had failed, you are now morally obliged to listen to his exposition. Common courtesy demands that you give him a hearing and we Muslims are courteous people.

After pummelling you into helpless submission he leaves behind a beautiful brochure in glorious technicolour entitled **"How to Find the Road to Paradise,"** in a language of your choice, like the one reproduced on Figure 4 hereunder:

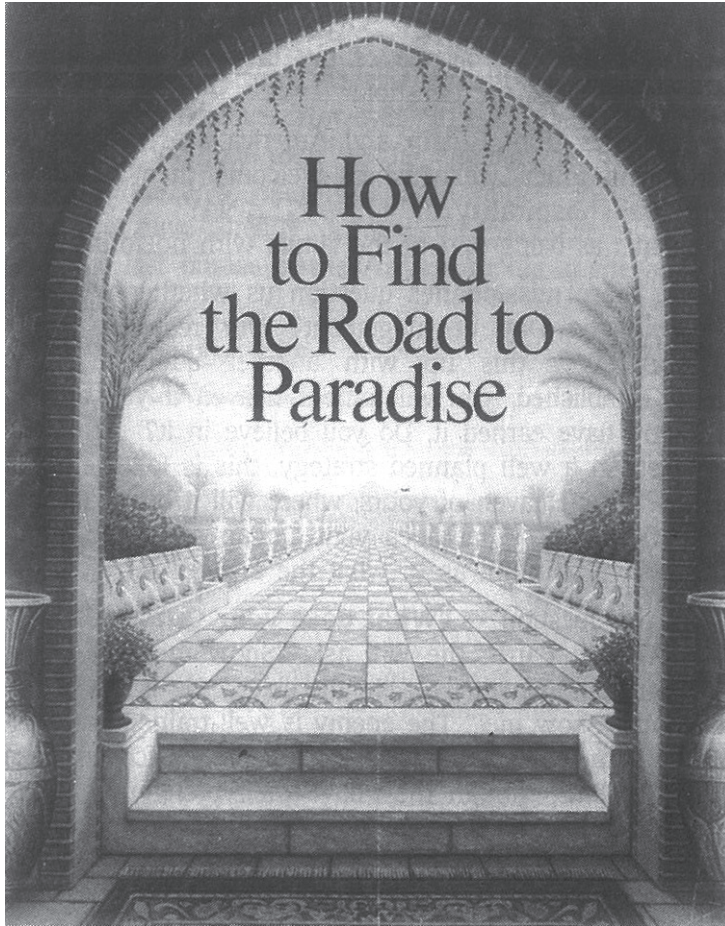


Figure 4 Brochure reproduction from How to Find the Road to Paradise

The question remains: “What is the Qur’anic answer to the Christian riddle: Will the Muslim Heaven, be on earth or in the skies?”

I had to admit to my audience in Khartoum, that if the question was put to me, I would have to confess to my Christian adversary that “I don’t know.” I would have to confess, that I am ashamed of myself. (Until very recently, I did not have the Qur’anic answer).

Having so conceded we must now TURN THE TABLES on the enemy. I would suggest to him that though I do not know my Qur’an as well as I ought to, “I take it, that you know your Bible?” He would be too arrogant to say, “No.” He is holding one under his arm! He is well-equipped! I would request him or her, “Can I have a look at your Bible?” The missionary would be overwhelmed at this request. You are helping them to fulfil their mission. I open the very first book of the Bible called **Genesis**. (The Roman Catholic Bible has 73 books in it, and the Protestant world has 66 in their encyclopedia called the Bible. More about this in part 3 of this Volume.)

I hand back the Bible to the Christian, having opened it to Genesis chapter 19 pointing to verse 30, and suggesting that he reads it out loud to me. He is too clever to do that. He is trained not to follow your instructions but read only the selected ones to push down your throat. He scans the verses. He smells the “rat”. He or she will want to change the subject. You ask, “What’s wrong? Is that not the Book of God?” He says. “Yes.” Then read it! If he reads what does he read? I gave my audience the gist of these verses, and of Genesis 35:22. And still in the first book of the Bible – Genesis 38”15-18, with the question to the Bible-thumpers, the hot-gospellers “WHAT IS THE MORAL?” “What is the moral of these verses? (stories?)”.

We tell our children anecdotes, fables – (“**The Fox and the Grapes, the Wolf and the Lamb, the Dog and his shadow, etc.**”), not just for entertainment, but with a view to imparting morals to them. Behind these stories is a moral. We are teaching our children not to be like the greedy fox, who, when it could not reach the bunch of grapes, said that ‘The Grapes are Sour’. Do not be like that greedy dog who, when seeing its reflection on the water, lost the bone it had in its mouth for the other dog’s bone. There is a moral behind these stories! Now then, what is the moral behind, “Daughters seducing their father, night after night and begetting bastard children through him” (Genesis 19: 30-36) or “Of a Son

having intercourse with his mother” (Genesis 35:22), or “Of a father-in-law cohabiting with his daughter-in-law and begetting incestuous twins through her” (Genesis 38:15-18)? If there are no moral lessons to be learnt from these pornographic narrations in the so-called “Book of God”, then they are IMMORAL!

The audience was no doubt thrilled by the way the tables could be turned against the Christians missionaries.

COMBAT KIT

On my return home to South Africa, I wrote an article on how to counter the missionaries who come to harass the Muslims in their own homes. The IPCI published one hundred thousand copies of this manual – **“Combat Kit”** – for free distribution worldwide.

This manual is a book of instructions, and is not intended for your entertainment. As soon as you get it in your hands, browse through the index on page one and follow the instructions as contained on page two.

To start the exercise, you need the Bible. If you do not have one, then buy one in the language of your choice, preferably the King James Version (KJV).

I make my students open the inside front cover of the Bible in their hand and make them glue their copy of the **“Combat Kit”** for permanency into the Bible. Otherwise, the manual is apt to be misplaced or get lost. Once **“Combat Kit”** is stuck in place, the student is now prepared for the first move. He or she is asked to open the index on page one of the manual. Scanning the topics, our eyes rest on item 20, i.e. **“INCEST: Types and types of incest in the Bible ... Page 269.”**

CHAPTER THREE

THE BIBLE: AN ANTHOLOGY ON
INCEST

The reader is naturally shocked to find such a heading in a Book attributed to God. One has to read it to believe it. Quickly the reader refers to page 269 to savour the spiciest part of **“Combat Kit”** first. At the head of the page is the definition from the **“New Collins Dictionary”**:

INCEST: “SEXUAL INTERCOURSE BETWEEN TWO PERSONS WHO ARE TOO CLOSELY RELATED.”

The oxford Dictionary adds the words – “TO MARRY.”

Whilst in the middle of this research, I was visited by two Bible peddlers on a Sunday mornings at home. They came to give me solutions to the problems of the world from the “Holy” Bible. I changed the subject, and I suggested to them that I was on the verge of writing an anthology on **“Incest.”** I asked, whether they knew the meaning of the word INCEST? They said that they knew. I explained the meaning to them. It was about having sexual intercourse between...father and daughters, between son and mother, between father-in-law and daughter-in-law, between brother and sister.

I asked them what would they say if, on completion of my essay on the subject, I presented it to their teenage sister or daughter to read. They both replied to the effect that they would strangle me! I asked why? They said that the act of my giving a filthy, dirty, immoral book to their loved ones was an attack on their chastity. I said, I would not blame them for their strong reaction. But what if the obscene, immoral treatise on incest was

derived from your so-called “Book of God,” the Holy Bible. “Impossible”, they exclaimed indignantly. “The Bible contains no such pornography! Prove it! They demanded!”

I asked, “The volume you are holding in your hands, is it the Bible?” (The Bible-thumpers, the hot-gospellers always carry one under their arm) “Yes!” was the answer. “Can I have a look?” It was handed to me, I opened it to Genesis chapter 19 and pointing to verse 30, I asked one of them to read, the Bible peddler scanned the verses and “smelt the rat”. He wanted to change the subject. I asked, “What’s wrong, is that not the Word of God?” “Yes.” They blurted, “but....but....,” But when persuaded what did the Christian read? See Figure 5 on page 229 for the actual reproduction from the Holy of holies.

Both the reproductions are from the King James Version. You will observe that there are slight variations between them. In verse 32 the first version speaks of the daughters of Lot wanting to **“preserve SEED of our father,”** whereas the second records as **“preserve LINEAGE of our father,”** but the more modern translations of the Bible calls a spade a spade. They do not mince matters –

***“That night they (both the daughters of Lot)
gave him (their father Lot)
wine to drink, and the older
daughter had INTERCOURSE with him...
The next day the older daughter
said to her sister, I slept with him
last night: now let’s get him drunk
again tonight, and you sleep¹⁹⁸
with him. Then each of us will
have a child by our father.
So that night they got him drunk, and
the younger daughter had INTERCOURSE
with him...”***

198 In the **“International Children’s Bible – The New Century Version,”** the words, “you sleep with him” is spelt out as – “have sexual relations with him.” The Christians make it easy for the little ones.

GENESIS 18, 19

14*

saying, I laughed not; for she was afraid.
And he said, Nay; but thou dost

Abraham Intercedes for Sodom

16 And the men rose up from thence,
and looked toward Sodom: and Abraham
went with them to bring them on the way.

17 And
Abraham
that Abi-
and migh-
the earth.
I know h
children a
they shall
justice and
bring upon
spoken of
Because th
is great, an
ous, 21 I
whether th
cording to
unto me; a

22 And thence, and

Abraham
23 And A
Wilt thou
the wicked
fifty right
also destru
the fifty
25 That I
manner,
wicked;
as the w
not the
26 And
fifty right
spare all
Abraham
I have t
Lord, w
28 Perad-
the fifty
the city fo
I find the
destroy it.
again, and
be forty fou
not do it for
unto him, Oh
and I will spea

thirty be found. And he said, I will
not do it, if I find thirty there. 31 And he
said, Behold now, I have taken upon me
to speak unto the Lord: Peradventure
there shall be twenty found there. And he
said, *

PAGE NUMBERS MAY VARY IN YOUR OWN BIBLE it

INCEST BETWEEN FATHER

Peradventure ten shall be found there.
And he said, I will not destroy it for ten's
sake. 33 And the LORD went his way, as
soon as he had left Abraham: and Abraham

30 And Lot went up out of Zo'ar, and
dwelt in the mountain, and his two daugh-
ters with him; for he feared to dwell in
Zo'ar: and he dwelt in a cave, he and his
two daughters. 31 And the firstborn said
unto the younger, Our father is old, and
there is not a man in the earth to come in
unto us after the manner of all the earth:
32 come, let us make our father drink
wine, and we will lie with him, that we
may preserve seed of our father. 33 And
they made their father drink wine that
night: and the firstborn went in, and lay
with her father; and he perceived not
when she lay down, nor when she arose.
34 And it came to pass on the morrow,
that the firstborn said unto the younger,
Behold, I lay yesternight with my father:
let us make him drink wine this night also;
and go thou in, *and lie with him, that we*
may preserve seed of our father. 35 And
they made their father drink wine that
night also: and the younger arose, and
lay with him; and he perceived not when
she lay down, nor when she arose. 36 Thus
were both the daughters of Lot with child
by their father.

... they smote the men
... were at the door of the house with
blindness, both small and great: so
that they wearied themselves to find the
door.

12 A **INCEST BETWEEN**
the sons and the daughters, and the wife

15*

GENESIS 19, 20

of this place: 13 for we will destroy this place. **AND HIS DAUGHTERS** great before the face of the LORD, and the LORD hath sent us to destroy it. 14 And Lot went out, and spake unto his sons-in-law, which married his daughters, and said, Up, get you out of this place; for the LORD will destroy this city. But he seemed as one that mocked unto his sons-in-law.

15 And when the morning arose, then the angels hastened Lot, saying, Arise, take thy wife, and thy two daughters, which are here; lest thou be consumed in the iniquity of the city. 16 And while he lingered, the men laid hold upon his hand, and upon the hand of his wife, and upon the hand of his two daughters; the LORD being merciful unto him: and they brought him forth, and set him without the city. 17 And it came to pass, when they had brought them forth abroad, that he said, Escape for thy life; look not behind thee, neither stay thou in all the plain; escape to the mountain, lest thou be consumed. 18 And Lot said unto them, Oh, not so, my Lord: 19 behold now, thy servant hath found grace in thy sight, and thou hast magnified thy mercy, which thou hast showed unto me in saving my life; and I cannot escape to the mountain, lest some evil take me, and I die: 20 behold now, this city is near to flee unto, and it is a little one: O, let me escape thither, (is it not a little one?) and my soul shall live. 21 And he said unto him, See, I have accepted thee concerning this thing also, that I will not overthrow this city, for the which thou hast spoken. 22 Haste thee, escape thither; for I cannot do any thing till thou be come thither. Therefore the name of the city was called Zo'ar. 23 The sun was risen upon the earth when Lot entered into Zo'ar.

24 Then the LORD rained upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and fire from the LORD out of heaven; 25 and he overthrew those cities,^a and all the plain, and all the inhabitants of the cities, and that which grew upon the ground. 26 But his wife looked back from behind him, and she became a pillar of salt. 27 And Abraham gat up early in the morning to the place where he stood before the LORD: 28 and he looked toward Sodom and Gomorrah, and toward all the land of the

plain, and beheld, and, lo, the smoke of the country went up as the smoke of a furnace.

29 And it came to pass, when God destroyed the cities of the plain, that God remembered Abraham, and sent Lot out of the midst of the overthrow, when he overthrew the cities in the which Lot dwelt.

30 And Lot went up out of Zo'ar, and dwelt in the mountain, and his two daughters with him; for he feared to dwell in Zo'ar: and he dwelt in a cave, he and his two daughters. 31 And the firstborn said unto the younger, Our father is old, and there is not a man in the earth to come in unto us after the manner of all the earth: 32 come, let us make our father drink wine, and we will lie with him, that we may preserve seed of our father. 33 And they made their father drink wine that night: and the firstborn went in, and lay with her father; and he perceived not when she lay down, nor when she arose. 34 And it came to pass on the morrow, that the firstborn said unto the younger, Behold, I lay yesternight with my father: let us make him drink wine this night also; and go thou in, and lie with him, that we may preserve seed of our father. 35 And they made their father drink wine that night also: and the younger arose, and lay with him; and he perceived not when she lay down, nor when she arose. 36 Thus were both the daughters of Lot with child by their father. 37 And the firstborn bare a son, and called his name Moab: the same is the father of the Moabites unto this day. 38 And the younger, she also bare a son, and called his name Ben-am'mi: the same is the father of the children of Ammon unto this day.

Abraham and Abimelech

20 And Abraham journeyed from thence toward the south country, and dwelt between Kadesh and Shur, and sojourned in Gerar. 2 And Abraham said of Sarah his wife, She is my sister:^a and Abim'elech king of Gerar sent, and took Sarah. 3 But God came to Abim'elech in a dream by night, and said to him, Behold, thou art but a dead man, for the woman which thou hast taken; for she is a man's wife. 4 But Abim'elech had not come

11 SON AND HIS MOTHER P. 32*

^a 19:16 2 Pet. 2:7. ^b 19:24-25 Mt. 10:15; 11:23-24; Lk. 10:12; 17:29; 2 Pet. 2:6; Jude 7.

^c 19:26 Lk. 17:32. ^d 20:2 Gen. 12:13; 26:7.

***In this way both of Lot's daughters
became PREGNANT by their father."***

(Holy Bible) Genesis 19:33-35

(From the "Good News Bible in Today's English")

As a result of this illicit, incestuous relationship both of the daughters of Lot deliver a son each who became famous in the Bible as the progenitors of the Ammonites and the Moabites, specially guarded and protected communities in the "Book of God." The Jews were to exterminate the Palestinians, **"nothing that breathes"** was to be spared, but for Lot's children of bastardy¹⁹⁹ God had as special soft spot –

***That the Lord spoke to me, (Moses), saying
"This day you (the Israelites) are
to cross over at Ar, the boundary
of Moab (the Moabites).***

***And when you come near the people
Of Ammon (the Ammonites), do not
HARASS them or MEDDLE with them,
for I will not give you any of
the land of the people of Ammon
as a possession, because I have
given it to the descendants of
Lot for possession.***

(Holy Bible) Deuteronomy 2:19

The Ammonites and the Moabites were not one whit better than their polytheistic Palestinian cousins, their only redeeming grace in sight of the Biblical God was that they were the "seed" of Lot, an incestuous breed! Ask your Bible-thumper, "What is the moral, the lesson to be learnt from this shameless lewd story?" "If there is no moral-and there is none – then why did God not reproach Lot or strike him with syphilis, gonorrhoea or Aids? But instead, his offsprings were a blessed race in God's sight. How immorally moral, or morally immoral can you get?

199 Notwithstanding God's own Commandment to Moses – **"A bastard shall not enter onto the congregation of the Lord; even to his tenth generation shall not enter into the congregation of the Lord."**(Deuteronomy 23:2)

PSYCHOLOGIST CONFIRMS

Dr. Vernon Jones, an American psychologist of great repute, carried out experiments on groups of schoolchildren of equal age and educational status. Certain stories with particular bias were told to the children. His conclusions were that these stories made, **“Certain slight but permanent changes in the character of these children, even in the narrow classroom situation.”** Little wonder that the mighty evangelist Jimmy Swaggart,²⁰⁰ in his book on “INCEST” bewails that incest between fathers and their daughters have reached endemic proportions in the mighty United States of America. There is a law at work: physically you are what you eat and morally and mentally you are what you read!

Before proceeding further, open your Bible at Genesis chapter 19 at verses 30-36, and frame these verses as you see on pages 228/229 of this book, and write across the top on two pages, in big, bold handwriting, **“INCEST BETWEEN FATHER AND DAUGHTERS”** and underline it. At the bottom of these very two pages write in equally bold types the next reference on the topic **“INCEST BETWEEN MOTHER AND SON P. ...?”**²⁰¹

Find the next reference in your own Bible-Genesis 35:32, and fill in the page number (as you see done) at the bottom of page 229 of this book. Please note that page numbers will vary in the different Bibles, so ascertain before numbering in your Bible.

Having opened Genesis 35, frame verse 22 as you see on Figure 6 on page 232, and write as a heading across the two pages in bold: **“INCEST BETWEEN SON AND MOTHER,”** and underline it. At the bottom of the said pages, write: **“INCEST BETWEEN FATHER-IN-LAW AND DAUGHTER-IN-LAW P. ...?”** find Genesis 38 verses 15-18 and repeat the exercise of supplying the page number and framing the verses as you had done in the previous two examples. And get back to your **“Combat Kit”** pages 269 to 271 and complete the exercise of marking your Bible to confront every “Christian Crusader” who knocks on your door. The better your preparation the swifter will be the flight of the Bible-peddler.

200 **Jimmy Swaggart** himself subsequently succumbed to sordid and evil temptations of the flesh.

201 Supply the number of the page from your own Bible.

33*

GENESIS 36, 37

cattle. ⁸ Thus dwelt Esau in mount Se'ir: Esau is Edom.

⁹ And these are the generations of Esau the father of the Edomites in mount Se'ir: these are the names of Esau's sons:

Reu'el the firstborn of Esau. ¹ Teman,

Elip'har, phaz Ar, Adah Esau's sons of Shamma

... zarah: these were the sons of Bash'emath Esau's wife. ¹⁴ And these were the sons of Aholiba'mah, the daughter of Anah the daughter of Zib'e-on, Esau's wife: and she bare to Esau Je'ush, and Ja'alam, and Korah.

¹⁵ These were dukes of the sons of Esau: the sons of El'iphaz the firstborn son of Esau; duke Teman, duke Omar, duke Shopho, duke Kenaz, ¹⁶ duke Korah, duke Gatam, and duke Am'alek: these are the dukes that came of El'iphaz in the land of Edom: these were the sons of Adah. ¹⁷ And these are the sons of Reu'el Esau's son; duke Nahath, duke Zerah, duke Shammah, duke Mizzah: these are the dukes that came of Reu'el in the land of Edom.

Bash'emath Esau are the sons of a duke. ¹⁸ And these were the daughters of Esau: Ba'mah the daughter of Reu'el. ¹⁹ These are the daughters of Esau.

²⁰ These are the sons of Se'ir the Horite, who inhabited the land; Lotan, and Shobal, and Zib'e-on, and Anah, ²¹ and Dishon, and Ezer, and Dishan: these are the dukes of the Horites, the children of Se'ir in the land of Edom. ²² And the children of Lotan were Hori and Hemam; and Lotan's sister was Timna. ²³ And the children of Shobal were these; Alvan, and Man'ahath, and Ebal, Shepho, and Onam. ²⁴ And these are the children of Zib'e-on; both Ajah, and Anah: this was that Anah that found the mules in the wilderness, as he fed the asses of Zib'e-on his father. ²⁵ And the children of Anah were these; Dishon, and Aholiba'mah the daughter of Anah. ²⁶ And these are the children of Dishon: Hemdan, and Epher, and Zerah, and Zerah's sister Timna. ²⁷ And these are the children of Ezer: Bilhan, and Kanhan, and Zerah, and Zerah's sister Timna. ²⁸ The children of

Dishan are these; Uz, and Aran. ²⁹ These are the dukes that came of the Horites; duke Lotan, duke Shobal, duke Zib'e-on, duke Anah, ³⁰ duke Dishon, duke Ezer, duke Dishan: these are the dukes that came of the Horites in the land of Edom.

the kings that reigned in the land of Edom, before there reigned children of Israel. ¹ Of Be'or reigned in the land of Edom: and the name of his city was Din'be. ² And Be'or died, and Jobab the son of Zerah reigned in his stead. ³⁴ And Jobab died, and Husham the son of Amalek reigned in his stead. ³⁵ And Husham died, and Hadad the son of Bedad, who smote Mid'i-an in the field of Moab, reigned in his stead: and the name of his city was Avith. ³⁶ And Hadad died, and Samlah of Masre'kah reigned in his stead. ³⁷ And Samlah died, and Saul of Rehoboth by the river reigned in his stead. ³⁸ And Saul died, and Ba'al-hanan the son of Achbor reigned in his stead. ³⁹ And Ba'al-hanan the son of Achbor died, and Hadar reigned in his stead: and the name of his city was Pa'u; and his wife's name was Mehet'abel, the daughter of Matred, the daughter of Me'zahab.

Gen. 49:4

1 CONCUBINE: See, wife and concubine are synonymous terms in the Holy Bible, unless it is a contradiction

of the dukes in their names; duke Jetheth, Elah, duke Teman, duke Iram: these be the dukes of Edom, according to their habitations in the land of their possession: he is Esau the father of the Edomites.

Joseph Sold into Egypt

37 And Jacob dwelt in the land where in his father was a stranger, in the land of Canaan. ² These are the generations of Jacob.

Joseph, being seventeen years old, was feeding the flock with his brethren; and the lad was with the sons of Bilhah, and with the sons of Zilpah, his father's wives: and Joseph brought unto his father their evil report. ³ Now Israel loved Joseph more than all his children, because he was the son of his old age: and he made him a coat of many colors. ⁴ And when his brethren saw that their father loved him more than all his brethren, they hated him, and could not speak peaceably unto him.

AND DAUGHTER-IN-LAW P. 38*

Za'avan, and Akan. ²⁸ The children of

Glance once more at Figure 6 on page 232, and their heading: **“Incest between Son and his Mother.”**

Read verse 22 there. Both the reproductions are from the most renowned King James Version (s). The larger types are from the KJV in its “Fifth major Revision.” After revising the Book five times over, the Christians still call it the King James Version (!). Compare the two reproductions of this one verse 22. They begin – **“And it came to pass,”** and **“And so it happened.”** The Christians have not yet freed themselves from the **“once upon a time”** syndrome. See **The Choice**, Volume 1, pages 175 to 177 for this perennial sickness.

MODERN TRANSLATIONS MORE EXPLICIT

Both the quotation speak of – **“Reuben went and LAY with Bilhah.”** The Roman Catholic’s **“Douay Version,”** differs in its choices of words. It says, **“Reuben went, and SLEPT with Bala,”** (they meant Bilhah). Now these variant readings do not tell us how old Reuben was. No one would raise eyebrows if a five-year old or ten-year old kid sleeps with his mother or his stepmother, to keep himself warm. **“The New Century Version,”** in its INTERNATIONAL CHILDREN’S BIBLE, published by **“WORD BIBLES”** of Word (UK) Ltd., Milton Keynes, England, does not want Christian children to fumble over the meaning of **“lay”** or **“slept”**. They even got their Bible-thumpers out of their misery of explaining away simple words lending themselves to dubious interpretations. Their rendering is – **“Reuben had sexual RELATIONS with Israel’s slave woman Bilhah.”** Could they have spelt it out in any simpler form for the “born agains” who will never grow up?

Of the twelve sons of Jacob, Reuben was the “first born” the eldest son, who in the prime of his life, raped his mother! Call her **“slave woman”** or **“concubine”**, she was his father’s wife, (And your father’s wife is **ONES MOTHER** by any definition.)

“Wife,” and **“concubine”** are synonymous terms in the Bible. Check it out in your own Bible at home;–

*Abraham again took a WIFE,
and her name was Keturah.*

(Holy Bible) Genesis 25:1

Genesis is reputed to be the first book of Moses (PBUH). God Almighty

Himself is supposed to have dictated the five books of the Jewish Torah, now accepted by all Christians as God's Word. In the first of these five books, God Almighty spells it out for Moses (PBUH) that the third **"wife"** of His Friend, Abraham (PBUH) was Keturah, the previous two being Sarah and Hagar. If the Lord God of Moses (PBUH) Himself acknowledges Keturah as Abraham **W-I-F-E**, then who can have the audacity to contradict Him and denigrate Keturah? But some **"unknown"**²⁰² anonymous writer of the 1st Book of Chronicles, chapter one, verse thirty two, had the nerve to change God's Word dictated to Moses (PBUH) from **"WIFE"** to **"CONCUBINE,"** unless they mean the same thing. Otherwise, the Bible-thumper will have to acknowledge that there is yet another contradiction in his Bible. Look in the index of your **"Combat Kit"** for **"CONTRADICTIONS IN THE BIBLE,"** and add this item also to your list.

Reverting to the subject marked at the bottom of the pages, i.e. **"INCEST BETWEEN FATHER-IN-LAW AND DAUGHTER-IN-LAW"**: after having completed the exercise as instructed on page 231 – that of framing verses 15-18 of Genesis chapter 38 – this chapter **"thirty-eight"** is very effective also in proving that the Bible is **NOT** the word of God –

202 **"UNKNOWN"** is the verdict on the Book of Chronicles by 32 Christian Scholars of the highest eminence by fifty co-operating denominations.

CHAPTER FOUR

TEST OF INSPIRATION

Christian missionaries are very fond of repeating the following verse from the writings of St. Paul. St Paul happens to be the most prolific of all authors of the Christian Bible. He has authored more than 50% of the Books and Epistles of the New Testament. To be exact 14 out of the 27! In his self-professed inspiration he says:

***All Scripture is given by inspiration
of God, and his profitable for
doctrine, for reproof, for correction,
for instruction in righteousness,
That the man of God may be complete,
thoroughly equipped for every good work.***

(Holy Bible) 2 Timothy 3:16-17

This is Paul's second personal letter to his protégé Timothy. Do you remember Paul advising Timothy in his first epistle – **“Drink NO longer WATER, but use a little WINE for thy stomach's sake and thine often infirmities.”** (1 Timothy 5:23) Now Paul is giving Timothy a more sanguine, spirited advice, adaptable for a wider audience.

But who is this Timothy? He is a recruit to help Paul in his self-appointed mission. He is the son of a Greek father and Jewish mother which makes him a Jew according to Jewish Law. But he was uncircumcised Jew. To make him **“Kosher”**, Paul had to have Timothy circumcised (Acts 16:3)

In the verses under consideration, Paul advises Timothy on the subject of **“Scripture.”** The scripture Paul is referring to is not the ones which later on become known as the “Gospel ACCORDING TO St. Matthew” or the

“Gospel ACCORDING TO St. Mark” or the Gospel ACCORDING TO St. Luke” or the “Gospel ACCORDING TO St. John.” All these writings had not yet seen the light of day. They were to follow many decades and centuries later. Paul had no inkling about them. He was referring Timothy to the “**Holy Scriptures**” with which he had been familiar from his “**childhood**,” the Books of the Jews as contained in the Old Testament. Confirm this from verse 15 of 2 Timothy chapter three (2 Timothy 3:15).

Since verse sixteen under discussion is widely used by the Christian missionaries to prove the validity of the whole Bible, we will use it for a test case.

The verse implies that if any scripture originates from God, it will prove profitable for –

1. **DOCTRINE:** teaching
2. **REPROOF:** for convincing, rebuking, for showing people what is wrong in their lives.
3. **CORRECTION:** useful for correcting faults.
4. **INSTRUCTION UNTO RIGHTEOUSNESS:** for training and teaching us how to live correctly.

I find the above four headings to categorise God’s Word to be very reasonable. I have been asking the Christians whether they can find a fifth heading under which the Word of God can be rubricated, and in all my experience I have not had another befitting headline. We will leave it at that. Now let us revert to that famous chapter **thirty-eight** of Genesis for analysis. It is worth perusing the whole chapter so that no missionary can ever accuse you of reading his Bible out of context.

What is the context? The first five verses speak about Judah and his three siblings. Judah is the father of the Jewish race from whom we derive the words “Judea” and “Judaism.” Also Juda (Heb. **Huda**; also Arabic). **Huda** to Hudi, Yahudi, meaning Jew.

Of this three sons – Er, Onan and Shelah – he gets his first-born Er married to a woman named Tamar. But verse seven records his untimely demise:

But Er, Judah’s first-born, was wicked (Er erred) in the sight of the Lord, and the Lord Killed him.

(Holy Bible) Genesis 38:7

According to the standard laid down in 2 Timothy 3:16 to test the Scripture whether it is from God, we ask our missionary friend: under which heading will you put this verse? Under 1. **Doctrine**, 2. **Reproof**, 3. **Correction** or 4. **Instruction unto Righteousness** (?). Our friend will not find it difficult to give the correct answer, “REPROOF!” In effect, we learn that if we do anything wicked in the sight of God, He will destroy us. That is the moral; that is the lesson!

In verse 8 of chapter 38 of Genesis we are told that the old man Judah tells his second son Onan to go in unto his late brother’s widow and beget a child from her as to carry on the name of his deceased brother, as he had died childless. The Jews were specially particular that one’s name should not perish.

The Bible records:

*And Judah said unto Onan,
Go in thy brother’s wife,
(meaning, have intercourse with her),
and raise up seed to thy Brother;
And Onan knew that the seed
should not be his (that the child
would not be carrying his name);
and it came to pass, when he went
in unto his brother’s wife, that
he spilled IT on the ground, lest
he should give seed to his brother.
And the thing which he did
Displeased the Lord, wherefore
He (the Lord) slew him also.*

(Holy Bible) Genesis 38:8-10

God killed Onan for his selfish envy. He did not want his deceased brother’s name to carry on as was required by the Mosaic Law. Ask your Bible-thumper, under which of the four headings will he put this instant retribution of God? Under –

Doctrine?

Reproof?

Correction? or

Instruction unto Righteousness?

‘REPROOF!’, again, is his answer. The problem did not tax his brain.

I hope that you have already framed the verses 15-18 as instructed on page 231. This short chapter, Genesis 38, is the choicest and spiciest piece of pornography in a “Book of God”. Make a point of reading it a few times.

Judah sends his daughter-in-law, Tamar, to her father’s house with the promise that when his third son Shelah was big enough to consummate the marriage he would recall her for him to fulfill his obligation to give her a baby to perpetuate the name of her deceased husband Er.

Judah was superstitious person. He had reasoned that he had lost his two sons already through this witch Tamar, his daughter-in-law, and he was not prepared to risk the life of his only remaining son Shelah, fearing

“Lest peradventure, he die also, as his brethren did.”

(Holy Bible) Genesis 38:11.

Shelah is grown, and perhaps already married, but the old man is not recalling Tamar to enable her to conceive a child in the name of her late husband.

“Hell hath no fury like a woman scorned.” She wanted to avenge Judah’s dereliction of duty. She gets the news that her father-in-law was going to Timnath to shear his sheep. She planned to waylay him. She went and sat by the wayside, knowing in her heart of heart that the old man will never pass her by without making a pass. True to tradition, Judah saw her and supposing her to be a harlot, a prostitute, a whore, he proposes to her –

***Come to, I pray thee²⁰³
let me come in unto thee²⁰⁴
(for he knew not that she was
his daughter-in-law).²⁰⁵
And she said, what wilt thou give me,***

203 Do me a favour, I beg you.

204 Let me have intercourse with you.

205 These words within brackets are not in the original Hebrew manuscripts. They happen to be the words of the translators. God Almighty did not deem fit to inspire Moses (PBUH) with such title tattle. In all later editions of the Bible, the words in brackets are retained, but the brackets are removed, thus transmuting editorial notes into God’s word. The Christians seem to have the licence to change God’s Word.

That thou mayest come in unto me?²⁰⁶

(Holy Bible) Genesis 38:16

People did not carry ready cash or credit cards with them in those days, so he said that he would send her a goat kid from his flock after he had sexual intercourse with her. Tamar was not one to be taken in by such glib talk. She had a master plan, well thought out and scientifically executed. She bargains: **“What guarantee is there for me that the goat kid would be sent?”** “What guarantee do you want?” Asks Judah. “Your ring, your bracelets (people used to wear bangles in their wrists those days) and the rod that you are carrying in your hand.” The old man handed the things requested and cohabited with his daughter-in-law. With this single copulation she conceived, not forgetting that both Er and Onan had singularly failed to impregnate Tamar.

Within three months the pregnancy became apparent. Tongues began to wag. The news reached Judah that Tamar had **“played the harlot and was with child by whoredom.”** His righteous indignation knew no bounds. He ordered, **“Bring her forth** (the bitch), **and let her be burnt.”** Before this she was a witch (he had lost two sons on account of her). Now she is a bitch and deserves to be burnt alive!

Tamar was more wily than Judah could imagine. Before she could be confronted by her father-in-law, she sent forth the **ring**, the **bracelets** and the **staff**, with a servant and a plea beseeching him to find out the culprit responsible for her pregnancy, she said **“By the man, whose these things are, am I with child.”** Judah acknowledged his belongings and said,

***She hath been more righteous
than I, because that I gave her
not to Shelah, my (surviving)son.
And he knew²⁰⁷ her again no more.***

(Holy Bible) Genesis 38:26

206 To have intercourse with me.

207 **Know** and **Know**, often means to have sexual relations in the Bible. **The Good News Bible** puts it succinctly – “And Judah never had **INTERCOURSE with her again.**” Once was enough!

Nine months after the sexual encounter on the Timnath Road between Judah the father-in-law, and Tamar his daughter-in-law the midwife was on the alert by Tamar's bedside. From the size of her abdomen she had surmised that twins were in her womb. And according to the Laws of Moses (PBUH) she had to be particularly careful to label the "first-born." If the woman delivered identical twins and if care was not taken to mark the first one to see the light of day, then grave injustice was feared, because the first-born was to receive the lion's share of his father's patrimony.

While Tamar travailed, THE ONE put out his hand through his mother's womb and the nurse tied a scarlet thread quickly to signify that **"This one came out first!"** But this was too sensitive for the tiny tot, so he quickly withdrew his hand into the warmth of his mother, and behold, his brother came out and the midwife exclaimed,

***How hast thou broken forth?
This breach be upon thee:
Therefore his name was called Perez.
And afterward came out his brother,
That has the scarlet thread
Called Zerah.***

(Holy Bible) Genesis 38:29-30

Perez stands for one who had jumped the queue, one who has done others out of their turn, and **Zerah** means "red" in Hebrew because he had the scarlet thread on his hand.

The recurring question is. What is the moral of this Biblical sexology in this famous chapter **thirty-eight** of the **first book** of the Bible?

God killed Er: the lesson we learnt was **"Reproof!"**

God killed Onan: the lesson again was **"Reproof!"**

Now Judah commits incest with Tamar and begets bastard twins who are honoured to become the great grandfathers of the only "begotten son of God!"

What is the moral? No moral, **so it is immoral!**

Under what heading will you now put this filthy lewd story of a daughter-in-law entrapping her not too innocent father-in-law?

Is it:

1. Your *DOCTRINE*?
2. Your *REPROOF*?
3. Your *CORRECTION* or
4. Your *INSTRUCTION UNTO RIGHTEOUSNESS*?

(Holy Bible) 2 Timothy 3:16-17

If we cannot tabulate this filth under any of the four headings to serve some purpose in a Book of God, then we would be forced to invent a **FIFTH** heading. The fifth heading stares us in the face: it is -- **PORNOGRAPHY!**

Judah, the father of the Jewish race, from whom we derive the words, -Jew, Judaism, Judea etc and his daughter-in-law Tamar, and their illicit offsprings -- **Perez** and **Zerah** are immortalized in the so-called Book of God for their bastardy:

***The book of genealogy of Jesus Christ, the Son of David, the son of Abraham,
And Abraham begot Isaac and Isaac begot Jacob; and Jacob begot JUDAH and his brethren;
And JUDAH begot PEREZ and ZERAH of TAMAR...***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 1:1-3

In every Bible that provides a cross-reference, where the words “And Judah begot Perez and Zerah of Tamar” occur, the marginal note points to Genesis chapter 38, and that lewd chapter with its raunchy details.

Onan also has made his mark in the “hall of fame” (hall of infamy!). Every reputable dictionary enshrines his envious sexual perversion under the heading – “**ONANISM:**” The sin of Onan; Coitus interruptus (derived from Onan, son of Judah – Genesis 38:9).

SON OF GOD OR SON OF HOLY GHOST!

The Christians in their overweening zeal to produce a genealogy for their Lord and Master Jesus, have invented two genealogies, one by St. Matthew and the other by St. Luke. Between these two lists of the ancestors of Jesus (PBUH) they give him SIXTY-SIX fathers and grandfathers. Of these lists no two names are identical, except Joseph (the Carpenter) who can in no way be called the father of Jesus Christ, because Matthew tells us:

*... **Before they** (Joseph the carpenter and Mary) **came together**
(as husband and wife) **she was found with child***

BY THE HOLY GHOST.

...The angel of Lord appeared

Unto him in a dream saying,

Joseph, thou son of David, fear not

to take unto thee Mary, thy wife;

for that which is conceived

*in her is **BY THE HOLY GHOST.***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 1:18-20

Matthew, within three verses, confirms TWICE that it was THE HOLY GHOST who impregnated Mary. By definition we know that in every language of the world the one who is responsible for impregnating a woman, is the actual father and not the putative (supposed) father. Hence, according to the unequivocal statement of Matthew, the Holy Ghost is the ACTUAL father of Jesus (PBUH) and not God Almighty. The Christian world should review their theology by calling their god, Jesus the son of the Holy Ghost and **NOT** the son of God!

CHAPTER FIVE

PORNOGRAPHY

EVERY REFERENCE IS FROM THE HOLY BIBLE

1. **SEX BETWEEN FATHER AND HIS TWO DAUGHTERS.**

Night after night both the daughters of the prophet Lot seduce their drunken father and conceive children from him.

Genesis 19:30-36

2. **SON COHABITS WITH HIS MOTHER:**

Reuben the eldest son of Jacob, in the absence of his father, had sexual intercourse with his father's wife and Israel (another name for Jacob) heard it. This episode was reported to him, but he did not fume or spank his son for his naughty behaviour. Nor did God have a single word of reproach for him.

Genesis 35:22

3. **JUDAH COMMITS INCEST WITH HIS DAUGHTER-IN-LAW:**

She conceives immediately and delivers bastard twins who become the grandfathers of Jesus Christ. Thus God rewards Judah and his progeny.

Genesis 38:15-30

4. **AMNON, ONE OF THE SONS OF THE PROPHET DAVID RAPES HIS SISTER:**

"A worthy father" according to the "Holy" Bible, Amnon by a masterful

stratagem rapes his sister Tamar and God did not punish or reprimand him.

2 Samuel 13:5-14

5. **ANOTHER SON OF DAVID, THE MAN ACCORDING TO GOD'S OWN HEART, RAPES HIS MOTHERS**

(10 in a row) WHOLESale: Absalom sets up a tent on the flat palace roof and lays ten of his father's wives and rapes them all one by one, in the "sight of the whole of Israel."

2 Samuel 16:21-23

6. **JERUSALEM (THE JEWS) THE INSATIABLE WHORE:**

Neither the Assyrians, the Babylonians nor the Egyptians ("great of flesh") could ever satiate the Jewish whore. Other prostitutes were paid by their clients for their services but this one paid them for being serviced. "She spread her legs to every passerby!"

Ezekiel 16:23-34

7. **THE TWO SISTERS COMPETING WITH ONE ANOTHER IN THEIR HARLOTRY:**

"For she doted upon her paramours (her lovers) whose flesh (genital organs) was as the flesh (genital organs) of donkeys and whose emission is like the emission of horses."

Ezekiel 23:1-35

If these little snippets do not satisfy you, then open these other chapters and verses in your Bible at home.²⁰⁸ Do not forget to highlight them in RED for easier reference.

(a) ***"She seizes him and kisses him..."***

"Come, let us take our fill of love till the

208 All these juicy snippets are sexually stimulating, but morally and spiritually enervating, and **damning!**

*morning, let us delight ourselves with love, **FOR MY HUSBAND IS NOT AT HOME...***

Proverbs 7:7-22

- (b) Says the woman: ***“My king was lying on his couch...
“My lover has the scent of myrrh
AS HE LIES UPON MY BREASTS.”***

Song of Songs 1:12-13

- (c) ***“ By night on my bed I sought him whom my soul loveth.
...“When I found him...I HELP HIM, AND WOULD NOT LET HIM GO, until I had brought him into my mother’s house to the room where I was born.***

Song of Songs 3:1-4

- (d) ***“Behold, you are beautiful my love;
Your LIPS are like a scarlet thread...
Your TWO BREASTS are like fawns...
Your rounded THIGHS are like jewels...
...I say: I will go up the palm tree...
Oh, may YOUR BREASTS be like clusters of vine.***

Song of Songs²⁰⁹ 4:1-7

- (e) ***“And Samson went to Gaza, and there he saw a harlot (a whore, a hooker, a prostitute) and he went in unto her (had sexual intercourse with her).”***

Judges 16:1

209 **Song of Songs:** also described in some Bibles as **“The Song of Solomon,”** the wise.

George Bernard Shaw, the great British thinker and playwright, remarked on perusing the Holy Bible, that it is “The most dangerous book on earth. Keep it under lock and key: your children must not have access to it.”

And **“The Plain Truth”**²¹⁰ magazine, a Christian publication of the **“World Church of Tomorrow,”** in one of its articles on the Bible had this to say: “Many a censor would give the Bible an X-rating.”

To those of you who wish to make a thorough study of the Christian Bible, it is strongly recommended that you master the 2nd part of this volume, entitled **“Combat Kit”** which is your lethal weapon against Bible-thumpers.

210 It had a reputed circulation of approximately 8,000,000 copies a month for free distribution, when its founder Herbert Armstrong was alive. His successors do not give figures any more.





PART TWO

COMBAT KIT

INTRODUCTORY COVER PAGE



If you are serious about doing actual **Da'wah** work and meeting the Christian challenge of converting Muslims, then obtain a copy of **"Combat Kit"** in a convenient pocket size version.

To derive the maximum benefit from this manual you will need a copy of the Bible. Obtain one without delay and affix permanently with glue the copy of your **"Combat Kit"** inside the inner front cover of the Bible and follow the instructions on page 252.

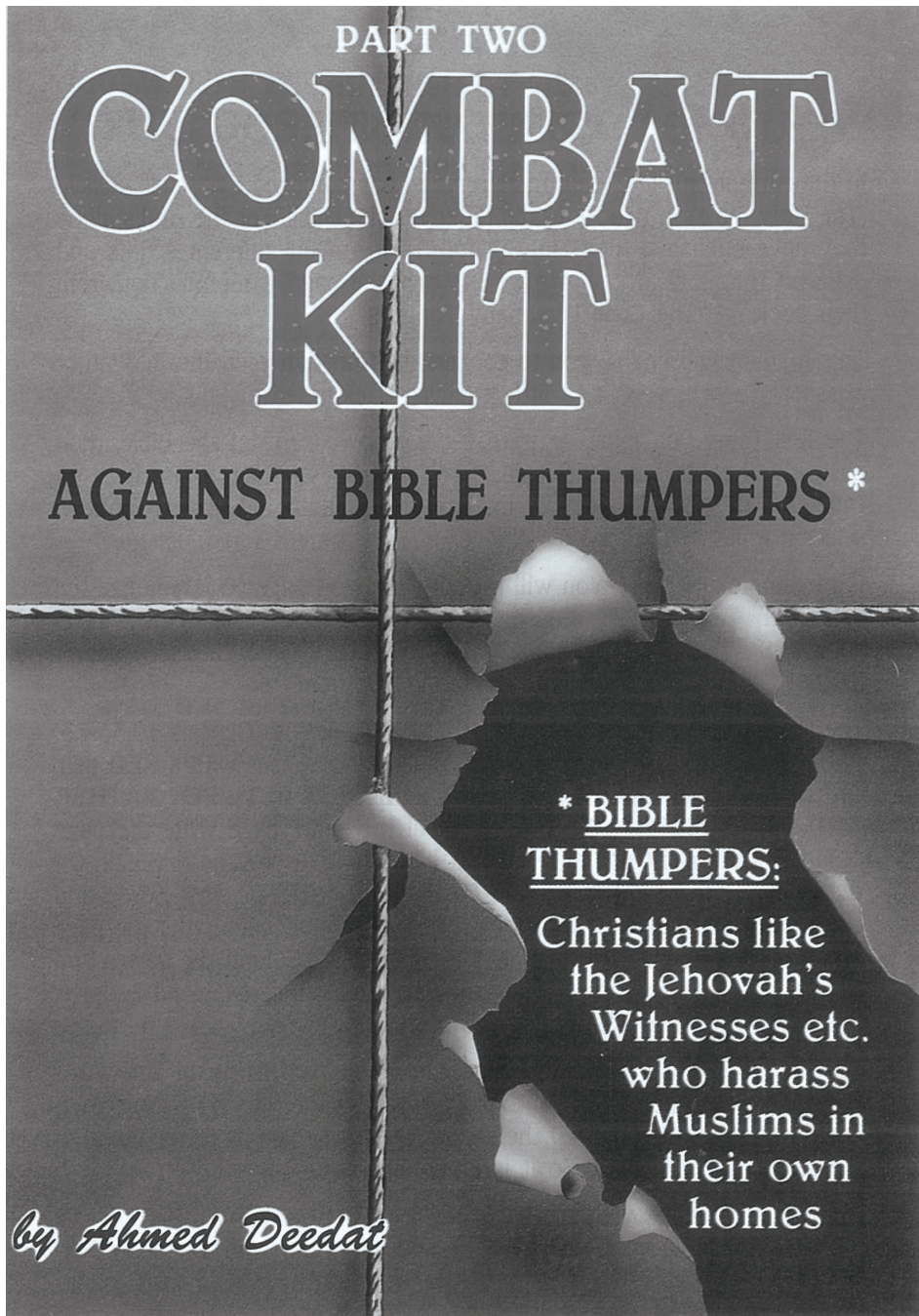


Figure 7 Reproduction of the Cover of Combat Kit

HOW TO USE THIS COMBAT KIT

In the current crusade, the Christian world has launched its “scud” missile (The Holy Bible) in two thousands different languages. For the Arabs alone they have published their Holy Scriptures in fifteen different scripts and dialects. This is clearly shown on the opposite page, a reproduction from their book – “The Gospel in many Tongues.”

This manual will enable you to convert the Christian scud into a “Patriot Missile!” To achieve this, a little exercise is expected of you.

The first thing you must do is to get your own copy of the Bible, then paste this booklet onto the inside front cover of your Bible. Use it as an **index**. The second step is to browse through the index. Thirdly, select a topic.

For example “INCEST.” You will find this topic on page 269. Memorize the definition, i.e. “INCEST IS SEXUAL INTERCOURSE BETWEEN TWO PERSONS WHO ARE TOO CLOSELY RELATED,” like “between father and” also from page 269.

The first subject under the heading “*INCEST*” refers to Genesis 19:33-35. **Familiarize** yourself with the verses. Encircle the verses with a **RED** pen. On the top of the page write in **RED** – “**INCEST BETWEEN FATHER AND DAUGHTERS.**” At the bottom of the same page write the page number of the next reference in your Bible, i.e. that of Genesis 35:22. On that page write on top – “*INCEST BETWEEN MOTHER AND SON,*” and circle the verse again in **RED**, at the bottom of that page write the page number of the next reference, i.e. Genesis 38:15-18. Find the verses and circle them in **RED**, and complete the exercise as in case 1 and 2 above. This you are set to confront any **Bible-thumper**.

Ask the missionary, when approached, the definition of the word “INCEST.” Help them with an explanation. Ask them to take their own Bible and make them **READ** the verses. Question them as to the moral of the story. There is none! So it is immoral!

Do similar exercises with other topics like “MUHAMMAD (PBUH)”. Use a **GREEN** pen for headings and circling. For the subject “CONTRADICTIONS” use a **YELLOW** marker. Thus you can have

your own colour-coded Bible ever ready for use against the Christian missionaries.

FROM THE BOOK

"THE GOSPEL IN MANY TONGUES"

SPECIMENS FROM 875 LANGUAGES

FIFTEEN DIFFERENT SCRIPTS FOR OUR

ARAB BROTHERS ALONE!!

- 21 ARABIC. 1871
Arabic char.
وَمَا كُنَّا نَعْلَمُ أَنَّكَ تَقُولُ قَوْلًا كَذِبًا
وَمَا كُنَّا نَعْلَمُ أَنَّكَ تَقُولُ قَوْلًا كَذِبًا
- Hebrew char. For Jews 1892
لَا نَعْلَمُ أَنَّكَ تَقُولُ قَوْلًا كَذِبًا
لَا نَعْلَمُ أَنَّكَ تَقُولُ قَوْلًا كَذِبًا
- Tunisian script. Tunisia. 1903
هكذا أقول لكم يكون فرح
فدام ملائكة الله يحاطي واحد يتوب
Lk.
- ARABIC (CARSHUNI). 1827
Syriac char. For Syrians.
هكذا أقول لكم يكون فرح
فدام ملائكة الله يحاطي واحد يتوب
- 22 ARABIC: Algerian Colloquial. Algeria. 1930
على كل حال فداكم الله العبد المذنب
الوحيد علشان ما يهتك كل الي بآمن به لكن تبني له المياد
لا يدي به
- ARABIC: Algerian-Tunisian Colloquial. 1953
Algeria and Tunisia.
على
عاطر هكذا حب الله العبد المذنب
حتر صلي ورايت الرحمة العريضة باذن
ما يتهاك شوية علة ما يمزو كثر تكون
له الغناة الكافيه
- 23 ARABIC: Egyptian Colloquial. Egypt. 1940
لأن الله حب العالم لدرجة انه وهب ابنه
الوحيد علشان ما يهتك كل الي بآمن به لكن تبني له المياد
لا يدي به
- 24 ARABIC: Judæo-Arabic of North Africa (Judæo-Tunisian). Jews in N. Africa 1932
Hebrew char.
עלמא באמר הדבא חב אללה אלדניא
חתמא אקטא ולדדו אלדודי כאש מא יתהלכשי
כל מן יאמן בידו אללה רבון לדו אלחיא
אלדניא :
- 25 ARABIC: Maltese. Malta. 1872
Ghaliex Alla hecca hab id dinia
illi ta l' Iben tighu unigenitu,
sabiex collmin jemmen bih ma
jintilifex, izda icollu il haja ta
dejem.
- 26 ARABIC: Moorish Colloquial (Mogrebi). Morocco. 1932
Arabic char.
لأنه هكذا حب الله العبد المذنب
الوحيد علشان ما يهتك كل الي بآمن به لكن تبني له المياد
لا يدي به
- Hebrew char. 1920
ללרב אללה חבא ידו וחדו חקבר :
Mr.
- 27 ARABIC: Palestinian Palestine. 1946
اتي يعمل ارادة الله هو اخي واختي وامي
Mr.
- 28 ARABIC: Southern Sudan Colloquial. S. Sudan 1955
Arabic char.
وَأَقُول لِبِكُمْ يَكُونُ فَرَحٌ مِثْلَ ذَا
قَدَامَ مَلَائِكَةِ اللَّهِ يَحَاطِي وَاحِدٌ يَتُوبُ .
Lk.
- Roman char. 1927
Fi shán az-zól el ya'mil irádat
Allah, huwa ákhi wa ukhti wa
ummi.
- 29 ARABIC: Tunisian Colloquial. Tunisia. 1911
هكذا نقول ان يكون فرح فدام ملائكة
الله يمدتب واحد يتوب
Lk.

WHAT IS THE MUSLIM RESPONSE TO THIS CHRISTIAN ONSLAUGHT?

Figure 8 Reproduction of a Page in The Gospel in Many Tongues

INDEX TO COMBAT KIT

1.	AIDS AND HOMOSEXUALITY	256
2.	ARABS AND ARABIA: In the Christian Bible.	256
3.	ABRAHAM: He wedded his own sister (Sarah) (?)	257
4.	ABSURDITIES in the Book of God (?) the Holy Bible	258
5.	ALCOHOL: A devilish advice in God's (?) Book?	259
6.	APOSTASY	260
7.	BACA IS MECCA	260
8.	BASTARD: This word occurs in the Bible THREE times.	261
9.	CIRCUMCISION: A perpetual pact with God	261
10.	CONTRADICTIONS in the Bible:	261
11.	DAVID: "Man after God's heart"	262
12.	ELOHIM	263
13.	GENEALOGY OF JESUS CHRIST	263
14.	GOD: Qualities ill-benefitting God	263
15.	GOD WITH SMALL "g"	264
16.	GOD: His contradictory attributes	264
17.	GOD: Is not a fabricator of confusion	265
18.	GOD: Further contradictory qualities	266
19.	HOLY GHOST	268
20.	INCEST	269
21.	ISHMAEL OR ISAAC?	272
22.	ISRAELITES: Insatiable whores	273
23.	JEHOVAH: What's his name?	273
24.	JEREMIAH: Made a prophet before his birth	273
25.	JESUS (PBUH): Generalities regarding him	274
26.	JESUS (PBUH) A "GOD"?	277
27.	JESUS (PBUH) A RACIST?	278
28.	JESUS (PBUH) SUNDRY TITBITS	278

29.	JEWS: A rebellious people	279
30.	KETURAH: The third wife of Abraham	280
31.	MASSACRE: At the hands of the Jews	281
32.	MELCHIZEDEK: Outshines Jesus (PBUH)	281
33.	MESSIAH: Translated “Christ”	282
34.	MUHAMMAD (PBUH) in the Bible	282
35.	ONANISM: Mankind's common trait	283
36.	ORIGINAL SIN: The Christian Dogma	283
37.	PAUL: Full of cunning and guile	284
38.	PIGS: See “ Swine ” in the index	285
39.	POLYGAMY	285
40.	PROPHECIES: Empty threats	285
41.	PROPHETS (BUT NAKED): An indictment of Prophethood	286
42.	RAPE: Brother rapes and commits incest with his sister	286
43.	SABBATH: Sabbath as a standing insult to God in the Bible –	287
44.	SARAH: God visits her?	287
45.	SLAVERY: Sanctioned by God	288
46.	SODOMY: Cause of this sickness	288
47.	SONS OF GOD: The Bible ascribes sons by the tons to God.	288
48.	TRINITY: A pagan invention	289
49.	SWINE: The flesh of the swine forbidden	290
50.	WINE: Look for “ Alcohol ” in the index.	291
51.	WHORING: See under “ ISRAELITES ” in the index.	291
52.	WOMEN: Forbidden to open their mouths in the Church	291
53.	WORD OF GOD: Not to add or delete a word from it.	291
54.	WORSHIP: Synonymous with respect, rever, adore, adulate	291

1. AIDS AND HOMOSEXUALITY

The Holy Bible gives the cause for this cancer and blight:

*“Professing themselves to be wise,
they become fools,
And changed the glory of the
incorruptible God into an image made
like CORRUPTIBLE MAN...”* (i.e. man-gods)
*“Wherefore (for this reason), **God also**
gave them up to uncleanness through the
lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour
their own bodies between themselves (in sodomies
and lesbianism),
“Who changed the truth of God (to worship
Him in truth and in spirit) **for a lie, and**
worshipped and served the creature (born
of a woman) **more than the creator...**
For this cause God gave them up unto
vile affections (men with men and women
with women): **for even their women**
Changed the natural use for that which
Is against nature (bestialites);
And likewise also the men, leaving the
natural use of the woman, burned
in their lust one toward another, MEN
WITH MEN...”*

(Holy Bible) Romans 1:22-27

2. ARABS AND ARABIA: In the Christian Bible.

(a) **“The burden upon Arabia...”**

BURDEN: meaning the responsibility of the Muslim Arabs, and of course of all Muslims now to spread the religion of Islam.

Isaiah mentioned this after having seen the vision of a chariot of asses and chariot of camels (Isaiah 21:7).

The chariot of asses turned out to be Jesus (PBUH) who entered Jerusalem riding on two donkeys (Matthew 21:7). Who then was of the **“chariot of camels”**?

It could be none other than Muhammad (PBUH) who came about

six hundred years after the advent of Jesus Christ (PBUH). If this conclusion is not accepted, then this prophecy would still remain unfulfilled.

- (b) ***“...the villages that Kedar doth inhabit”***

Isaiah 42:11

“Arabia and all the princes of Kedar...”

Ezekiel 27:21

The International Standard Bible Encyclopedia quotes the following from A.S. Fulton:

“...of the Ishmaelite tribes, Kedar must have been one of the most important, and thus in later times the name came to be applied to all the wild tribes of the desert. It is through Kedar (Arabic, Keidar) that Muslim genealogists trace the descent of Mohammed from Ishmael.”

- (c) ***“...he (Muhammad PBUH) shined forth from mount Paran (in Arabia), and he came with ten thousand saints.”***
(referring to Muhammad’s conquest of Makkah).

Deuteronomy 33:2

- (d) ***“...and I (God Almighty) will move them (the Jews) to jealousy with those (the Arabs) which are NOT A PEOPLE (a non-entity): I will provoke them (the Jews) to anger with a FOOLISH NATION,”*** *(the pre-Islamic Arabs).*

Deuteronomy 32:21

3. **ABRAHAM:** He wedded his own sister (Sarah) (?)

- (a) ***“Why Saidst thou (O Abraham), she is my sister?
So I might have taken her to me to WIFE...
now take her (Sarah) and go thy way.”***

Genesis 12:19

- (b) ***“and yet INDEED she (Sarah) is my sister (!)...
and she became my (Abraham’s) WIFE.”***

Genesis 20:12

***Hagar Abraham’s wife ! “...and (she, Sarah) gave
her (Hagar) to her husband TO BE HIS WIFE.”***

Genesis 16:3

Unfulfilled prophecy:

- (a) ***“And I will give unto thee (O Abraham), the land wherein
thou art a stranger, ALL THE LAND OF CANAAN (Palestine),
for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God.”***

Genesis 17:8, Also Genesis 13:15 and Exodus 32:13

Poor Abraham (PBUH) did not receive a single square foot of land FREE!

- (b) ***“And he (God Almighty) gave him (Abraham) NO inheritance
in it, NO, NOT SO MUCH TO SET HIS FOOT UPON;
but he (God) promised that he would give it to him for a
possession...”***

Acts 7:5

4. ABSURDITIES in the Book of God (?) the Holy Bible

- (a) ***A TALKING*** ass.

Numbers 22:27-28

- (b) ***FOUR*** footed fowls.

Leviticus 11:20

- (c) *Birth of females a* ***DOUBLE*** pollution.

Leviticus 12:1,2,5

- (d) *Shamgar **KILLS** 600 with an ox goad .*

Judges 3:31

- (e) *Samson **KILLS A THOUSAND** with the jaw bone of a donkey.*

Judges 15:15-16

- (f) ***A SEVEN-HEADED** leopard.*

Revelation 13:1-2

- (g) *To eat **SHIT** and drink **PISS**.*

2 Kings 18:27 and Isaiah 36:12

- (h) ***DUNG** on your faces.*

Malachi 2:3

- (i) *To eat cake with **SHIT**.*

Ezekiel 4:12-15

- (j) *Samson has **SEX** with a whore in Gaza.*

Judges 16:1

- (k) *Ruth **COHABITS** with Boaz in the barn.*

Ruth 3:4-15

- (l) *David **SLEEPS** with a young virgin.*

1 Kings 1:1,3

5. **ALCOHOL:** A devilish advice in God's (?) Book?

- (a) ***“Alcohol is for people who are DYING, for those who are in MISERY. Let them drink and FORGET their poverty and unhappiness.”** (From the “Good News Bible in Today’s English”)*

Proverbs 31:6-7

Alcohol recommended in preference to water!

- (b) ***“Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomach’s sake and thine often infirmities.”***

1 Timothy 5:23

What does the AA (Alcoholics Anonymous) say?

- (c) *O you who have believed, indeed, intoxicants, gambling, (sacrificing on) stone alters (to other than Allah), and divining arrows are but defilement from the work of Satan, so avoid it that you may be successful.*

Surah al-Ma'idah (Holy Qur'an 5:93)

6. APOSTASY

“...neither shall thine eye pity him (the apostate), neither shalt thou spare him, neither shalt thou conceal him:

“But thou shalt SURELY KILL HIM: thine hand shall be first upon him TO PUT HIM TO DEATH...”

Deuteronomy 13:8,9

7. BACA IS MECCA

The Holy Ka'bah built by the prophet Abraham (PBUH) and his son Ishmael (PBUH) is in Mecca.

The name Mecca (Makkah) is mentioned in the Holy Qur'an in 48:24. Another name for Mecca is Bakka, depending on the dialect of the tribe: This is also mentioned once, in Surah 3:96:

“VERILY, THE FIRST HOUSE (OF WORSHIP) APPOINTED FOR MANKIND WAS THAT IN BAKKA (MECCA), FULL OF BLESSINGS, AND GUIDANCE FOR ALL PEOPLE.”

Amazingly enough, this word Bakka is mentioned by the prophet David, (PBUH) in the Bible:

“Who passing through the valley of BACA make it a well, the rain also filleth the pools.”

Psalms 84:6

The well here is the well-known well of Zam-Zam, still present now, close to the Ka'abah; after thousands of years.

8. **BASTARD:** This word occurs in the Bible THREE times.

- (a) ***“The BASTARD shall not enter the congregation of the Lord; even to his tenth generation...”***

Deuteronomy 23:2

- (b) ***“And a BASTARD shall dwell in Ashdod...”***

Zechariah 9:6

- (c) ***“But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then ye are BASTARDS and not sons.”***

Hebrew 12:8

9. **CIRCUMCISION:** A perpetual pact with God

- (a) ***“He that is born in thy house, and he that is bought with thy money (your slaves), MUST needs be circumcised: and my covenant shall be in your flesh for an EVERLASTING covenant.”***

Genesis 17:13

- (b) *The uncircumcised to be **“CUT OFF”** (to be killed).*

Genesis 17:14

10. **CONTRADICTIONS** in the Bible:

- (a) *The **“Lord”** tempted David...*

2 Samuel 24:1

*Or **“Satan”** provoked David....*

1 Chronicles 21:1

- (b) ***700** or **7000?** “Horsemen” or “Footmen”...?*

2 Samuel 10:18 vs 1 Chronicles 4:5

- (c) *Solomon had **2000** baths or **3000** baths?*

1 Kings 7:26 vs 2 Chronicles 4:5

- (d) *Solomon had **4000** stalls of horses or **40000**?*

2 Chronicles 9:25 vs 1 Kings 4:26

- (e) *Did Saul **enquire** of the Lord or **didn't he**?*

1 Samuel 28:6 vs 1 Chronicles 10:13-14

- (f) *Heaven, **no man** hath ascended*

John 3:13

Contradicted by: *2 Kings 2:11 Elijah ascended, and Genesis 5:24 Enoch ascended.*

- (g) *Jesus lost "**None**" of his disciples*

John 18:9

Contradicted by:

He lost only "One"

John 17:12

- (h) ***"ALL"** are sinners*

2 Chronicles 6:36

Contradicted by: *"Whoever is born of God **DOTH NOT** commit sin..."*

1 John 3:9

11. **DAVID: "Man after God's heart"**

Commits adultery with Bath-sheba the wife of Uriah:

- (a) ***"And David sent messengers, and took her (Bath-sheba);***

and she came in unto him, and he LAY (had intercourse) with her...

2 Samuel 11:4

- (b) *David shamelessly dances **NAKED**, see in index under “PROPHETS, but naked.”*

12. **ELOHIM**

In Hebrew it literally means “**gods**”. This word Elohim is consistently translated as “gods” in one hundred and ninety-six places in the Old Testament. The Christians however make an exception when this term occurs the very first time in the Holy Bible. Amazingly this they do in the **very first** book, the **very first** chapter and the very first verse of their so-called Book of God:

“In the beginning God (literally it should have been gods) created the heaven and the earth.”

Genesis 1:1

13. **GENEALOGY OF JESUS CHRIST**

The Christians have been contrived two separate lists of the ancestors of Jesus (PBUH); a. Matthew 1:1-16 and b. Luke 3:23-38. In these two lists consisting of sixty-six names, there is only one name which is common to both and that is of Joseph the carpenter, and he should never have been mentioned since he was never responsible for the conception of Jesus (PBUH).

14. **GOD: Qualities ill-benefitting God**

- (a) A “**hissing**” God

Isaiah 5:26 7:18, Zecharia 10:8

- (b) A “**roaring**” God

Isaiah 42:13, Jeremiah 25:30

- (c) A “**barber**” God

Isaiah 7:20

- (d) A **“penitent”** God

Jeremiah 15:6, Genesis 6:6

- (e) A God **“riding”** a cherub

2 Samuel 22:11

- (f) A God who **murders** 50,070 for looking into a box

1 Samuel 6:19

15. GOD WITH SMALL “g”

In Arabic, Hebrew and Greek there is no differentiation between a capital “G” for God, and a small “g” for god, as in the languages of the Western countries today; yet the Christians have played fast and loose when translating the Bible, i.e.

- (a) *“In whom the **god** (the Devil) of this world*

Hath blinded the minds of them which believe not...

2 Corinthians 4:4

- (b) *“And the Lord said unto Moses, see, I have*

*Made thee a **god** to Pharaoh, and Aaron thy*

Brother shall be thy prophet.”

Exodus 7:1

Compare the above with John 1:1, where the Christians have used capital “G”s and “W”s when referring to Jesus.

16. GOD: His contradictory attributes

- (a) *“No man hath seen God **at any time**”*

John 1:18

- (b) *“God” whom no man hath seen, nor can see..”*

1 Timothy 6:16

- (c) *“And he (God) said, Thou canst see my face:
for there shall no man see me, and live.”*

Exodus 33:20

Contradicted by:

- (a) *“And the Lord spake unto Moses face to face, as a man speaketh unto his friend.”*

Exodus 33:11

- (b) *“And they (Moses, Aaron and seventy others)
saw the God of Israel...”*

Exodus 24:10

- (c) *“And Jacob called the name of the place Peniel: for I have **seen** God **face to face**, and my life is preserved.”*

Genesis 32:30

And as special favour God shows his back parts to Moses:

*“And I (God) will take away my hand, and thou **shalt see** my back parts...”*

Exodus 33:23

17. GOD: Is not a fabricator of confusion

1 Corinthians 14:33

Contradicted by:

- (a) *“...I make peace, and **CREATE EVIL**...”*

Isaiah 45:7

- (b) *“But the spirit of the Lord departed from Saul, and **AN EVIL SPIRIT**
from the Lord troubled him.”*

1 Samuel 16:14

- (c) *And for this cause God shall send them a strong delusion, that they should **BELIEVE A LIE.***

2 Thessalonians 2:11

18. **GOD:** Further contradictory qualities

- (a) **GOD AS AN OMNIPOTENT BEING:**

*“And Jesus saith...for with God **ALL THINGS** are possible.”*

Mark 10:27, also Matthew 19:26

Contradicted by:

*“And the Lord was with Judah; and he drove out the inhabitants of the mountain; but **COULD NOT** drive out the inhabitants of the valley, because they had **CHARIOTS OF IRON.**”*

Judges 1:19

- (b) **GOD’S ANGER ABIDETH FOR A MINUTE:**

*“For his (God’s) anger endureth but a **MOMENT.**”*

Psalms 30:5

Contradicted by:

*“And the Lord’s anger was kindled against Israel, and he made them (The Jews) wander in the wilderness **FORTY YEARS...**”*

Numbers 32:13

- (c) **GOD DOES NOT SHOW ANY SELF-REPROACH:**

*“God is not a man, that he should lie ; neither the son of man, that he should **REPENT...**”*

Numbers 23:19

Contradicted by:

*“...and the Lord **REPENTED** that he made Saul King over Israel.”*

1 Samuel 15:35

*Also: “And the Lord **REPENTED** of the evil which he thought
to do unto his people (Israel).”*

Exodus 32:14

(d) **GOD’S MERCY ENDURETH FOR EVER:**

*“For the Lord is good; and his mercy is **EVERLASTING**.”*

Psalms 100:5

Contradicted by:

*“I (God) remember that which Amalek did to Israel (four hundred years before)...Now go and smite Amalek, and **UTTERLY DESTROY ALL** they have, and spare them not; but slay both man and woman, infant and suckling, ox and sheep, camel and ass (the donkey).”*

1 Samuel 15:3

(e) **GOD DWELLS IN LIGHT:**

*“... (God) dwelling in the **LIGHT** which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see...”*

1 Samuel 15:3

Contradicted by:

*“Then spake Solomon, the Lord said that he would dwell in the **THICK DARKNESS**.”*

1 Kings 8:12

(f) **GOD DOES NOT ENTICE MAN:**

*“Let no man say he is tempted, I am **TEMPTED** of God: for God cannot be tempted with evil,*

NEITHER TEMPTETH *he any man.*”

James 1:13

Contradicted by:

*“And it came to pass after these things, that God **DID TEMPT** Abraham...”*

Genesis 22:1

19. HOLY GHOST

Every sect and denomination of Christian cults claim the “Gift” of the **HOLY GHOST**. This gift is so cheap that 75,000,000 **“BORN AGAIN”** Christians of America are also boasting this possession.

- (a) *“...and he (John the Baptist) shall be filled with the **HOLY GHOST**, even from his mother’s womb.”*

Luke 1:15

I have not yet been able to establish that this phrase... *“from his mother’s womb...”* really means.

Alas, poor Jesus (Peace be upon Him) had to mark time for THIRTY YEARS after his birth to obtain his gift of the **HOLY GHOST** on his baptism at the hands of John the Baptist (*Matthew 3:16*).

- (b) *“...and Elizabeth was filled with the **HOLY GHOST**.”*

Luke 1:41

- (c) *“And his father Zacharias was filled with the **HOLY GHOST**...”*

Luke 1:67

- (d) *“...he (Jesus PBUH) breathed on them, and saith unto them, receive ye the **HOLY GHOST**.”*

John 20:22

- (e) *“But he that shall blaspheme against the **HOLY GHOST**²¹¹ hath never*

211 **Holy Ghost:** The words “Holy Ghost” here, should read the **“HOLY SPIRIT,”** a reference to the Holy Prophet of Islam, the Holy Prophet Muhammad (PBUH).

forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation.”

Mark 3:29

20. INCEST

“Sexual intercourse between two persons who are closely related.” (New Collins Dictionary). For example, between father and daughter, son and mother, father-in-law and daughter-in-law, brother and sister, etc.

INCEST IN GOD'S BOOK (?) BETWEEN A FATHER AND HIS DAUGHTERS:

- (a) *“That night they (both the daughters of Lot) gave him (their father Lot) wine to drink, and the older daughter had INTERCOURSE with him...”*

“The next day the older daughter said to her sister, I slept with him last night: now let's get him drunk again tonight, and you sleep with him. Then each of us will have a child by our father.

“So that night they got him drunk, and the younger daughter had INTERCOURSE with him...”

“In this way both of Lot's daughters became PREGNANT by their father.”

Genesis 19:33-35

(From the *“Good News Bible in Today's English”*)

In the older Versions, like the King James and the Roman Catholic Versions, **“SEXUAL INTERCOURSE”** is vaguely described as **“COLLECTING THE SEED OF OUR FATHER.”**

INCEST BETWEEN MOTHER AND SON:

- (b) *“While Jacob (Israel) was living in the land, Reuben (his firstborn, his eldest son) had SEXUAL INTERCOURSE with*

Bilhah, his father's concubine.²¹²

Genesis 35:22

The older Versions of the Bible, use the word, **“lay”** for SEXUAL INTERCOURSE:

INCEST BETWEEN FATHER-IN-LAW AND DAUGHTER-IN-LAW:

- (c) ***“When Judah saw her (Tamar, his daughter-in-law), he thought she was a prostitute, because she had covered her face.***

“He went over to her at the side of the road and said “ALL RIGHT, HOW MUCH DO YOU CHARGE?” (He did not know that she was his daughter-in-law)²¹³

“She said, what will you give me?” (To have sex with me). “He answered, I WILL SEND YOU A YOUNG GOAT FROM MY FLOCK.

“She said, “All right, if you will give me something to keep as a pledge until you send the goat.

“...He gave them (the pledges) to her. Then had INTERCOURSE, and she became pregnant.”

Genesis 38:15-18 (Quoted from the “Good News Bible”)

Out of this incestuous relationship between a father-in-law and his daughter-in-law, twins were born, who were destined to become the great-grandfathers of Jesus Christ.

See MATTHEW 1:3

“And Judas begat Phares and Zarah of Thamar.”

212 CONCUBINE and WIFE are synonymous terms in the Bible. Look for it in the index under **“KETURAH”** (the third wife of Abraham)

213 These words in parenthesis, i.e. within brackets, from “He did not know” to “daughter-in-law” are not in the original Hebrew manuscripts. They are the editors’ gloss.

INCEST AND RAPE BETWEEN BROTHER AND SISTER:

- (d) “...**he took hold of her** (*Thamar, his sister, not to be confused with Thamar in “C” above*), **and said unto her, come lie with me** (*have sex with me*), **my sister.**

“And she answered him, Nay, my brother (*Amnon, one of the sons of David, the man after God’s own heart*). **Do not force me...**

“But he would not listen to her; and since he was stronger than she was, he overpowered her and RAPED her (*his sister*).”

2 Samuel 13:10-14

WHOLESALE RAPE AND INCEST BETWEEN SON AND HIS MOTHERS!

- (e) **“So they set up a tent for Absalom** (*another son of King David*) **on the palace roof, and in the sight of everyone, Absalom went in and had INTERCOURSE with his father’s concubines.**”

2 Samuel 16:22

“...in the sight of every one” is rendered in the King James version as **“in the sight of all Israel.”** This as a fulfilment of God’s promise to David the King:

“Thus saith the Lord, Behold, I will raise up evil against thee (*David*) **out of thine own house, and I will take THY WIVES before thine eyes, and give them unto thy neighbor** (*actually thy son*) **and he shall lie** (*have sexual intercourse*) **with thy wives in the sight of sun** (*for the whole world to watch the fun*).

For thou didst it secretly (*with Bath-Sheba the wife of Uriah*): **but I will do this thing before ALL Israel, and BEFORE THE SUN.**”

2 Samuel 12:11-12

You can well guess where **“Penthouse”** and **“Playboy”** got their inspiration from. Wherefrom if not from the Book of Books?

- (f) For other various types of **incest** see LEVITICUS 18:8-18, 20:11-14 and 17-21.

21. ISHMAEL OR ISAAC?

A controversy has raged between the people of the Bible and the House of Islam as to which of the sons of Abraham (PBUH), Ishmael or Isaac was offered as a sacrifice.

The Bible is quite clear in designating the offering:

“And he (God Almighty) said, Take now thy son, THINE ONLY SON...

whom thou lovest, and get thee into the land of Moriah; and offer him there for a burnt offering...”

Genesis 22:2

If at any time, an offspring of Abraham (PBUH) can be described as “thine only son” it could only be Ishmael, because for more than thirteen years, he was the only son and seed of Abraham.

God Almighty acknowledges Ishmael as the “son of seed” of Abraham in no less than twelve places in the Book of Genesis alone. At no time was Isaac the only son and seed of Abraham!

The false pen of the scribe was in the hand of the Jews who edited the Books of Moses (PBUH), as the prophet Jeremiah bewails:

“How do ye say, We are wise, and the law (the Torah) of the Lord is with us? Lo, certainly in VAIN made he it; the PEN OF THE SCRIBE IS IN VAIN.”

Jeremiah 8:8

When the Jews are found to convert an Israelite into an Ishmaelite when no motives are involved, then how much easier for them to change the word **“your only son ISHMAEL”** to **“your only son ISAAC!”**

Confirm this Jewish sickness in your Bible:

“Amasa was a man’s son, whose name was Ithra an ISRAELITE...”

2 Samuel 17:25

Contradicted by

“...and the father of Amasa was Jether (Same as Ithra) the ISHMAELITE.”

1 Chronicles 2:17

22. **ISRAELITES:** Insatiable whores

- (a) *“Thou hast played the **WHORE** also with the Assyrians, because thou (the Israelites) wast **UNSATIABLE**; yea, thou hast played the **HARLOT** with them, and yet couldest **NOT BE SATISFIED**.”*

Ezekiel 16:28

WHOREDOMS OF THE 2 SISTERS - AHOLA AND AHOLIBA:

- (b) *And she kept **LUSTING** in the style of concubines belonging to those whose fleshly member (genitals) is as the fleshly member (genitals) of male asses (donkeys) and whose **GENITAL ORGAN** is as the **GENITAL ORGAN** of male horses.”*

Ezekiel 23:1-49 (New Word Translation)

- (c) *“...for the spirit of **WHOREDOMS** hath cause them (the Jews) to err; and they have gone **a-WHORING** from under their God.”*

Hosea 4:12, 6:10 and 9:1

23. **JEHOVAH:** What's his name?

It is an amazing fact, that if Jehovah is the name of God as the Jehovah's Witnesses so boldly claim, then this high-sounding word does not occur even once in the original manuscripts of the twenty-seven books of the New Testament.

24. **JEREMIAH:** Made a prophet before his birth

- (a) ***“Before I formed thee in the belly (of your mother) I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet unto the nations.”***

Jeremiah 1:5

JEREMIAH DECEIVED BY GOD (?):

- (b) *“O Lord, thou hast **DECEIVED** me, and I was **DECEIVED**: thou art*

*stronger than I, and hast **PREVAILED**: I am in derision daily, everyone mocketh me.”*

Jeremiah 20:7

25. **JESUS (PBUH):** Generalities regarding him

HIS FIRST MIRACLE IN THE HOLY BIBLE AND THE HOLY QUR’AN:

To turn water into wine at the marriage feast at Cana

John 2:9

In the Holy Qur’an his first Miracle was to defend his mother, as an infant, against the false accusations of his enemies. *Surah Mariam 19:30-33*

HIS INVECTIVES AGAINST THE ELDERS OF HIS PEOPLE:

(a) *“Ye hypocrites...”*

Matthew 23:13

“Ye wicked and adulterous generation...”

Matthew 12:39

“Ye whited sepulchers...”

Matthew 23:27

“Ye generation of vipers...”

Matthew 23:33

(b) He calls his mother **“WOMAN”** John 2:4, the same manner in which he addresses a prostitute, “...**WOMAN** where are those thine accusers?”

“THE PRINCE OF PEACE,” *boasts that he had not come to bring peace on earth but fire and division!*

*“I came to set the earth on fire, and how I wish that it were **ALREADY KINDLED**.*

*“Do you suppose that I came to bring peace to the world? No, not peace **BUT DIVISION.**”*

Luke 12:49 and 51

(JESUS) NOT GOD! Jesus would not allow anyone even to call him “good”, let alone call him god, even with a small “g”²¹⁴.

“One came and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life?”

*“And Jesus said unto him, **WHY CALLEST THOU ME GOOD?** There is **NONE GOOD BUT ONE, THAT IS GOD...**”*

(JESUS’) POWER NOT HIS OWN:

- (a) *“And Jesus came and spoke unto them, saying All power is **GIVEN** unto me in heaven and in earth.”*

Matthew 28:18

- (b) *“I can of mine own self **DO NOTHING:** as I hear, I judge...”*

John 5:30

- (c) *“...I by the **FINGER OF GOD** cast out devils...”*

Luke 11:20

- (d) *“And Jesus lifted up his eyes (towards heaven), and said, Father, I thank thee that **THOU HAST HEARD ME.***

*“And I know that **THOU HEAREST ME ALWAYS:** but because of the people which stand by I said (my supplication aloud), that **THEY MAY BELIEVE** that thou hast sent me.*

“And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth...”

John 11:41-43

Who then gave life back to Lazarus? The answer is **“GOD!”** For God **heard** the prayer of Jesus, as **“always!”**

214 “Small “g”: See in the index for “GOD” with a small “g”.

LISTEN NOW TO PETER'S TESTIMONY:

(c) *"Ye men of Israel (O Jews!) hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth, **A MAN** approved of God*

*(meaning a prophet) among you by miracles and wonders and signs, which **GOD DID BY HIM** in the midst of you, as ye yourselves also know."*

Acts 2:22

WAS LUKE INSPIRED BY GOD TO SAY THAT JESUS (PBUH) WAS THE SON OF JOSEPH?

*"And Jesus himself began to be ABOUT ("about" the Holy Ghost did not know for sure) thirty years of age, being (**AS WAS SUPPOSED**) the son of Joseph..."*

Luke 3:23

The words "*as was supposed*" appearing in brackets are not in the original Greek manuscript of Luke! These words are a gloss of the translators.

In the different vernacular languages of the world, like Arabic, Afrikaans, Zulu, etc. the words "*as was supposed*" are retained in the translations but the brackets are removed. Thus by removing the brackets the words become the declaration of Luke, and if Luke was inspired then the words are transmuted into an utterance of God. This is how easily the word of man is transformed into the word of God in Christianity.

JESUS (PBUH) TOO SELF-CONSIDERATE:

"There came a woman with a box of very precious ointment, and poured it on his (Jesus' PBUH) head..."

*"But when his **DISCIPLES** saw it, they had **INDIGNATION**, SAYING, to **WHAT PURPOSE IS THIS WASTE?***

"For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poor.

"When Jesus understood it, he said unto them, Why trouble ye the woman? For she hath wrought a good work upon me.

*“For ye have the **POOR ALWAYS WITH YOU**; but me ye have not always.”*

Matthew 26:7-11

26. JESUS (PBUH) A “GOD”?

Powerless

- (a) *“I can of mine own self **DO NOTHING...**”*

John 5:30

HE HAD NO KNOWLEDGE OF THE HEREAFTER:

- (b) *“But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, **NEITHER THE SON**, but the Father.”*

Mark 13:32

HE WAS IGNORANT OF THE SEASONS:

- (c) *“And seeing a fig tree afar of having leaves, he came if happily he might find anything there on: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves, **FOR THE TIME OF FIGS WAS NOT YET.**”*

Mark 11:13

JESUS (PBUH) AS A THIRSTY “GOD”?

- (d) *“...(Jesus) saith, **I THIRST.**”*

John 19:28

JESUS (PBUH) AS A WEEPING “GOD”?

- (e) *“Jesus **WEPT.**”*

John 11:35

Remember that this is the shortest sentence in the Bible! (Only two words).

IMAGINE A “GOD” BEING TEMPTED BY THE DEVIL

- (f) “Where he (Jesus) stayed forty days, being tempted by Satan.”

Mark 1:13

27. JESUS (PBUH) A RACIST?

Only came for the Jews

- (a) “These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them saying, **GO NOT** into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans **ENTER YE NOT**.

“But go ye rather unto the lost sheep of **THE HOUSE OF ISRAEL** (to the Jews only.)

Matthew 10:5-6

- (b) “But he (Jesus) answered and said, I am **NOT SENT** but unto the lost sheep of the **HOUSE OF ISRAEL** (the Jews only).

“Then came she (the Canaanite woman) and worshipped²¹⁵ him, saying Lord, help me (to cure my daughter).

“But he answered and said, it is not meet to take the children’s bread and **CAST IT TO DOGS** (the non-Jews).”

Matthew 15:24-26

28. JESUS (PBUH) SUNDRY TITBITS

JESUS’ (PBUH) SECOND COMING NEVER MATERIALISED:

“But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye unto another, for **VERILY I** say unto you, Ye shall **NOT HAVE GONE** over the cities of Israel, till the **SON OF MAN** (referring to himself) **BE COME**.”

Matthew 10:23

215 These words in parenthesis, i.e. within brackets, from “He did not know” to “daughter-in-law” are not in the original Hebrew manuscripts. They are the editors’ gloss.

The disciples of Jesus fled and they fled, and have now perished for two thousand years, with no sign of the return of Jesus.

JESUS (PBUH) SPOKE IN PARABLES TO DECEIVE THE UNINITIATED:

*“...all these things are done in parables. That seeing they may see, and **NOT** perceive; and hearing they may hear, and **NOT** understand; **LEST** at any time they should be converted, and their sins should be forgiven.”*

Mark 4:11-12

HATE AS FOUNDATION OF HIS (JESUS') FAITH

*“If any man come to me, and **HATE NOT** his father, and mother, and wife, and children...**HE CANNOT** be my disciple.”*

Luke 14:26

PETER CONTRADICTS JESUS (PBUH) REGARDING HIMSELF AS “THE ONLY WAY”:

“Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life; no man cometh unto the father, but by me.”

John 14:6

Contradicted by:

*“Then Peter opened his mouth...but **IN EVERY NATION** he that feareth him (God), and worketh righteousness, **IS ACCEPTED** with him (God).”*

Acts 10:34-35

29. JEWS: A rebellious people

*“**Ye have been rebellious against the Lord from the day that I knew you.**”*

Deuteronomy 9:24

A STIFF-NECKED PEOPLE:

“For I know thy rebellion, and thy stiff neck: behold, while I am yet alive with you this day, ye have been rebellious against the Lord; and how much more after my death?”

Deuteronomy 31:27

A SECOND BONDAGE IN EGYPT:

“And the Lord shall bring you (the Jews) into Egypt again with ships, by the way whereof o spake unto you (Jews), Thou shalt see it no more again: and there ye shall be sold unto your enemies for bondmen and bondwomen, and NO MAN shall buy you.”

Deuteronomy 28:68

“...now will he (the Lord) remember their (the Jews) iniquity, and visit their (the Jews) sins: they shall RETURN to Egypt (for a second bondage).”

Hosea 8:13

THE JEWS TO BE SUBSTITUTED:

“Therefore said I (Jesus) unto you (Jews), The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.”

Matthew 21:43

30. **KETURAH:** The third wife of Abraham

*“Then again Abraham took a **WIFE**, and her name Keturah.”*

Genesis 25:1

Keturah being the **WIFE** of Abraham is being contradicted in the self-same “Word of God” – i.e 1 CHRONICLES 1:32, where Keturah is described as Abraham’s **CONCUBINE**. Here is an extra

contradiction in the Bible, unless **“WIFE”** and **“CONCUBINE”** are synonymous terms.

31. **MASSACRE:** At the hands of the Jews

- (a) *“Now therefore **KILL** every male among the little ones, and **KILL** every woman (female) that hath known man by lying (having sex) with him.
“But keep **ALIVE** for yourselves all the **GIRLS** and all the woman are **VIRGINS.**”*

Numbers 31:17-18

And the Jews salvaged for themselves 32,000 virgins, verse 35; see also verse 40.

- (b) *“**But of the cities of these people, which the Lord thy God doth give thee for an inheritance, thou (O Jews) shalt save alive NOTHING that BREATHETH.**”*

Deuteronomy 20:16

- (c) *“**And they (the Jews) UTTERLY DESTROYED all that was in the city, both man and woman, young and old, ox and sheep, and ASS, with the edge of the sword.**”*(Even donkeys were not spared!)

Joshua 6:21

- (d) *“**He (Joshua) let NONE remain alive.**”*

Joshua 10:28

32. **MELCHIZEDEK:** Outshines Jesus (PBUH)

This High Priest of Salem has qualities which outshines that of even Jesus Christ (Peace be upon Him).

“Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days nor end of life...”

Hebrews 7:3

(These attributes only befit God!)

33. **MESSIAH:** Translated “Christ”

Messiah is a very common noun in Hebrew. Translated into Greek it became “Christos”, which in plain English means **ANOINTED!** Everywhere the word “**anointed**” appears in the English translation of the Bible (any Version) that word in the Hebrew original is invariably the word “**MESSIAH**”! **Here are few ready examples:**

- (a) “*I am the God of Beth-el, where thou **ANOINT-EDEST** (messiah) the **PILLAR**...*” (Christ Pillar!)

Genesis 31:13

- (b) “*And Moses took the **ANOINTING** (messiah) **OIL**, and **ANOINTED** (messiah) the **TABERNACLE**...*” (Christ Oil! And Christ Tabernacle!)

Leviticus 8:10

- (c) “*...he (the Lord) shall give strength unto his king, and exalt the **HORN** of his **ANOINTED** (messiah)...*” (Christ Horn!)

1 Samuel 2:10

- (d) “*Thou art the **ANOINTED** (messiah) **CHERUB**...*” (Christ Cherub!)

Ezekiel 28:14

- (e) “*Thus saith the Lord to his **ANOINTED** (messiah) **CYRUS**...*” (Christ Cyrus!)

Isaiah 45:1

(God addresses even a pagan king as His Messiah!)

34. **MUHAMMAD (PBUH) in the Bible**

Is a true prophet of God according to the Bible.

- (a) “*...**Every spirit** (meaning every prophet) **that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in flesh is of God.**”*

1 John 4.2

Compare with Holy Qur’an 3:45 and many other Qur’anic references where Jesus (PBUH) is referred to as **CHRIST**.

MUHAMMAD MENTIONED BY NAME IN THE BIBLE:

- (b) ***“His mouth is most sweet; yea, he is (Muhammad-im) altogether lovely, this is my beloved, and this is my friend, O daughters of Jerusalem.”***

Song of Solomon 5:16

From the original Hebrew manuscript the word **“MUHUMMEDIM”**, is translated as **“altogether lovely”** which is actually the word **“MUHAMMAD”** with **“im”** added. “IM is the plural of respect in the Hebrew language.

MUHAMMAD IS A “COMFORTER” LIKE JESUS, (PEACE BE UPON THEM):

- (c) ***“And I will pray the father, and he shall give you ANOTHER comforter, that he may abide with you forever.”***

John 14:16

Jesus (PBUH) was the first comforter, and **ANOTHER** would have to be one like him, of the same kind as Jesus, a man and not a ghost.

35. **ONANISM:** Mankind's common trait

“The withdrawal of the penis from the vagina before ejaculation: (The New Collins Dictionary). Medical term – “coitus interruptus.”

“And Judah said to Er’s (deceased) brother Onan. Go and sleep (have sex) with your brother’s widow...”

“But Onan knew that the children would not belong to him (i.e. would not carry his name), so when he had INTERCOURSE with his brother’s widow (Tamar), he left the semen (the older Versions call it “seed”) spill on the ground, so that there would be no children (no name) for his brother.”

Genesis 38:8-9

36. **ORIGINAL SIN:** The Christian Dogma

The Christian dogma that sin is inherited is against all ethics, morality and common sense. It is against the explicit pronouncement of God:

“The soul that sinneth, it shall die.

The son (the progeny of Adam) shall not bear the iniquity of the father (Adam), neither shall the father bear the iniquity of the son; the righteousness of the righteous shall be upon him. But if the wicked will turn from all his sins that he hath committed, and keep all my statutes, and do that which is lawful and right, he shall surely live; HE SHALL NOT DIE.

Ezekiel 18:20-21

- (a) IN ISLAM THE NOTION OF ORIGINAL SIN IS REGARDED AS INCONSISTENT WITH THE JUSTICE OF ALLAH. HOW COULD A JUST AND LOVING GOD MAKE AN INNOCENT CHILD RESPONSIBLE FOR, OR AT LEAST BEAR THE GUILT FOR THE SINS OF A DISTANT ANCESTOR? (Steve A. Johnson)
- (b) NO HEATHEN TRIBE HAS CONCEIVED SO GROTESQUE AN IDEA, INVOLVING AS IT DOES THE ASSUMPTION, THAT MAN WAS BORN WITH A HEREDITARY STAIN UPON HIM, AND THIS STAIN FOR WHICH HE WAS NOT PERSONALLY RESPONSIBLE WAS TO ATONED FOR, AND THAT THE CREATOR OF ALL THINGS HAD TO SACRIFICE HIS ONLY BEGOTTEN SON TO NEUTRALISE THIS MYSTERIOUS CURSE. (Mayor Yeats Brown)

That Jesus (PBUH) himself regarded children as innocent and pure, and NOT BORN IN SIN, is clear from his reported saying:

“Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not, for of such is the kingdom of God...”

Mark 10:14

37. **PAUL:** Full of cunning and guile

On his own admittance being cunning, used deceit:

“But be it so, I did not burden you: nevertheless, being crafty, I CAUGHT

YOU WITH GUILE,²¹⁶*2 Corinthians 12:16*

38. **PIGS:** See **“Swine”** in the index

39. **POLYGAMY**

Solomon the wise had a thousand wives and concubines:

- (a) ***“And he (Solomon) had seven hundred wives, and three hundred concubines: and his wives turned away his heart (toward other gods).”***

1 Kings 11:3

- (b) Abraham the friend if God had more than one wife; and so had Israel (Jacob) and David the king.

There is not a single word of reproach in the “Book of God” the Holy Bible against polygamous marriages.

40. **PROPHECIES:** Empty threats

- (a) ***“But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil thou (O Adam) shalt not eat of it: for IN THE DAY that thou eatest thereof thou shalt SURELY DIE.”***

Genesis 2:17

Contradicted by:

- (b) ***“And all the days that Adam lived were NINE HUNDRED AND THIRTY YEARS: and he died.”***

Genesis 5:5

Amazing! In the language of God (?) **“In the day”** does not mean **“that very day”** but centuries later (?).

According to the Holy Bible the devil was more truthful about the consequence of eating the **“forbidden fruit”** he had assured Eve –

216 These words in parenthesis, i.e. within brackets, from “He did not know” to “daughter-in-law” are not in the original Hebrew manuscripts. They are the editors’ gloss.

- (c) ***“And the serpent (the devil) said unto the woman, Ye shall NOT SURELY DIE.”***

Genesis 3:4

41. **PROPHETS (BUT NAKED):** An indictment of Prophethood

If such are the priests, God bless the congregation –

- (a) ***“And he (Noah) drank of the wine, and was drunken; and he lay NAKED within his tent.”***

Genesis 9:21

- (b) ***“And he (Saul) stripped off his clothes also, and prophesied before Samuel in like manner, and lay down NAKED all day and all that night, Wherefore they say, is Saul also among the prophets?”***

1 Samuel 19:24

- (c) ***“How glorious was the king of Israel (David) today, who UNCOVERED (became naked) himself to day, in the eyes of the handmaids of his servants, as one of the vain fellows shamelessly UNCOVERETH himself!”***

2 Samuel 6:20

- (d) ***“And the Lord said, like as my servant Isaiah hath walked NAKED and barefoot three years...***

“...young and old, NAKED and barefoot, even with their buttocks UNCOVERED, to the shame of Egypt.”

Isaiah 20:3-4

42. **RAPE:** Brother rapes and commits incest with his sister

- (a) ***“Howbeit he (Amnon, one of the sons of David) would not hearken unto her (his sister Tamar’s) voice: but, being stronger than she, forced (raped) her, and LAY (had sex) with her.”***

2 Samuel 13:14

Son commits incest and rapes his mother wholesale!

- (b) **“So they spread Absalom** *(another of sons of David)* **a tent upon the top of the house; and Absalom WENT IN** *(had intercourse)* **unto his father’s concubines** *(same as “wives”, see KETURAH in the index)* **in the sight of ALL ISRAEL.”**

2 Samuel 16:22

43. **SABBATH:** Sabbath as a standing insult to God in the Bible –

*“...for in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, and on the seventh day he rested, and **WAS REFRESHED.**”*

Exodus 31:17

On the contrary the Holy Qur’an states:

“His Kursi extends

Over the heavens

And the earth, and their preservation

Tires Him not.

And He is the Most High,

The Most Great.”

Surah al-Baqarah (Holy Qur’an 2:255)

44. **SARAH:** God visits her?

The Holy Bible does not even spare God from illicit sexual aspersions being ascribed to Him:

In the case of the conception of Jesus Christ (Peace be upon Him), God Almighty arranged for Mary to conceive Jesus by the intervention of the Holy Ghost, as witnessed in the Bible:

- (a) **“The Holy Ghost shall COME UPON thee** *(the question is, how?)* **and the power of the most High shall OVERSHADOW thee** *(again, how?)*

Luke 1:35

Whereas in the case of Isaac, his conception took place in the womb of Sarah by the direct intervention of God himself, as recorded in His Holy Book:

- (b) ***“And the Lord VISITED Sarah, as he had PROMISED; and FULFILLED what he had SPOKEN. And Sarah CONCEIVED...”***

Genesis 21:1-2

45. **SLAVERY:** Sanctioned by God

“And ye, shall take them (the slave) as an inheritance for your children after you, to inherit them (the slaves) for a possession; they shall be your BONDMEN (slaves) for ever...”

Leviticus 25:46

46. **SODOMY:** Cause of this sickness

The Bible’s reason why human beings become lesbians and homosexuals

“Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and WORSHIPPED and SERVED the creature (like men and monkeys) more than the creator...”

“BECAUSE THEY DO THIS (worshipping men and monkeys), God has given them over to shameful passions. Even women pervert the natural use of their sex by unnatural acts (like lesbianism and bestiality).

“In the same way...the men burn with passion for one another (as sodomites and homosexuals)...”

(The Good News Bible) Romans 1:25-27

47. **SONS OF GOD:** The Bible ascribes sons by the tons²¹⁷ to God.

- (a) ***“Which was the son of Enos, which was the son of Seth, which was the son of Adam, which was the SON OF GOD.”***

Luke 3:38

- (b) ***“That the SONS OF GOD came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown.”***

“...when the SONS OF GOD came in unto the daughters of men, and they

217 **TONS:** A ton is 2000 lbs weight, that is about a thousand kilograms

bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown.”

Genesis 6:2 and 4

- (c) “...*Thus saith the Lord, Israel is **MY SON** even my **FIRSTBORN**.*”

Exodus 4:22

- (d) “...*and Ephraim is my **FIRSTBORN**.*”²¹⁸

Jeremiah 31:9

- (e) “...*Thou (O David) **ART MY SON**; this day have I (God) **BEGOTTEN***²¹⁹ *thee.*”

Psalms 2:7

- (f) “*For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the **SONS OF GOD**.*”

Romans 8:14

48. **TRINITY:** A pagan invention

According to the Athanasian Creed:

*“The Father is God, the Son is God,
and the Holy Ghost is God, and yet
there are not three Gods but one God.”*

In this Holy Trinity: “The three Persons are CO-EQUAL and CO-ETERNAL: all alike are UNCREATED and OMNIPOTENT.” (**The Catholic Encyclopedia**)

Thus the Trinity is considered to be: “**one God in three Persons.**”

There is only one verse in the whole of Holy Scripture called the Bible which unequivocally supports this Christian dogma, and that is:

***“For there are three that bear record
in heaven, the Father, the Word, and***

218 “**FIRSTBORN**”: How can there be two “firstborns”?

219 “**BEGOTTEN**”: How can God beget David at the age of forty? “**This day**”?

Holy Ghost; and these three are one.”

The First Epistle of John 5:7

Dr. C.I. Scofield, D.D backed by eight other D.D's in a footnote to this verse opine:

“IT IS GENERALLY AGREED THAT THIS VERSE HAS NO MANUSCRIPT AUTHORITY AND HAS BEEN INSERTED.”

The fundamentalist Christians still retain this fabrication whereas, in all the modern translations including the Revised Standard Version (RSV) this pious fraud has been unceremoniously expunged, thus confirming this Qur'anic refutation:

They have certainly disbelieved who say,

“Allah is the third of three.”

And there is no god except one God.

And if they do not desist

From what they are saying,

There will surely afflict the disbelievers

Among them a painful punishment

Surah al-Ma'idah (Holy Qur'an 5:73)

Thank God! The Christians are willy-nilly discovering pagan forgeries in their “Word of God”, but they are still dragging their feet.

49. **SWINE:** The flesh of the swine forbidden

- (a) *“Of their flesh (of the swine) shall ye **NOT EAT**, and their carcase ye shall **NOT TOUCH**; they are unclean to you.”*

Leviticus 11:8

Jesus (PBUH) destroyed 2000 pigs to heal one man –

- (b) *“And forthwith Jesus gave them leave (permission). And the unclean spirits (the devils) went out, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand); and were choked in the sea.”*

Mark 5:13

50. **WINE:** Look for “**Alcohol**” in the index.
51. **WHORING:** See under “**ISRAELITES**” in the index.
52. **WOMEN:** Forbidden to open their mouths in the Church
- (a) “...for it is a **SHAME** for women to speak in the Church.”

1 Corinthians 14:34-35

- (b) “To **chop off her hands** for saving her husband’s life.

Deuteronomy 25:11-12

- (c) Her **husband to rule** over her.

Genesis 3:16

*The **head of the woman is** the man.*

1 Corinthians 11:3

*Man can **sell** his daughter.*

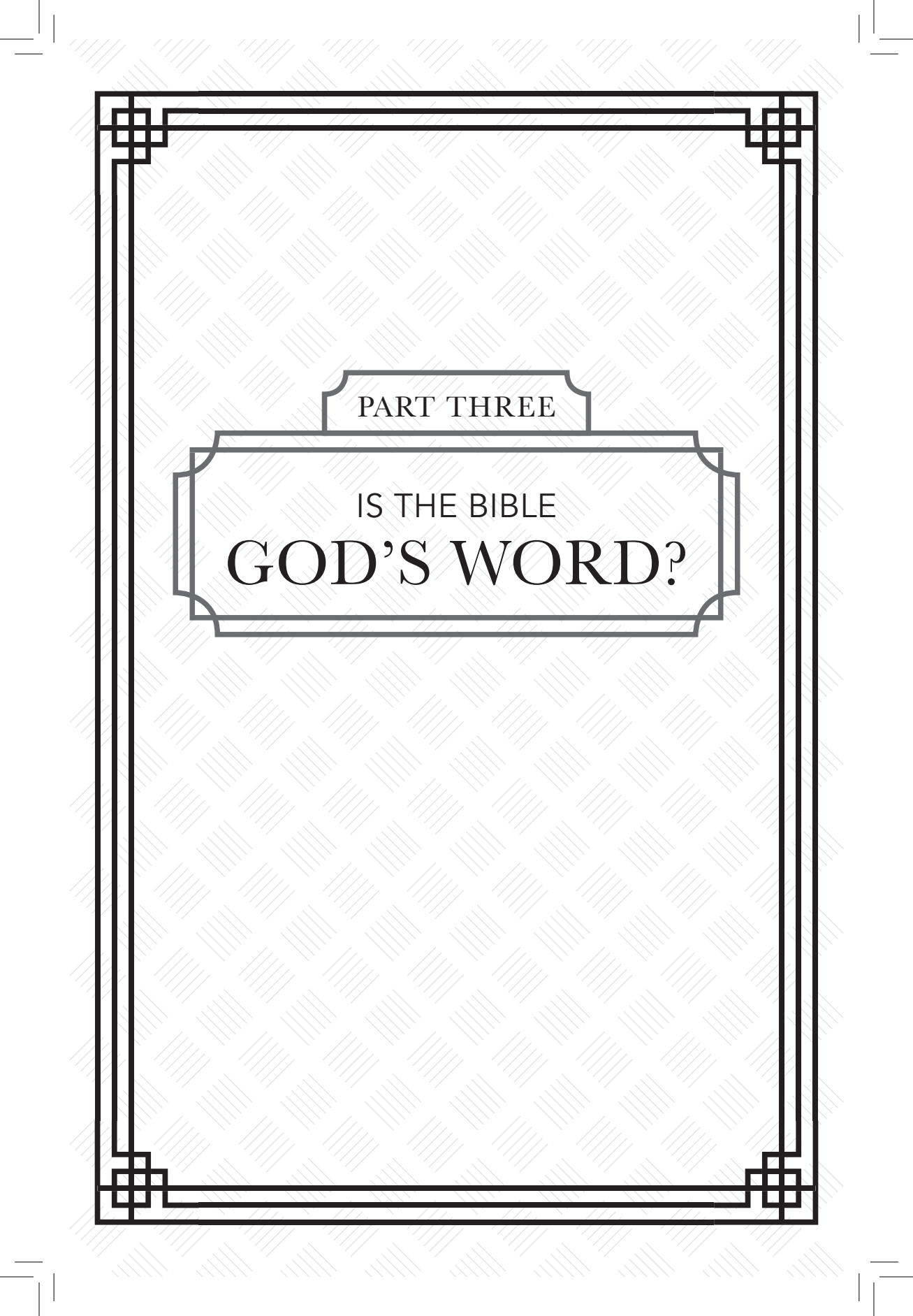
Exodus 21:7

53. **WORD OF GOD:** Not to add or delete a word from it.
- “Whatsoever thing I command you,
Observe to do it; and thou shalt not
add thereto, nor diminish from it.”**

Deuteronomy 12:32

54. **WORSHIP:** Synonymous with respect, rever, adore, adulate
- The word “**Worship**” in Mark 5:6 and many other places means to adore, to adulate, to respect, to revere. Compare the same verse with LUKE 8:28 where the word “**worship**” is alternatively recorded as “**FELL DOWN BEFORE HIM.**”





PART THREE

IS THE BIBLE
GOD'S WORD?

CHAPTER ONE

WHAT THEY SAY?

CHRISTIAN CONFESS

Dr. W. Graham Scroggie of the MOODY BIBLE INSTITUTE, Chicago, one of the most prestigious Christian Evangelical Mission in the world, answering the question - **“Is the Bible the Word of God?”** (also the title of his book), under the heading: **IT IS HUMAN, YET DIVINE**, says on page 17:

“Yes, the Bible is **human**, though some, out of zeal which is not according to knowledge,²²⁰ have denied this. Those books²²¹ have passed through the **minds of men**, are written in the **language of men**, were penned by the **hands of men**, and bear in their style the **characteristics of men**.” (Emphasis added).

Another erudite Christian scholar, Kenneth Cragg, the Anglican Bishop of Jerusalem, says on page 277 of his book, **“The Call of the Minaret”**:

“Not so the New Testament²²²...There is **condensation** and **editing**;²²³ there is **choice**, **reproduction** and **witness**. The Gospels have come through the **mind of the Church behind the authors**. They represent **experience** and **history**.”²²⁴

220 Out of ignorance.

221 The Bible is not just a Book. It is a selection and compilation of many books.

222 As opposed to the Qur'an.

223 Another word for interpolating.

224 Another word for interpolating

If words have any meaning, do we need to add another word of comment to prove our case? No! But the professional propagandists, after letting the cat out of the bag, still have the face to try to make their readers believe that they have proved beyond the shadow of any doubt that the Bible is “irrefragable²²⁵ Word of God.” Their semantic gymnastics – equivocating, and playing with words – is amazing!

Both these Doctors of Religion are telling us in the clearest language humanly possible that the Bible is the handiwork of language humanly possible that the Bible is the handiwork of man, all the while pretending that they are proving to the contrary. An old Arab saying goes: “IF SUCH ARE THE PRIESTS, GOD BLESS THE CONGREGATION.”

With this sort of drivel, the hot-gospeller and the Bible-thumper is “inspired” to harry the “heathen”.²²⁶ A theological student – a not-yet-qualified young evangelist – from the University of Witwatersrand, became a frequent visitor to the Newtown Mosque in Johannesburg, with the “noble” thought of “witnessing”²²⁷ to the members of its congregation. When I was introduced to him, (and having learnt his purpose), I invited him to lunch at my brother’s residence – a stone’s throw from the Mosque. While discussing the authenticity if the Bible over the dinner table and sensing this stubborn dogmatism, I put out a feeler: “Your **Professor** Geyser, (The Head of the Department of Theology) does not believe that the Bible to be the Word of God.” Without the slightest surprise he answered, “I know.” Now I personally had no knowledge of the Professor’s conviction about the Bible. I had only assumed so from a controversy which raged around him about the “Divinity of Christ.”²²⁸ He had taken issue with the orthodox believers on this point some years ago. I continued further, saying “Your **lecturer** does not believe the Bible as being God’s Word.” The young evangelist responded again, “I know.” But he continued this time with the words, “**but I believe** that it is the Word of God!” There is no real remedy for such people. Even Jesus bewailed this sickness:

225 Emphasis are mine.

226 See “**How Lost are the Heathen?**” by the same MOODY PRESS of Dr. Scroggie.

227 When the Christian talks of “witnessing” he means propagating, proselytizing, converting.

228 This subject will be extensively dealt with, **Insha-Allah** in – “**CHRIST IN ISLAM**” in Volume III of this series.

***“...seeing they see not; and hearing they hear not,
neither do they understand.”***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 13:13

Al-Qur'an, the Holy Book of God, also condemns this mulish mentality:

صُمُّكُمْ عُمًى فَهُمْ لَا يَرْجِعُونَ

Deaf, dumb and blind - so they will not return (to the right path).

Surah al-Baqarah (*Holy Qur'an* 2:18)

These pages are now addressed to those sincerely humble souls, who are genuinely interested in seeking the Light of God, and who wish to be guided by it. As for the other, with a sickness in their souls, the facts presented therein can only increase the disease of their hearts

CHAPTER TWO

THE MUSLIMS' STANDPOINT

PRESUMPTUOUS CHRISTIANS

Whether Catholic, Protestant or a “Cultist,” of the thousand-and-one-sects-and-denominations-of-Christianity, never will you find a missionary who will not, **prima facie**, presuppose that his potential convert accepts his “Holy Bible” as the book of final authority on every religious opinion. The only answer the prospective proselyte has, is to quote verses from the Bible which are contradictory to the missionary’s or debate their interpretations.

THE DOGGED QUESTION

When the Muslim proves his point from the Christian’s own Holy Scripture, and when the professional priest, parson or predikant cannot refute the arguments – the inevitable Christian evasion is – “DO YOU ACCEPT THE BIBLE AS GOD’S WORD?” On the face of it, the question seems to be an easy one, but a simple “Yes” or “No” cannot be given as an answer. You see, one has first to explain one’s position. But the Christian will not give one the opportunity. He gets impatient. “Answer – ‘Yes or No!’” he insists. The Jews did the same to Jesus two thousand years ago, except the surprisingly he was not strait-jacketed, as is the fashion today!

The reader will readily agree that things are always either BLACK or WHITE. Between these two extremes there various shades of GREY. If you say “Yes” to his question, then it would mean that you are prepared to swallow everything HOOK, LINE and SINKER, from **Genesis** to **Revelation** from his Bible. If you respond with a “NO,” he quickly unhooks himself from the facts you have presented, and rallies support from

his co-religionists in the audience with: "You see, this man does not believe in the Bible! What right has he to expound his case from **our** Book?" with this type of argument he rests content that he has safely evaded the issue. What is the **Muballigh**²²⁹ to do? He has to explain his position **vis-à-vis** the Bible, as he ought to do.

THREE GRADES OF EVIDENCE

We Muslims have no hesitation in acknowledging that in the Bible, there are three different kinds of witnessing recognizable without any need of specialized training. These are:

1. You will be able to recognize in the Bible what may be described as **"The Word of God."**
2. You will also be able to discern what can be described as the **"Words of a Prophet of God."**
3. And you will most readily observe that the bulk of the Bible is the records of eye witnesses or ear witnesses, or people writing from hearsay. As much they are the **"Words of a Historian."**

You do not have to hunt for examples of these different types of evidences in the Bible. The following quotations will make the position crystal-clear:

The **FIRST** Type:

(a) *"**I** will raise them up a prophet...and **I** will put my words in...and he shall speak unto them all that o shall command him."*

(Holy Bible) Deuteronomy 18:18

(b) ***I**, even **I**, am the Lord, and beside **me** there is no saviour."*

(Holy Bible) Isaiah 43:11

(c) *"Look unto **me**, and be ye saved, all the end of the earth: for **I** am God, and there is none else."*

(Holy Bible) Isaiah 45:22

Note the first person pronoun singular (emphasised) in the above references, and without any difficulty you will agree that the statements seem to have the sound of being GOD'S WORD.

229 **MUBALLIGH**: The Propagator of Islam.

The **SECOND** Type:

(a) “**Jesus cried B** *with a loud voice, saying **Eli, Eli, lama sabachtani?...***”

(Holy Bible) Matthew 27:46

(b) “**and Jesus answered him,** *The first of all the commandments is, **Hear, O Israel; the Lord of our God is one Lord:***”

(Holy Bible) Mark 12:29

(c) “**And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? There is none good but one, that is God.**”

(Holy Bible) Mark 10:18

Even a child will be able to affirm that: Jesus “**cried**” Jesus “**answered,**” and Jesus “**said,**” are the words of the one to whom they are attributed, i.e. the WORDS OF PROPHET OF GOD.

The **THIRD** Type:

*“And seeing a fig tree afar off having leaves, **he**, (JESUS) came, if haply **he** (JESUS) might find anything thereon: and when **he** (JESUS) came to it, **he** (JESUS) found nothing but leaves...*

(Holy Bible) Mark 11:13

The bulk of the Bible is a witnessing of **THIRD** kind. These are the words of a **third** person. Note the underlined pronouns. They are not the Words of God or of His prophet, but the WORDS OF A HISTORIAN.

For the Muslim it is quite easy to distinguish the above types of evidence, because he also has them in his own faith. But of the followers of the different religions, he is the most fortunate in this that his various records are contained in **separate** Books!

ONE: The first kind – THE WORD OF GOD – is found in a Book called **The Holy Qur'an**.

TWO: The second kind – THE WORDS OF THE PROPHET OF GOD, (Muhammad, may the Peace and Blessings of Allah be upon Him) are recorded in the Books of Traditions called **The Hadith.**

THREE: Evidence of the third kind abounds in different volumes of Islamic history, written by some of high integrity and learning, and others of lesser trustworthiness, but the Muslim advisedly keeps his Books in separate volumes!

The Muslim keeps the above three types of evidence jealousy apart, in their proper gradations of authority. He never equates them. On the other hand, the “Holy Bible” contains a motley type of literature, which comprises the embarrassing kind, the sordid, and the obscene – all under the same cover. A Christian is forced to concede equal spiritual import and authority to all, and is thus unfortunate in this regard.

CHAPTER THREE

THE MULTIPLE BIBLE VERSIONS

It will now be easy for us to analyze a Christian's claim about his Holy Book.

SEPARATING THE WHEAT FROM THE CHAFF

Before we scrutinize the various Versions, let us clarify our own belief regarding the Books of God. When we say that we believe in the **Tauraat**, the **Zaboor**, the **Injeel** and the **Qur'an**, what do we really mean? We already know that the Holy Qur'an is the infallible Word of God, revealed to our Holy Prophet Hazrat Muhammad Mustapha (Peace be upon Him) word for word, through the agency of the Archangel Jibraeel (known as Gabriel in English), and perfectly preserved and protected from human tampering for the past fourteen hundred years!²³⁰ Even hostile critics of Islam have grudgingly vouched for the purity of the Holy Qur'an" **"THERE IS PROBABLY IN THE WORLD NO OTHER BOOK WHICH HAS REMAINED TWELVE CENTURIES BOOK WHICH HAS REMAINED TWELVE CENTURIES** (now fourteen) **WITH SO PURE A TEXT."** – (Sir William Muir)

The **Tauraat** we Muslims believe in is not the "Torah" of the Jews and the Christians, though the words – one Arabic, the other Hebrew – are the same. We believe that whatever the Holy Prophet Moses (Peace be upon Him) preached to his people, was the revelation from God Almighty, but that Moses was **not** the author of those "books" attributed to him by the Jews and the Christians.²³¹

230 Whether Muslim or non-Muslim, you do not have to accept this claim of faith alone. You can verify the fact that Al-Qur'an is the Word of God.

231 More evidence on page 321 – "Moses not the author of the Biblical **"Torah."**

Likewise, we believe that the Zabbor was the revelation of God granted to Hazrat Dawood (David) (Peace be upon Him), but that the present Psalms associated with his name are **not** that revelation. The Christians themselves do **not** insist that David is the sole author of “his” Psalms.²³²

What about the **Injeel**? INJEEL means the “Gospel” or “good news” which Jesus Christ preached during his short ministry. The “Gospel” writers often mention Jesus going about and preaching the Gospel (the **Injeel**):

1. *“And Jesus went...preaching the **gospel**...and healing every disease among the people.”*

(Holy Bible) Matthew 9:35

2. *“...but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the **gospel’s**, the same shall save it.”*

(Holy Bible) Mark 8:35

3. *“...preached the **gospel**...”*

(Holy Bible) Luke 20:1

The “gospel” is a frequently-used word, but what Gospel did Jesus preach? Of the 27 books of the New Testament, only a small fraction can be accepted as the words of Jesus. The Christians boast about the Gospels according to St. Matthew, according to St. Mark, according to St. Luke and according to St. John, but there is not a single Gospel “**according**” to (St.) Jesus himself! We **sincerely** believe that everything Christ (may the Peace and Blessings of God be upon Him) preached was from God. That was the **Injeel**, the good news and the guidance of God for the children of Israel. In his lifetime Jesus never wrote a single word, nor did he instruct anyone to do so. What passes off as the “GOSPELS” today are the works of anonymous hands!

The question before us is: “**Do you accept that the Bible is God’s Word?**” The question is really in the form of a challenge. The questioner

232 See page 358, Christian “Brains Trust” confess – “Author: Principally David, **though there are other writers.**”

is not simply seeking enlightenment. The question is posed in the spirit of a debate. We have every right to demand in a similar vein – “Which Bible are you talking about?”, we may ask. “Why, there is only ONE Bible!” he mutters.

THE CATHOLIC BIBLE

Holding the “**Douay**,” Roman Catholic Version of the Bible aloft in my hand, I ask, “Do **YOU** accept **THIS** Bible as the Word of God?” For reasons best known to themselves, the Catholic Truth Society have published their Version of the Bible in a very short, stumpy form. This Version is a very odd proportion of the numerous Versions in the market today. The Christian questioner is taken aback. “What Bible is that?” he asks. “Why, I thought you said that there was only ONE Bible!” I remind him. “Y-e-s,” he murmurs hesitantly, “but what Version is that?” “Why, would that make any difference?” I enquire. Of course it does, and the professional preacher knows that it does. He is only bluffing with his “ONE Bible” claim.

The Roman Catholic Bible was published at Rheims in 1582, from Jerome’s Latin Vulgate and reproduced at Douay in 1609. As such the **RCV** (Roman Catholic Version) is the oldest Version that one can still buy today. Despite its antiquity, the whole of the Protestant world, including the “cults”²³³ condemn the **RCV** because it contains seven extra “books” which they contemptuously refer to as the “**apocrypha**,” i.e. of DOUBTFUL AUTHORITY. Notwithstanding the dire warning contained in the Apocalypse, which is the last book in the **RCV** (renamed as “**Revelation**” by the Protestants), it is “revealed”:

*“...If any man shall add **to these things** (or delete)
God shall add unto him the plagues written in this book.”*

(Holy Bible) Revelation 22:18-19

But who cares! They do not really believe! The Protestants have bravely **expunged seven whole books** from their Book of God!

The outcasts are:

233 This disparaging title is given by the orthodox to Jehovah's Witnesses, the Seventh Day Adventists and a thousand other sets and denominations with whom they do not see eye to eye.

- The Book of Judith
- The Book of Tobias
- The Book of Baruch
- The Book of Esther, etc.

THE PROTESTANT BIBLE

Sir Winston Churchill has some pertinent things to say about the Authorised Version (**AV**) of the Protestant Bible, which is also widely known as the “King James Version (**KJV**)”.

“THE AUTHORISED VERSION OF THE BIBLE WAS PUBLISHED IN 1611 BY THE **WILL AND COMMAND OF HIS MAJESTY KING JAMES THE 1ST** WHOSE NAME IT BEARS TILL TODAY.”

The Roman Catholics, believing as they do that the Protestants have mutilated the Book of God, are yet aiding and abetting the Protestant “crime” by forcing their native converts to purchase the Authorised Version (**AV**) of the Bible, which is the only Bible available in some 1500 languages of the lesser developed nations of the world. The Roman Catholics milk their own cows, but the feeding is left to the Protestants! The overwhelming majority of Christians – both Catholics and Protestant – use the **Authorised (AV)** or the **King James Version (KJV)** as it is alternatively called.

GLOWING TRIBUTES

First published, as Sir Winston says, in 1611, and then revised in 1881 (**RV**), and now re-revised and brought up to date as the **Revised Standard Version (RSV)** 1952, and now again re-revised in 1971 (still **RSV** for short). Let us see what opinion Christendom has of this most revised Bible, the **RSV**:-

1. “THE FINEST VERSION WHICH HAS BEEN PRODUCED IN THE PRESENT CENTURY.” (**Church of England Newspaper**)
2. “A COMPLETELY FRESH TRANSLATION BY SCHOLARS OF THE HIGHEST EMINENCE.” – (**Times Literary Supplement**)
3. “THE WELL-LOVED CHARACTERISTICS OF THE AUTHORISED VERSION COMBINED WITH A NEW ACCURACY OF TRANSLATION.” – (**Life and Work**)
4. “THE MOST ACCURATE AND CLOSE RENDERING OF THE

ORIGINAL" – (**The Times**)

The publishers (Collins) themselves, in their notes on the Bible at the end of their production, say on page 10: "THIS BIBLE (**RSV**), IS THE PRODUCT OF **THIRTY-TWO SCHOLARS**, ASSISTED BY AN ADVISORY COMMITTEE REPRESENTING **FIFTY CO-OPERATING DENOMINATIONS**." Why all this boasting? To make the gullible public buy their product? All these testimonies convince the purchaser that he is backing the tight horse, while the purchaser little suspecting that he is being taken for a ride.

"THE WORLD'S BEST SELLER"

But what about the Authorised Version of the Bible (**AV**), the "World's Best Seller?" These Revisers, all good salesman, have some very pretty things to say about it. However, their page iii, paragraph six of the PREFACE of the **RSV** reads: (See Figure 9 on page 306 for photographic reproduction)

"THE KING JAMES VERSION (alternative description of AV) HAS WITH GOOD REASON BEEN TERMED '**THE NOBLEST MONUMENT OF ENGLISH PROSE.**' ITS REVISERS IN 1881 EXPRESSED ADMIRATION FOR "**ITS SIMPLICITY, ITS DIGNITY, ITS POWER, ITS HAPPY TURNS OF EXPRESSION...THE MUSIC OF ITS CADENCES, AND THE FELICITIES OF ITS RHYTHM.**' IT ENTERED, AS NO OTHER BOOK, HAS, INTO THE MAKING OF THE PERSONAL CHARACTER AND THE PUBLIC INSTITUTIONS OF THE ENGLISH-SPEAKING PEOPLES. WE OWE TO AN INCALCULABLE DEBT."

Can you, dear reader, imagine a more magnificent tribute being paid to the "Book of Books" than the above? I, for one, cannot. Let the believing Christian now steel himself for the unkindest blow of all from his own beloved Lawyers of Religion; for in the very same breath they day:

"YET THE KING JAMES VERSION HAS GRAVE DEFECTS."

And, "THAT THESE DEFECTS ARE **SO MANY AND SO SERIOUS AS TO CALL FOR REVISION...**" This is straight from the horse's mouth, i.e. the orthodox Christian scholars of "**the highest eminence.**" Another galaxy of Doctors of Divinity are now required to produce an encyclopedia explaining the cause of those GRAVE AND SERIOUS

DEFECTS in their Holy writ and their reasons for eliminating them.

PREFACE

THE Revised Standard Version of the Bible is an authorized revision of the American Standard Version, published in 1901, which was a revision of the King James Version, published in 1611.

The first English version of the Scriptures made by direct translation from the original Hebrew and Greek, and the first to be printed, was the work of William Tyndale. He met bitter opposition. He was accused of willfully perverting the meaning of the Scriptures, and his New Testaments were ordered to be burned as "untrue translations." He was finally betrayed into the hands of his enemies, and in October 1536, was publicly executed and burned at the stake.

Yet Tyndale's work became the foundation of subsequent English versions, notably those of Coverdale, 1535; Thomas Matthew (probably a pseudonym for John Rogers), 1537; the Great Bible, 1539; the Geneva Bible, 1560; and the Bishops' Bible, 1568. In 1582 a translation of the New Testament, made from the Latin Vulgate by Roman Catholic scholars, was published at Rheims.

The translators who made the King James Version took into account all of these preceding versions; and comparison shows that it owes something to each of them. It kept felicitous phrases and apt expressions, from whatever source, which had stood the test of public usage. It owed most, especially in the New Testament, to Tyndale.

The King James Version had to compete with the Geneva Bible in popular use; but in the end it prevailed, and for more than two and a half centuries no other authorized translation of the Bible into English was made. The King James Version became the "Authorized Version" of the English-speaking peoples.

The King James Version has with good reason been termed "the noblest monument of English prose." Its revisers in 1881 expressed admiration for "its simplicity, its dignity, its power, its happy turns of expression . . . the music of its cadences, and the felicities of its rhythm." It entered, as no other book has, into the making of the personal character and the public institutions of the English-speaking peoples. We owe to it an incalculable debt.

Yet the King James Version has grave defects. By the middle of the nineteenth century, the development of Biblical studies and the discovery of many manuscripts more ancient than those upon which the King James Version was based, made it manifest that these defects are so many and so serious as to call for revision of the English translation. The task was undertaken, by authority of the Church of England, in 1870. The English Revised Version of the Bible was published in 1881-1885; and the American Standard Version, its variant embodying the preferences of the American scholars associated in the work, was published in 1901.

Because of unhappy experience with unauthorized publications in the two decades between 1881 and 1901, which tampered with the text of the English Revised Version in the supposed interest of the American public, the American Standard Version was copyrighted, to protect the text from unauthorized changes. In 1928 this copyright was acquired by the International Council of Religious Education, and thus passed into the ownership of the churches of the United States and Canada which were associated in this Council through their boards of education and publication.

The Council appointed a committee of scholars to have charge of the text of the American Standard Version and to undertake inquiry as to whether

Figure 9 Photographic Reproduction from the R.S.V 1971

CHAPTER FOUR

FIFTY THOUSAND ERRORS (?)

The Jehovah's Witnesses in their **"AWAKE!"** Magazine dated 8 September, 1957, carried this startling headline – **"50,000 ERRORS IN THE BIBLE?"** (See Figure 10 on page 308).

While I was still formulating the theme of this booklet, I heard a knock at my door one Sunday morning. I opened the door. A European gentleman stood there, grinning broadly. "Good morning!" he said. "Good morning," I replied. He was offering me his **"Awake"** and **"Watchtower"** magazines. Yes, a Jehovah's Witness! If a few had knocked at your door previously, you will recognize them immediately. The most supercilious lot of people who ever knocked at people's doors! I invited him in.

As soon as he settled down, I produced the full reproduction of what you see on page 308. Pointing to the monograph at the top of the page, I



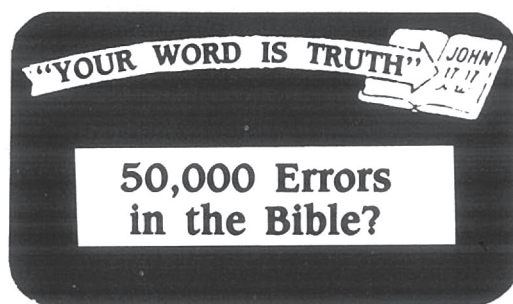
asked, "Is this yours?" He readily recognized his own. I said, "It says: 50 000 Errors in the Bible, is it true?" "What's that!" he exclaimed. I repeated, "I said, that it says, that there are 50 000 errors in your Bible." "Where did you get that?" he asked. (This was published 35 years ago, when he was perhaps a little nipper). I said "Leave the fancy talk aside – is this yours?" pointing again to the monograph – **"Awake!"** He said, "Can



Volume XXXVIII

Brooklyn N.Y., September 8, 1957

Number 17



RECENTLY a young man purchased a King James Version Bible thinking it was without error. One day when glancing through a back issue of *Look* magazine he came across an article entitled "The Truth About the Bible," which said that "as early as 1720, an English authority estimated that there were at least 20,000 errors in the two editions of the New Testament commonly read by Protestants and Catholics. Modern students say there are probably 50,000 errors." The young man was shocked. His faith in the Bible's authenticity was shaken. "How can the Bible be reliable when it contains thousands of serious discrepancies and inaccuracies?" he asks.

BY SCHOLARS?

Figure 10 Reproduction of Awake! - September 8, 1957

I have a look?" "Of course," I said. I handed him the page. He started perusing. The (the Jehovah's Witnesses) are trained. They attend classes five times a week in their "**Kingdom Halls.**" Naturally, they are the fittest missionaries among the thousand-and-one sects and denominations of Christendom. They are taught that when concerned, do not commit yourself to anything, do not open your mouths. Wait for the Holy Ghost to inspire you with what to say.

I silently kept watching him, while he browsed the page. Suddenly he looked up. He had found it. The "Holy Ghost" had tickled him. He began, "The article says that **"most of those errors have been eliminated."** I asked "if **MOST** are eliminated, how many remain out of the 50 000? – 5000? 500? 50? Even if 50 remain, do you attribute those errors to God?" he was speechless. He excused himself by suggesting that he will come again with some senior member of his church. That will be the day!

If I had this booklet ready, I would have offered him, saying – "I would like to do you a favour, give me your name and address, and your telephone number.²³⁴ I will **lend** you this booklet – **"IS THE BIBLE GOD'S WORD?"** for 90 days. I want a written reply!" If you do this, and few other Muslims do the same, they and other missionaries will never darken your doors again. I believe that this publication will prove the most effective talisman to date. **Insha-Allah!**

This "cult" of Jehovah's Witnesses which is so strong in its condemnation of the orthodox Trinitarians, for praying with the "Word of God," is itself playing the same game of semantic gymnastics. In the article under the review – **"50 000 ERRORS ON THE BIBLE?"** – they say: "there are **probably** 50 000 errors...errors that have **crept** into the Bible text...50 000 **such serious** (?) errors...**most** of these **so-called** errors...**as a whole** the Bible is accurate." (?)

We do not have the time and space to go into the tens of thousands of – grave or mirror – defects that the authors of the Revised Standard Version (**RSV**) have attempted to revise. We leave that privilege to the Christian scholars of the Bible. Here I will endeavour to cast just a cursory glance at a "half-a-dozen" or so of those "minor" changes.

1. "Therefore the Lord himself

234 When any Bible-peddler knocks on your door, make a point of asking his name, address and telephone number. Write it down. If he or she does not co-operate, show them the door. Follow them up in their own homes. **You owe it to them!**

***shall give you a sign:
behold, a VIRGIN shall conceive,
and shall call his name Immanuel.”***

(Holy Bible) Isaiah 7:14 – AV

The indispensable “VIRGIN” in the above verse has now been replaced in the **RSV** with the phrase “**a young woman,**” which is the correct translation of the Hebrew word **almáh**. Almáh is the word which occurred all along in the Hebrew text and NOT **bethulah** which means VIRGIN. This correction is only to be found in the English language translation, as the **RSV** is only published in this tongue. For the African and the Afrikaner, the Arab and the Zulu, in fact, in the 1 500 other languages of the world, Christians are made to continue to swallow the misnomer “VIRGIN.”

BEGOTTEN, NOT MADE

“Jesus is the only begotten son of God, **begotten** not **made,**” is an adjunct of the orthodox catechism, leaning for support on the following:

***2. “For God so loved the world,
that he gave his only BEGOTTEN son,
that whosoever believeth in him
should not perish,
but have everlasting life.”***

(Holy Bible) John 3:16-AV

No priest worth his cloth would fail to quote “**the only BEGOTTEN of the Father!**” when preaching to a prospective convert. But this fabrication – “BEGOTTEN” – has now been unceremoniously excised by the Bible Revisers, without a word of excuse. They are as silent as church mice and would not draw the reader’s attention to their furtive excision. This blasphemous word “BEGOTTEN” was another of the many such interpolations in the “Holy Bible.” God Almighty condemned this blasphemy in the strongest terms soon after its innovation. He did not wait for 2000 years for Bible scholars to reveal the fraud.

وَقَالُوا آتَّخَذَ الرَّحْمَنُ وَلَدًا

And they say “The Most Merciful has taken (for Himself) a son.”

لَقَدْ جِئْتُمْ شَيْئًا إِدًّا

You have done an atrocious thing

تَكَادُ السَّمَوَاتُ يَتَفَطَّرْنَ مِنْهُ وَتَنْشَقُّ الْأَرْضُ وَتَخِرُّ الْجِبَالُ هَدًّا

The heavens almost rupture therefrom and the earth splits open and the mountains collapse in devastation

أَنْ دَعَوْا لِلرَّحْمَنِ وَلَدًا

That they attribute to the Most Merciful a son.

وَمَا يَنْبَغِي لِلرَّحْمَنِ أَنْ يَتَّخِذَ وَلَدًا

And it is not appropriate for the Most Merciful that He should take a son.

Surah Maryam (Holy Qur'an 19:88–92)

The Muslims World should congratulate the **“Fifty co-operating denominations”** of Christendom and their Brains Trust the **“Thirty-two scholars of the highest eminence”** for bringing their Holy Bible a degree nearer to the Qur'anic truth.

لَمْ يَلِدْ وَلَمْ يُولَدْ

He neither begets nor is born

Surah al-Ikhlās (Holy Qur'an 112:3)

“CHRISTIAN MESS-A-MATHICS”

3. **“For there are three that bear record in heaven, the FATHER, the WORD, and the HOLY GHOST: and these three are one.”**

(Holy Bible) 1st Epistle of John 5:7- AV

This verse is the closest approximation to what the Christians call their

Holy Trinity in their encyclopedia called the BIBLE. This keystone of the Christian faith has also been scrapped from the **RSV** without even a semblance of explanation. It has been a pious fraud all along and well-deservedly has it been expunged in the **RSV** for the English-speaking people. But for the 1499 remaining language groups of the world who read the Christian concoctions in their mother tongues, the fraud remains. These people will never know the truth until the Day of Judgment. However, we Muslims must again congratulate the galaxy of D.D's who have been honest enough to eliminate another lie from the English (**RSV**) Bible, thus bringing their Holy Book yet another step closer to the teachings of Islam. For the Holy Qur'an says:

وَلَا تَقُولُوا ثَلَاثَةً ۚ أَنْتَهُوَ خَيْرٌ لَّكُمْ إِنَّمَا اللَّهُ إِلَهُ وَاحِدٌ

...And don't say "Three"; desist – it is better for you. Indeed, Allah is but one God

Surah an-Nisa (Holy Qur'an 4:171)

THE ASCENSION

One of the most serious of those “grave defects” which the authors of the **RSV** had tried to rectify concerned the Ascension of Christ. There have been only two references in the Canonical Gospels of Matthew, Mark, Luke and of John to the most stupendous event in Christianity – OF JESUS BEING TAKEN UP INTO HEAVEN. These two references were obtained in every Bible in every language, prior to 1952, when the RSV first appeared. These were:

4a. ***“So then the Lord Jesus, after he had spoken to them, was TAKEN UP INTO HEAVEN, and sat down at the right hand of God.”***

(Holy Bible) Mark 16:19

4b. ***“While he blessed them, he parted from them, and was CARRIED UP INTO HEAVEN.”***

(Holy Bible) Luke 24:52

Now please turn to Figure 11 on page 316, which is a photocopy where the quotation 4a above ought to appear. You will be shocked to note that Mark 16 ends at verse **8**, and after an embarrassing expanse of blank space the missing verses appear in “small print” as a footnote at the bottom of the page. If you can lay your hands on a RSV **1952**, you will find the last six words of 4b above, i.e. **“AND WAS CARRIED UP INTO HEAVEN”** replaced by a tiny “k” to tell you to see the footnote if you please, where you will find these missing words. Every honest Christian has to admit that he does not consider **any** footnote in **any** Bible as the Word of God. Why should the paid servants of Christianity consign the mightiest miracle of their religion to a mere footnote?

From the chart – **“The Origin and Growth of the English Bible”** – appearing on Figure 12 on page 317, you will note that all the Biblical “Versions” prior to the Revised Version of 1881 were dependent upon the ANCIENT COPIES – those dating only five or six hundred years after Jesus. The Revisers of the RSV 1952, were the first Bible scholars who were able to tap the **“MOST Ancient Copies”** fully, dating three and four centuries after Christ. We agree that the closer to the source the more authentic is the document. Naturally **“MOST”** Ancient deserves credence more than mere **“ANCIENT.”** But not finding a word about Jesus being **“taken up”** or **“carried up”** into heaven in the **MOST ANCIENT** manuscripts, the Christian fathers expurgated those references from the RSV **1952**.

THE DONKEY CIRCUS

The above facts are a staggering confession by Christendom that the **“inspired”** authors of the Canonical Gospels did not record a single word about the ASCENSION of Jesus. Yet these **“inspired”** authors were unanimous in recording that their Lord and Saviour rode a donkey into Jerusalem as his mission drew to a close.

“...and they sat him thereon.” (The Donkey) (Matt 21:7)	“...and they sat upon him.” (The Donkey) (Mark 11:7)
“...and they set Jesus thereon.” (The Donkey) (Luke 19:35)	“...Jesus...sat thereon.” (The Donkey) (John 12:14)

Could God Almighty have been the author of this incongruous situation

– going out of His Way to see that all the Gospel writers did not miss their recording of his “son’s” donkey-ride into the Holy City – and yet **“inspiring”** them to black out the news about His “son’s” heavenly flight on the wings of angels?

NOT FOR LONG!

The **hot-gossellers** and the **Bible-thumpers** were too slow in catching the joke. By the time they realized that the corner-stone of their preaching – THE ASCENSION OF JESUS – had been undermined as a result of Christian Biblical erudition, the publishers of **RSV** had already raked in a nett profit of 15 000 000 dollars! (Fifteen Million). The propagandists made a big hue and cry, and with the backing of two denominational committees out of the fifty, forced the Publishers to re-incorporate the interpolations into the “INSPIRED” Word of God. In every new publication of the **RSV** after **1952**, the expunged portion was **“RESTORED TO THE TEXT.”**

It is an old, old game. The Jews and the Christians have been editing their “Book of God” from its very inception. The difference between them and the ancient forgers is that the ancient forgers did not know the art of writing “prefaces” and “footnotes”, otherwise they too would have told us clearly as our modern heroes have about their tampering and their glib excuses for transmuting forged currency into glittering gold.

“MANY PROPOSALS FOR MODIFICATION WERE SUBMITTED TO THE COMMITTEE BY INDIVIDUALS AND BY TWO DENOMINATIONAL COMMITTEES. ALL OF THESE WERE GIVEN CAREFUL ATTENTION BY THE COMMITTEE.”

“TWO PASSAGES, THE LONGER ENDING OF MARK (16:9-20)...AND LUKE 24:51 ARE RESTORED TO THE TEXT.” (Preface – Collins’ pages vi and vii)

Why **‘restored’**? Because they had been previously expunged! Why had the references to the Ascension expunged in the first place? The **MOST** Ancient manuscripts had no references to the Ascension at all. They were interpolations similar to 1 John 5:7 about the Trinity. (Refer page 311 example 3). Why eliminate one and re-instate the other? Do not be surprised! By the time you lay your hands on a **RSV**, the “committee” might also have decided to expunge the whole of their invaluable Preface. The Jehovah’s Witnesses have already eliminated 27 revealing pages

of their FOREWORD to their **“New World Translation of the CHRISTIAN GREEK SCRIPTURES,”** (this is their way of saying – New Testament).

ALLAH IN THE CHRISTIAN BIBLE

The Rev. C.I. Scofield, D.D with a team of 8 Consulting Editors, also all D.D's, in the **“Scofield Reference Bible,”** thought it appropriate to spell the Hebrew word **“Elah”** (meaning God) alternatively as **“Alah.”** The Christians had thus swallowed the camel – they seemed to have accepted at last that the name of God is Allah – but were still straining at the gnat by spelling Allah with one “L”! (Photographic reproduction of the Bible page showing the word **“ALAH”** is preserved here for posterity on Figure 13 on page 318). References were made in public lectures to this fact by the author of this Booklet, Believe me, the subsequent **“Scofield Reference Bible”** has retained word for word the whole commentary of Genesis 1:1. But has, by a clever sleight-of-hand, blotted out the word **“Alah”** once used to be. This is, in the Bible of the orthodox! One is hard pressed to keep up with their jugglery.

MARK 16

52

"He has risen"

saw a young man sitting on the right side, dressed in a white robe; and they were amazed. ⁶And he said to them, "Do not be amazed; you seek Jesus of Nazareth, who was crucified. He has risen, he is not here; see the place where they laid him. ⁷But go, tell his disci-

ples and Peter that he is going before you to Galilee; there you will see him, as he told you." ⁸And they went out and fled from the tomb; for trembling and astonishment had come upon them; and they said nothing to any one, for they were afraid.^k

**NOTE MARK 16
ENDS AT VERSE 8**

**NOTE THE HUGE EXPANSE
BETWEEN THE TEXT
AND THE FOOTNOTE**

**MARK 16:9-20
RELEGATED
TO FOOTNOTE**

^kOther texts and versions add as Mk 16:9-20 the following passage:

⁹ Now when he was early on the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, from whom he had cast out seven demons. ¹⁰And she went and told those who were with her, saying, "I have seen the Lord." ¹¹ But when they heard that he was alive and had been seen by her, they could not believe it.

¹² After this he appeared in another form to two of them, as they were walking into the country. ¹³ And they went back and told the rest, but they did not believe them.

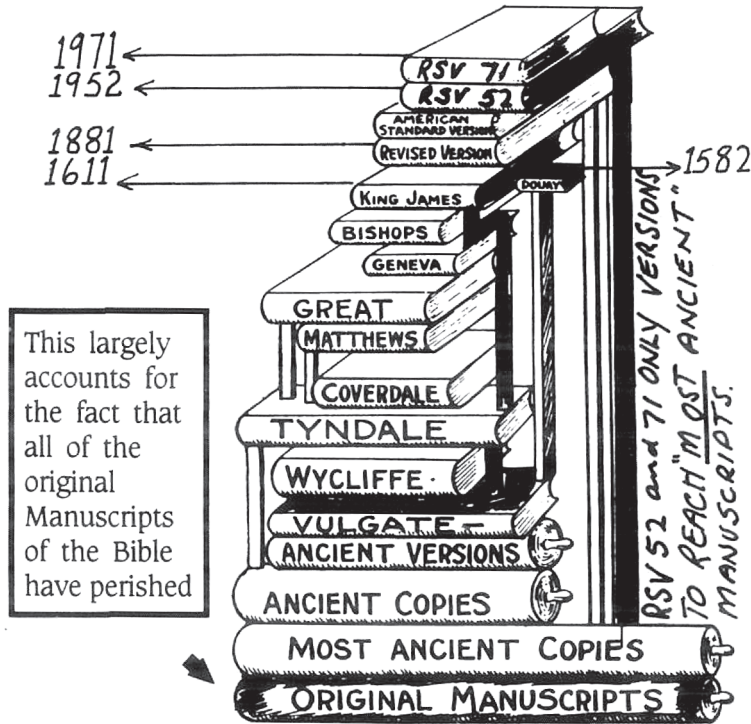
¹⁴ Afterward he appeared to the eleven as they were reclining at table. ¹⁵ And he rebuked them for their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they had not believed those who saw him after he had risen. ¹⁶ And he said to them, "Go into all the world and preach the gospel to the whole creation. ¹⁷ He who believes and is baptized will be saved; but he who does not believe will be condemned. ¹⁸ And these signs will follow those who believe: in my name they will cast out demons; they will speak in new tongues; ¹⁹ they will pick up serpents, and if they drink any deadly thing, it will not hurt them; they will lay their hands on the sick, and they will recover."

²⁰ So then the Lord Jesus himself sent out by means of them, from east to west, the sacred and imperishable proclamation of eternal salvation. ²¹ Amen.

Other ancient authorities add after verse 8 the following: But they reported briefly to Peter and those with him all that they had been told. And after this, Jesus himself sent out by means of them, from east to west, the sacred and imperishable proclamation of eternal salvation. ²² Amen.

16:7: Mk 14:28. In 21:1-23: Mt 28:7.

Figure 11 Photographic Reproduction of Mark 16



In the above drawing is shown the gradual development of the English Bible as well as the foundation upon which each successive version rests.

We are living in an age of printing.

It is hard for us to realize that when the books of the Bible were originally written, there was no printing press to multiply the copies.

Each copy must be made slowly and laboriously by hand. Under these conditions it was inevitable that many ancient books should be lost. This largely accounts for the fact that all the original manuscripts of the Bible have perished.

The question arises, what have we then as the literary foundation of our Bible?

(1) We have the most ancient copies made from the original manuscripts. We mention only three principal ones.

(a) The Codex Sinaiticus, originally a codex of the Greek Bible belonging to the fourth century. Purchased from the Soviet Republic of Russia in 1933 by Great Britain and is now in the British Museum.

(b) The Codex Alexandrinus, probably written in the fifth century, now in the British Museum. It contains the whole Greek Bible with the exception of forty lost leaves.

(c) The Codex Vaticanus, in the Vatican library at Rome, originally contained the whole Bible but parts are lost. Written probably about the fourth century.

Figure 12 Chart of The Origin and Growth of the English Bible

CHAPTER FIVE

DAMNING CONFESSIONS

Mrs. Ellen G. White, a “prophetess” of the Seventh Day Adventist Church, in her Bible Commentary Vol. 1, page 14, has this confession to make about the fallibility of the “Holy Bible.”

“THE BIBLE WE READ TODAY IS THE WORK OF MANY COPYISTS WHO HAVE IN MOST INSTANCES DONE THEIR WORK WITH MARVELLOUS ACCURACY. BUT COPYISTS HAVE **NOT BEEN INFALLIBLE**, AND GOD MOST EVIDENTLY HAS **NOT SEEN FIT** TO PRESERVE THEM ALTOGETHER **FROM ERROR** IN TRANSCRIBING.”

In the following pages of her commentary, Mrs. White testifies further:

“I SAW THAT GOD HAS ESPECIALLY GUARDED THE BIBLE,” (from what?) “YET WHEN COPIES OF IT WERE FEW, LEARNED MEN HAD IN SOME INSTANCES **CHANGED THE WORDS**, THINKING THAT THEY WERE **MYSTIFYING** THAT WHICH WAS PLAIN, BY CAUSING IT TO **LEAN TO THEIR ESTABLISHED VIEWS**, WHICH WERE GOVERNED BY TRADITION.”

DEVELOPED SICKNESS

The mental malady is a cultivated one. This authoress and her followers can still trumpet from rooftops that “**Truly, the Bible is the infallible Word of God.**” “**Yes, it is adulterated, but pure.**” “**It is human, yet divine.**” Do words have any meaning in their language? Yes, they have in their courts of law, but not in their theology. They carry a “poetic

licence” in their preaching.

فِي قُلُوبِهِمْ مَرَضٌ فَزَادَهُمُ اللَّهُ مَرَضًا وَلَهُمْ عَذَابٌ أَلِيمٌ
بِمَا كَانُوا يَكْذِبُونَ

In their hearts is disease, so Allah has increased their disease; and for them is a painful punishment because they (habitually) used to lie.

Surah al-Baqarah (Holy Qur'an 2:10)

THE WITNESSES

The most vociferous of all the Bible-thumpers are the Jehovah's Witnesses. On page 5 of their "FOREWORD," mentioned earlier, they confess:

"IN COPYING THE INSPIRED ORIGINALS BY HAND THE ELEMENT OF HUMAN FRAILTY ENTERED IN, AND SO NONE OF THE THOUSANDS OF COPIES EXTANT TODAY IN THE ORIGINAL LANGUAGE ARE PERFECT DUPLICATES. THE RESULT IS THAT NO TWO COPIES ARE EXACTLY ALIKE."

Now you, see why the whole "foreword" of 27 pages is eliminated from their Bibles. Allah was making them to hang themselves with their own erudition.

POTLUCK

Out of over twenty four thousand differing manuscripts the Christians boast about, the Church fathers just selected four which tallied with their prejudices, their preconceived notions, and called them Gospels of Matthew, Mark, Luke and John. We will deal with each of them in their proper place. Here, let us go over the conclusion of the Jehovah's Witnesses' research as recorded in the now expunged Foreword:

"THE EVIDENCE IS, THEREFORE, THAT THE ORIGINAL TEXT OF THE CHRISTIAN GREEK SCRIPTURES²³⁵ HAS

²³⁵ New Testament.

BEEN TAMPERED WITH, THE SAME AS THE TEXT OF THE LXX²³⁶ HAS BEEN,”

Yet this incorrigible Cult has the effrontery to publish 9 000 000 (Nine Million) copies as a First Edition of a 192 – page book entitled – **“Is the Bible REALLY the Word of God?”** We are dealing here with a sick mentality, **for no amount of tampering**, as they say, will “APPRECIABLY AFFECT THE AUTHENTICITY OF THE BIBLE.”(?). This is Christian logic!

A PATIENT HEARING

Dr. Graham Scroggie in his aforementioned book, pleads, on page 29. For the Bible:-

”AND LET US BE PERFECTLY FAIR AS WE PURSUE THE SUBJECT, (Is the Bible the Word of God?). BEARING IN MIND THAT WE ARE TO HEAR WHAT THE BIBLE HAS TO SAY ABOUT ITSELF. IN A COURT OF LAW WE ASSUME THAT A WITNESS WILL SPEAK THE TRUTH, AND MUST ACCEPT WHAT HE SAYS UNLESS WE HAVE GOOD GROUNDS FOR SUSPECTING HIM, OR CAN PROVE HIM A LIAR. SURELY THE BIBLE SHOULD BE GIVEN THE SAME OPPORTUNITY TO BE HEARD, AND SHOULD RECEIVE A LIKE PATIENT HEARING.”

The plea is fair and reasonable. We will do exactly as he asks and let the Bible speak for itself.

In the first five books of the Bible – **Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy** – there are more than 700 statements which prove not only that God is **NOT** the Author of these books, but that **EVEN** Moses himself had no hand in them. Open those books at random and you will see:

“And the Lord said unto him, Away, get thee down...”

“And Moses said unto the Lord, the people cannot come...”

“And the Lord spake unto Moses, Go on before the people...”

²³⁶ **“LXX”** meaning **Seventy**, is the JW’s alternative title of the Old Testament. Do not be mystified; they even call a **“four”** letter word, a **“tetragrammaton.”**

And the **Lord spake unto Moses**, saying...”

And the **Lord said unto Moses**, Get down, charge the...”

It is manifest and apparent that these are **NEITHER** the Words of God or **NOR** of Moses. They indicate the voice of a third person writing from hearsay.

MOSES WRITES HIS OWN OBITUARY?

Could Moses have been a contributor to his own obituary before his demise? Did the Jews write their own obituaries? **“So Moses...DIED... And he** (God Almighty) **BURIED HIM** (Moses)**...he was 120 years old when he DIED...And there arose not a prophet SINCE in Israel like unto Moses...**” (Deuteronomy 34:5-10). We will analyze the rest of the Old Testament presently from other angles.

CHAPTER SIX

THE BOOK CHRISTENED "THE NEW TESTAMENT"

WHY "ACCORDING TO"?

What about the so-called New Testament?²³⁷ Why does every Gospel begin with the introduction – ACCORDING TO...ACCORDING TO... (See Figure 14 on page 328). Why **"according to"**? Because not a single one of the vaunted twenty four thousand copies extant carries its author's autograph! Hence the supposition **"according to"**! Even the internal evidence proves that Matthew was not the author of the first Gospel which bears his name.

***"And as Jesus passed forth thence,
He (JESUS) saw a man,
named Matthew,
sitting at the receipt of custom:
and HE (JESUS) saith unto HIM
(MATTHEW), follow ME (JESUS)
And HE (MATTHEW) arose,
and followed HIM (JESUS)."***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 9:9

Without any stretch of the imagination, one can see that the **"He's"** and

237 "So-called" because nowhere does the "New Testament" call itself the New Testament, and nowhere the Old Testament calls itself the Old Testament. And also the word "Bible" is unknown within the pages of the Bible. God did not give a title to "HIS" books!

the **"Him's"** of the above narration do not refer to Jesus or Matthew as its author, but some third person writing what he saw and heard – a hearsay account. If we cannot even attribute this **"book of dreams"**, (as the first Gospel is also described) to the disciple Matthew, how can we accept it as the Word of God? We are not alone in this discovery that Matthew did not write the **"Gospel according to St. Matthew"** and that it was written by some anonymous hand. J.B. Phillips concurs with us in our findings. He is the paid servant of the Anglican Church, a prebendary of the Chichester Cathedral, England. He would have no reason to lie or betray to the detriment of the official view of his Church! Refer to his introduction to the "Gospel of St. Matthew" (reproduced here on Figure 15 on page 329). Phillips has this to say about its authorship.

"EARLY TRADITION ASCRIBED THIS GOSPEL TO THE APOSTLE MATTHEW, BUT SCHOLARS NOWADAYS **ALMOST ALL REJECT THIS VIEW.**" In other words, St. Matthew did not write the Gospel which bears his name. This is the finding of **Christian scholars** of the highest eminence – not of Hindus, Muslims and Jews who may be accused of bias. Let our Anglican friend continue: "THE AUTHOR, WHOM WE STILL CAN CONVENIENTLY CALL MATTHEW." **"Conveniently,"** because otherwise every time we made a reference to "Matthew," we would have to say – **"THE FIRST BOOK OF THE NEW TESTAMENT"** Chapter so and so, verse so and so. And again and again **"The first book..."** etc. Therefore, according to J.B. Phillips it is **convenient** that we give the book some name. So why not "Matthew?" Suppose it is a good name as any other! Phillips continues "THE AUTHOR HAS PLAINLY DRAWN ON **THE MYSTERIOUS 'Q'** WHICH MAY HAVE BEEN A COLLECTION OF ORAL TRADITIONS." What is this **"mysterious 'Q'?"** "Q" is short for the German word **"quella,"** which means **"sources."** There is supposed to be another document – a common source – to which our present Matthew, Mark and Luke had access. All these three authors, whoever they were, had a common eye on the material at hand. They were writing as if looking through **"one"** eye. And because they saw eye to eye, the first three "Gospels" came to be known as the Synoptic Gospels.

WHOLESALE CRIBBING

But what about that **"inspiration"** business? The Anglican prebendary has hit the nail on the head. He is, more than anyone else, entitled to do so.

A paid servant of the Church, an orthodox evangelical Christian, a Bible scholar of repute, having direct access to the “original” Greek manuscripts, let HIM spell it out for us. (Notice how gently he lets the cat out of the bag): **HE** (Matthew) **HAS USED MARK’S GOSPEL FREELY,”** which in the language of the schoolteacher – **“has been copying WHOLESALE from Mark!”** Yet the Christians call this wholesale plagiarism the “Word of GOD!”

Does it not make you wonder that an eye-witness to the ministry of Jesus, which the disciple Matthew was supposed to be, instead of writing his own first-hand impressions of the ministry of “his Lord,” would go and steal from the writings of a youth (Mark), who was a ten year old lad when Jesus upbraided his nation? Why would an eye-witness and ear-witness like Matthew copy from a fellow (Mark) who himself was writing from hearsay? The disciple Matthew would not do any such silly thing. For an anonymous document has been imposed on the fair name of Matthew.

PLAGIARISM OR LITERARY KIDNAPPING

Plagiarism means literary theft. Someone copies verbatim (word for word) from another’s writing and palms it off as his own, is known as plagiarism. This is a common trait amongst the 40 or so anonymous authors of the Books of the Bible. The Christians boast about a supposedly common cord amongst the writers of the 66 Protestant booklets and the writers of the 73 Roman Catholic booklets called the “Holy Bible”. Some common cord there is, for Matthew and Lukem or whoever they were, had plagiarised 85% word for word from Mark! God Almighty did not dictate the same wordings to the synoptists (one-eyed). The Christian themselves admit this, because they do not believe in a verbal inspiration, as the Muslims do about the Holy Qur’an.

This 85% plagiarism of Matthew and Luke pales into insignificance compared to the literary kidnapping of the authors of the Old Testament where a hundred per cent stealing occurs in the so-called Book of God. Christian scholars of the calibre of Bishop Kenneth Cragg euphemistically call this stealing, “reproduction”²³⁸ and take pride in it.

238 See page 294 for full quotation.

PERVERTED STANDARDS

Dr. Scroggie (referred to earlier on) most enthusiastically quotes in his book²³⁹ a Dr. Joseph Parker for his unique eulogy of the Bible:

"WHAT A BOOK IS THE BIBLE IN THE MATTER OF VARIETY OF CONTENTS!...WHOLE PAGES ARE TAKEN UP WITH OBSCURE NAMES, AND MORE IS TOLD OF A GENEALOGY THAN OF THE DAY OF JUDGEMENT. STORIES ARE HALF TOLD, AND THE NIGHT FALLS BEFORE WE CAN TELL WHERE VICTORY LAY. WHERE IS THERE ANYTHING (in the Religious Literature of the world) TO CORRESPOND WITH THIS?"

A beautiful necklace of words and phrases undoubtedly! It is much ado about nothing, and rank blasphemy against God Almighty for authorising such an embarrassing hotchpotch. Yet the Christians gloat over the very defects of their book, like Romeo over the "mole" on Juliet's lip!

NOTHING LESS THAN 100%

To demonstrate the degree of plagiarism practised by the "inspired" Bible writers, I asked my audience during a symposium at the University of Cape Town conducted between myself and Professor Cumpsty the Head of the Department of Theology on the subject **"Is the Bible God's Word?"** to open their Bibles.

Some Christians are very fond carrying their Bible under their arms when religious discussions or debates take place. They seem to be utterly helpless without this book. At my suggestion a number of the audience began ruffling the pages. I asked them to open chapter 37 in the **"Book of Isaiah."** When the audience was ready, I asked them to compare my "Isaiah 37" with their "Isaiah 37" while I read, to see whether they were identical. I began, reading slowly. Verses 1, 2, 4, 10, 15 and so on, until the end of chapter. I kept on asking after every verse if what I had been reading, was identical with the verses in their Bible. Again and again they chorused – "Yeh!", "Yeh!". At the end of the chapter with the Bible still open in m hands at the place from which I had been reading, I made the Chairman to reveal to the audience that I was not reading from Isaiah 37 at all but from **2 KINGS 19!** There was a terrible consternation in the audience! I had thus established plagiarism in the "Holy Bible." (See

239 **"Is the Bible the Word of God?"** by the Moody Press.

Figure 16 on page 330)

In other words, Isaiah 37 and 2 Kings 19 identical word for word. Yet they have been attributed to two different authors, centuries apart, whom the Christians claim have been inspired by God.

Who is copying from whom? Who is stealing from whom? The 32 renowned Bible scholars of the RSV say that the author of the Book of Kings is **“UNKNOWN!”** See Figure 9 on page 306 for a reproduction from the RSV by **“Collins”**. These notes on the Bible were prepared and edited by the Right Rev. David J. Fant. Litt. D., General Secretary of the New York Bible Society. Naturally, if the Most Reverend gentlemen of Christendom had an iota of belief about the Bible being the Word of God, they would have said so, but they honestly (shamefacedly?) confess: **“Author – UNKNOWN!”** They are prepared to pay lip-service to Scriptures which could have been penned by any Tom, Dick or Harry and expect everyone to regard these as the Word of God – Heaven forbid!

NO VERBAL INSPIRATION

(For a complete list of all the books of the Bible and their authors, avail yourself of the **“Collins”** R.S.V. with its annotations). What have Christian scholars to say about the **“Book of Isaiah?”** They say: **“MAINLY CREDITED TO ISAIAH. PARTS MAY HAVE BEEN WRITTEN BY OTHERS.”** In view of the confessions of Bible scholars, we will not take poor Isaiah to task. Can we then nail this **plagiarism** on the door of God? What blasphemy! Professor Cumptsy confirmed at question time, at the end of the aforementioned symposium that the **“Christians do not believe in a verbal inspiration of the Bible.”** So God Almighty had not absent-mindedly dictated the same tale twice! Human hands, all too human, had played havoc with this so-called Word of God – the Bible. Yet, Bible-thumpers will insist that “every word, comma and full stop of the Bible is God’s Word!”

WHY "ACCORDING TO"?

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO Saint Luke ?

Saint ?

Matthew

ST. MATTHEW 9

Matthew Called

9 ¶ And as Jesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man, named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom: and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him.

"HE"

AND "HIM"

NOT
MAT-
THEW!

FORASMUCH as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely believed among us,

2 Even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eyewitnesses, and ministers of the word;

3 It seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus,

4 That thou mightest know the certainty of those things, wherein thou hast been instructed.

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ?

Saint Mark

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ?

Saint John

ST. JOHN 21

24 This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is true.

"HE" AND "HIM"
NOT JOHN!

ST. JOHN 19

35 And he that saw it bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe.

The Conclusion

25 And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. Amen.

Figure 14 Reproduction of Examples of the Gospels

THE GOSPELS

translated
into Modern English

by

J. B. PHILLIPS

THE GOSPEL OF
MATTHEW

The Master taught the disciples not to steal but here Matthew stole whole-sale from Mark!

Early tradition ascribed this Gospel to the apostle Matthew, but scholars nowadays almost all reject this view.

The author, whom we still can conveniently call Matthew, has plainly drawn on the mysterious "Q", which may have been a collection of oral traditions. He has used Mark's Gospel freely, though he has rearranged the order of events and has in several instances used different words for what is plainly the same story. The style is lucid, calm and "tidy". Matthew writes with a certain judiciousness as though he himself had carefully digested his material and is convinced not only of its truth but of the divine pattern that lies behind the historic facts.

If Matthew wrote, as is now generally supposed, somewhere between 85 and 90, this Gospel's value as a Christian document is enormous. It is, so to speak, a second generation view of Jesus Christ the Son of God and the Son of Man. It is being written at that distance in time from the great Event where sober reflection and sturdy conviction can perhaps give a better balanced portrait of God's unique revelation of Himself than could be given by those who were so close to the Light that they were partly dazzled by it.

LONDON

GEOFFREY BLES

Figure 15 Reproduction from The Gospel of St. Matthew

100% PLAGIARISM

II KINGS 19

AND it came to pass, when king Hêz-ê-ki'-âh heard *it*, that he rent his clothes, and covered himself with sackcloth, and went into the house of the LORD.

2 And he sent Ê-li'-â-kim, which was over the household, and Shebna the scribe, and the elders of the priests, covered with sackcloth, to Isaiah the prophet the son of Amoz.

3 And they said unto him, Thus saith Hêz-ê-ki'-âh, This day *is* a day of trouble, and of rebuke, and blasphemy: for the children are come to the birth, and *there is* not strength to bring forth.

5 So the servants of king Hêz-ê-ki'-âh came to Isaiah.

10 Thus shall ye speak to Hêz-ê-ki'-âh king of Judah, saying, Let not thy God in whom thou trustest deceive thee, saying, Jerusalem shall not be delivered into the hand of the king of Assyria.

11 Behold, thou hast heard what the kings of Assyria have done to all lands, by destroying them utterly; and shalt thou be delivered?

12 Have the gods of the nations delivered them which my fathers have destroyed; *as* Gozan, and Haran, and Rezeph, and the children of Eden which *were* in Thêl'-â-sâr?

14 ¶ And Hêz-ê-ki'-âh received the letter of the hand of the messengers, and read it: and Hezekiah went up into the house of the LORD, and spread it before the LORD.

15 And Hêz-ê-ki'-âh prayed before the LORD, and said, O LORD God of Israel, which dwellest *between* the chêr'-û-bims, thou art the God, *even* thou alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth; thou hast made heaven and earth.

36 So Sên-nâch'-êr-ib king of Assyria departed, and went and returned, and dwelt at Nin'-ê-vêh.

37 And it came to pass, as he was worshipping in the house of Nîs'-rôch his god, that Â-drâm'-mê-lêch and Shâ-rê'-zêr his sons smote him with the sword: and they escaped into the land of Armenia. And Ê-sâr-hâd'-dôn his son reigned in his stead.

ISAIAH 37

AND it came to pass, when king Hêz-ê-ki'-âh heard *it*, that he rent his clothes, and covered himself with sackcloth, and went into the house of the LORD.

2 And he sent Ê-li'-â-kim, who was over the household, and Shebna the scribe, and the elders of the priests covered with sackcloth, unto Isaiah the prophet the son of Amoz.

3 And they said unto him, Thus saith Hêz-ê-ki'-âh, This day *is* a day of trouble, and of rebuke, and of blasphemy: for the children are come to the birth, and *there is* not strength to bring forth.

5 So the servants of king Hêz-ê-ki'-âh came to Isaiah.

10 Thus shall ye speak to Hêz-ê-ki'-âh king of Judah, saying, Let not thy God, in whom thou trustest, deceive thee, saying, Jerusalem shall not be given into the hand of the king of Assyria.

11 Behold, thou hast heard what the kings of Assyria have done to all lands by destroying them utterly; and shalt thou be delivered?

12 Have the gods of the nations delivered them which my fathers have destroyed, *as* Gozan, and Haran, and Rezeph, and the children of Eden which *were* in Tê-lâs'-sâr?

14 ¶ And Hêz-ê-ki'-âh received the letter from the hand of the messengers, and read it: and Hezekiah went up unto the house of the LORD, and spread it before the LORD.

15 And Hêz-ê-ki'-âh prayed unto the LORD, saying,

16 O LORD of hosts, God of Israel, that dwellest *between* the chêr'-û-bims, thou *art* the God, *even* thou alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth: thou hast made heaven and earth.

37 ¶ So Sên-nâch'-êr-ib king of Assyria departed, and went and returned, and dwelt at Nin'-ê-vêh.

38 And it came to pass, as he was worshipping in the house of Nîs'-rôch his god, that Â-drâm'-mê-lêch and Shâ-rê'-zêr his sons smote him with the sword; and they escaped into the land of Armenia: and Ê-sâr-hâd'-dôn his son reigned in his stead.

Figure 16 Reproduction of Plagiarism in the Holy Bible

These verses are culled from the Authorised Version, but you will find the same in every Version.

CHAPTER SEVEN

THE ACID TEST

How do we know that a book claimed to be from God is really the Book of God? One of the tests, out of many such tests, is – that a Message emanating from an Omniscient Being **MUST** be consistent with itself. It ought to be free from all discrepancies and contradictions. This is exactly what the **LAST** TESTAMENT, the Book of God says:

أَفَلَا يَتَذَكَّرُونَ الْقُرْآنَ وَلَوْ كَانَ مِنْ عِنْدِ غَيْرِ اللَّهِ
لَوَجَدُوا فِيهِ اخْتِلَافًا كَثِيرًا

Then do they not reflect upon the Qur'an? If it had been from (any) other than Allah, they would have found within it much contradiction.

Surah an-Nisa (Holy Qur'an 4:82)

GOD OR THE DEVIL?

If God Almighty wants us to verify the authenticity of His Book (The Holy Qur'an) with this acid test, why should we not apply the very same test to any other Book claiming to be from Him? We do not want to bamboozle anybody words as the Christians have been doing. It would be readily agreed from the references I have given from Christian scholars, that they have been proving to us that the Bible is **NOT** the Word of God, yet making us believe that they have actually convinced us to the contrary.

A classic example of this sickness was in evidence again only “yesterday.” The Anglican synod was in session in Grahamstown. The Most. Rev. Bill Burnett, the Archbishop was preaching to his flock. He created a confusion

in his Anglican community. An erudite Englishman, addressing a group of learned English priests and bishops, in their own mother tongue – English, which his learned colleagues drastically misunderstood to such an extent that Mr. McMillan, perhaps also an Anglican, the Editor of an English daily – **“The Natal Mercury,”** dated December 11, 1979, had this to say about the confusion the Archbishop had created among his own learned clergy:

“ARCHBISHOP BURNETT’S REMARKS AT THE SYNOD WERE HARDLY A MODEL OF CLARITY AND WERE WIDELY AND DRAMATICALLY MISINTERPRETED BY MANY OF THOSE PRESENT.”

There is nothing wrong with English as a language, but we know that the Christian is trained in muddled thinking in all matters religious. The “bread” in his Holy Communion is not “bread” but “flesh?” The “wine” is “blood?” “Three is one?” and “Human is Divine?” But do not make a mistake. He is not that simple when it comes to dealing with the earthly kingdom, where he is then most precise. You will have to be doubly careful when entering into a contract with him! He can have you sold out, without your realising it.

The examples that I shall furnish in substantiating the points I have raised about the contradictions in the so-called Book of God, would be found very easy – even for a child to follow and understand.

II SAMUEL 24

***The Numbering
And again the anger of the LORD
was kindled against Israel, and he moved
David against them to say, Go, number Israel and
Judah.***

While the author of Samuel 24 above, makes God the boss of the situation, the author of Chronicles (see below) gives credit to the Devil.

I CHRONICLES 21

***The Numbering
And Satan
stood up against Israel, and provoked
David to number Israel.***

Apart from showing allegiance to God as is noted elsewhere, the **Devil**

(Satan) is also given his due. This dichotomy on the part of the author of Chronicles reminds one of the story of the old woman who lit one candle to St. Michael and another to the **devil**, so that whether she went to Heaven or Hell, she would have a friend. This Chronicles fellow, made sure that he had a friend at court Above, as well as a friend at court Below. He wanted to have it both ways, or wanted to have his cake and eat it too.

You will observe that the authors of the books of **“Chronicles”** and of **“Samuel”** are telling us the same story about David taking a census of the Jews. Where did David get his “inspiration” to do this novel deed? The author of 2 Samuel 24:1 says that it was the **“LORD”** God who MOVED (RSV: “incited”) David to do such a dastardly thing! How could the Almighty God have been the source of these contradictory **“INSPIRATIONS?”** Is it God **or** is it Satan? In which religion is the Devil synonymous with GOD? I am not talking about “Satanism,” a recent fungus growth of Christianity, in which ex-Christians worship the Devil. Christianity, has been most prolific in spawning isms: Atheism, Communism, Fascism, Totalitarianism, Nazism, Mormonism, Moonism, Christian Scientism and now Satanism. What else will Christianity give birth to?

The “Holy Bible” lends itself to all kinds of contradictory interpretations. This is the Christian boast! **“SOME CLAIM AND RIGHTLY SO, THAT BIBLICAL PASSAGES HAVE BEEN CONTINUOUSLY MISUSED AND MISAPPROPRIATED TO JUSTIFY ALMOST EVERY EVIL KNOWN TO MAN”** (From: **“The Plain Truth,”** an American-based Christian Journal under the heading: **“THE BIBLE – World’s Most Controversial Book.”** (July 1975).

WHO ARE THE REAL AUTHORS?

As further evidence will be adduced from **“Samuel”** and **“Chronicles,”** I deem it advisable first to determine their authors instead of ascribing those books’ incongruities to God. The revisers of the **RSV** say:

- (a) SAMUEL: Author **“Unknown”** (Just one word)
- (b) CHRONICLES: Author **“Unknown,”** probably collected and edited by Ezra.”

We must admire the humility of these Bible scholars, but their **“possibly,”** **“probably”** and **“likelys”** are always construed as ACTUALLY’S by their fleeced sheep. Why make poor Ezra or Isaiah the scapegoats for these

anonymous writers?

WHAT DID THE LORD DECREE:

3 YEARS FAMINE OR 7 YEARS FAMINE?

II SAMUEL 24:13

*13 So Gad came to David,
and told him, and said unto
him, Shall seven years of famine
come unto thee in thy
land? or wilt thou flee three
months before thine enemies,
while they pursue thee?*

I CHRONICLES 21:11

*11 So Gad came to David,
and said unto him, Thus saith
the LORD, Choose thee
12 Either three years' famine;
or three months to be
destroyed before thy foes,
while that the sword of thine
enemies overtaketh thee;*

If God is the Author of every single word, comma and full-stop in the Bible, as the Christians claim, then is He the Author of the above mentioned discrepancy as well!

THREE OR SEVEN?

Note the Bible quotations above. Compare both the quotations. 2 Samuel 24:13 tells us – **“So Gad came to David, AND TOLD HIM, and said unto him...”** These words are repeated word for word in 1 Chronicles 21:11, except the redundant **“AND TOLD HIM”** is removed! But while trimming the useless phrase, the author also pruned the time factor from **“SEVEN”** years to **“THREE”** years. **What did God say to Gad – Three or Seven years plague – “on both your houses?”**

EIGHT OR EIGHTEEN

See on page 335. Compare the two quotations. 2 Chronicles 36:9 tells us that JEHOIACHIN was **“eight”** years old when he began to reign,

while 2 Kings 24:8 says that he “**eighteen**” when he began to reign. The “**unknown**” author of KINGS must have reasoned that what possible “evil” could a child of eight do to deserve his abdication, so he generously added ten years to make JEHOIACHIN mature enough to become liable to God’s wrath. However, he had to balance his tampering, so he cut short his reign by 10 days! Add **TEN** years to age and deduct **TEN** days from rule? Could God Almighty say two widely differing things on the same subject?

HOW OLD WAS JEHOIACHIN?

8 OR 18?

Between Eight and Eighteen years, there is a gap or difference of a full 10 years. Can we say (God forbid!) that the All-Knowing Almighty could not count, and thus did not know the difference between 8 and 18? If we are to believe in the Bible as the Word of God, then the Dignity and Status of the Lord Almighty will hit an all-time low!

II CHRONICLES 36

9 Jehoiachin was eight years old when he began to reign, and he reigned three months and ten days in Jerusalem: and he did that which was evil in the sight of the LORD.

II KINGS 24

8 Jehoiachin was eighteen years old when he began to reign, and he reigned in Jerusalem three months. And his mother’s name was Nehushta, the daughter of Elnathan of Jerusalem.

CAVALRY OR INFANTRY?

Compare the two quotations on page 336. How many chariot riders did David slay? Seven **hundred** or seven **thousand**? And further, did he slay 40 000 “HORSEMEN” or 40 000 “FOOTMEN?” The implication in the conflicting records between 2 Samuel 10:18 and 1 Chronicles 19:18

is not only that God could not discern the difference between hundreds, and thousands, but that He could not even distinguish **“CAVALRY”** from **“INFANTRY!”** It is obvious that blasphemy masquerades in the Christian dictionary as “inspiration!”

PRACTICAL HOMEWORK

Solomon in his glory began building a royal palace for himself which took him thirteen years. We learn this from the 1st Book of Kings, Chapter 7. You remember Dr. Parker’s boast (page 326) about **“whole pages being taken up by obscure names”**? Well, for sheer puerility you cannot beat this chapter 7 and Ezekiel chapter 45. You owe it to yourself to read it just once in your lifetime. After that, you will really appreciate the Holy Qur’an! Reproduced on Figure 17 on page 338 and Figure 18 on page 339, you will read the passages for your **boring** pleasure. Obtain your own Bible and colour code it for easy reference. You may colour the various references from this booklet in your Bible: **“Yellow”** for all contradictions; **“Red”** for pornographic passages, and **“Green”** for sensible, acceptable quotations as the ones I have mentioned at the beginning of this essay – that is, words that you can effortlessly recognize as being those of God and His Holy Messengers. With just this preparation, you will be ready to confute and confuse any missionary or Bible scholar that comes your way! **“IF WE PERSPIRE MORE IN TIMES OF PEACE, WE WILL BLEED LESS IN TIMES OF WAR.”** (Chiang Kai-Shek)

HOW HYGIENIC?

Turn now to page 340 and note that the author of 1 Kings 7:26 has counted 2 000 baths in Solomon’s palace, but the author of 2 Chronicles 4:5 increases the kingly count by 50% to 3000! What extravagance and error in the “Book of God”! Even if God Almighty had nothing else to do, would He occupy Himself “inspiring” such trivial contradictory nonsense to the Jews? Is the Bible God’s Book? Is it the Word of God?

700 OR 7000?

It is certainly naught for Bible-lovers’ comfort that a whole nought (0) was either added to 700, or subtracted from 7 000, thus making the confused Biblical Mathematics even more confounded! (See page 341 for remarks on the zero)

II SAMUEL 10

18 And the Syrians fled before Israel; and David slew the men of seven hundred chariots of the Syrians, and forty thousand horsemen, and smote Shobach the captain of their host, who died there.

I CHRONICLES 19

18 But the Syrians fled before Israel: and David slew of the Syrians seven thousand men which fought in chariots, and forty thousand footmen, and killed Shophach the captain of the host.

GOD CONFUSED BETWEEN “CAVALRY” AND “INFANTRY”?

As for the “inspired writers” of the Bible not knowing the difference between **“footmen”** and **“horsemen,”** it is all the more serious because God Himself stands accused, as a source of that “inspiration” for not knowing the difference between cavalry and infantry. Or is it possible that the Syrians who fled before Israel were centaurs (i.e. a race of creatures with the body and legs of a horse and the torso, head and arms of a man). Is it possible that these “creatures” had suddenly stepped out of Classical Greek Mythology to bemuse the all too gullible authors?

GOD, AS A BUILDER, ENGINEER AND CRAFTSMAN

7 But Solomon took ^Rthirteen years to build his own house; so he finished all his house. 2 Chr. 8:1

2 He also built the ^RHouse of the Forest of Lebanon; its length was ^Tone hundred cubits, its width fifty cubits, and its height thirty cubits, with four rows of cedar pillars, and cedar beams on the pillars. 2 Chr. 9:16 • About 150 feet

3 And it was paneled with cedar above the beams that were on forty-five pillars, fifteen to a row.

4 *There were windows with beveled frames in three rows, and window was opposite window in three tiers.*

5 And all the doorways and doorposts *had* rectangular frames; and window was opposite window in three tiers.

6 He also made the Hall of Pillars: its length was fifty cubits, and its width thirty cubits; and in front of them was a portico with pillars, and a canopy was in front of them.

7 Then he made a hall for the throne, the Hall of Judgment, where he might judge; and it was paneled with cedar from floor to ^Tceiling. Lit. floor of the upper level

8 And the house where he dwelt *had* another court inside the hall, of like workmanship. Solomon also made a house like this hall for Pharaoh's daughter, whom he had taken as wife.

9 All these *were* of costly stones hewn to size, trimmed with saws, inside and out, from the foundation to the eaves, and also on the outside to the great court.

10 The foundation *was* of costly stones, large stones, some ten cubits and some eight cubits.

11 And above *were* costly stones, hewn to size, and cedar wood.

12 The great court *was* enclosed with three rows of hewn stones and a row of cedar beams. So were the ^Rinner court of the house of the LORD ^Rand the vestibule of the temple. 1 Kin. 6:36 • John 10:23

13 Now King Solomon sent and brought Hiram from Tyre.

14 ^RHe was the son of a widow from the tribe of Naphtali, and ^Rhis father was a man of Tyre, a bronze worker; he was filled with wisdom and understanding and skill in working with all kinds of bronze work. So he came to King Solomon and did all his work. 2 Chr. 2:14 • 2 Chr. 4:16

15 And he ^Tcast ^Rtwo pillars of bronze, each one eighteen cubits high, and a line of twelve cubits measured the circumference of each. fashioned • Jer. 52:21

16 Then he made two capitals of cast bronze, to set on the tops of the pillars. The height of one capital was five cubits, and the height of the other capital was five cubits.

Figure 17 Reproduction of 1 Kings 7:26

IF YOU HAVE PATIENCE, COMPLETE READING THE CHAPTER IN YOUR BIBLE.

GOD, AS LAND SURVEYOR AND ARCHITECT

45 "Moreover, when you ^Rdivide the land by lot into inheritance, you shall ^Rset apart a district for the LORD, a holy portion of the land; its length *shall be* twenty-five thousand *cubits*, and the width ten thousand. It *shall be* holy throughout its territory all around. Ezek. 47:22 • Ezek. 48:8, 9

2 "Of this there shall be a square plot for the sanctuary, ^Rfive hundred by five hundred *rods*, with fifty cubits around it for an open space. Ezek. 42:20

3 "So this is the district you shall measure: twenty-five thousand *cubits* long and ten thousand wide; in it shall be the sanctuary, the Most Holy Place.

4 "It shall be ^Ra holy portion of the land, belonging to the priests, the ministers of the sanctuary, who come near to minister to the LORD; it shall be a place for their houses and a holy place for the sanctuary. Ezek. 48:10, 11

5 "An area twenty-five thousand *cubits* long and ten thousand wide shall belong to the Levites, the ministers of the temple; they shall have twenty chambers as a possession.

6 ^R"You shall appoint as the property of the city an area five thousand *cubits* wide and twenty-five thousand long, adjacent to the district of the holy portion; it shall belong to the whole house of Israel. Ezek. 48:15

7 ^R"The prince shall have a por-

tion on one side and the other of the holy district and the city's property; and bordering on the holy district and the city's property, extending westward on the west side and eastward on the east side, the length *shall be* side by side with one of the tribal portions, from the west border to the east border. Ezek. 48:21

8 "The land shall be his possession in Israel; and ^RMy princes shall no more oppress My people, but they shall give *the rest of* the land to the house of Israel, according to their tribes." Ezek. 22:27

9 "Thus says the Lord God: "Enough, O princes of Israel! Remove violence and plundering, execute justice and righteousness, and stop dispossessing My people," says the Lord God.

10 "You shall have just ^Rbalances, a just ephah, and a just bath. Lev. 19:36

11 "The ephah and the bath shall be of the same measure, so that the bath contains one-tenth of a homer, and the ephah one-tenth of a homer; their measure shall be according to the homer.

12 "The ^Rshekel *shall be* twenty gerahs; twenty shekels, twenty-five shekels, and fifteen shekels shall be your mina. Ex. 30:13

13 "This is the offering which you shall offer: you shall give one-sixth of an ephah from a homer of wheat, and one-sixth of an ephah from a homer of barley.

Figure 18 Reproduction of 2 Chronicles 4:5

IF YOU HAVE PATIENCE, COMPLETE READING THE CHAPTER IN YOUR BIBLE.

THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN 2 000 AND 3 000 IS ONLY 50% EXAGGERATION!

I KINGS 7

*26 And it was an hand
breadth thick, and the brim
thereof was wrought like the
brim of a cup, with flowers of
lilies: it contained two thousand
baths.*

II CHRONICLES 4

*5 And the thickness of it
was an handbreadth, and the
brim of it like the work of the
brim of a cup, with flowers
of lilies; and it received and
held three thousand baths.*

Whether it is witting or unwitting the “inspired” writer’s singular inability to grasp the difference between 2 000 and 3 000 is unforgivable. It is an obvious contradiction. “AND NO MIRACLE WOULD PROVE THAT TWO AND TWO MAKES FIVE, OR THAT A CIRCLE HAS FOUR ANGELS; AND NO MIRACLES HOWEVER NUMEROUS, COULD REMOVE A CONTRADICTION WHICH LIES ON THE SURFACE OF THE TEACHINGS AND RECORDS OF CHRISTIANITY.”

– (Albert Schweizer), from his book: “**In Search of the Historical Jesus**” Page 22

THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN 4 THOUSAND AND 40 THOUSAND

II CHRONICLES

CHAPTER 9

*25 And Solomon had four thousand stalls for horses and chariots, and twelve thousand horsemen; whom he bestowed in the chariot cities, and with the king at Jerusalem.
is only 36 000!*

I KINGS

CHAPTER 4

*26 And Solomon had forty thousand stalls of horses for his chariots,
and twelve thousand horsemen.*

THE JEWS DID NOT USE THE “O” (ZERO) IN THE OLD TESTAMENT

Note that the author of 1 Kings 7:26 has counted 2 000 baths in Solomon's palace, but the author of 2 Chronicles 4:5 increases the kingly count by 50% to 3000! What extravagance and error in the “Book of God”! Even if God Almighty had nothing else to do, would He occupy Himself “inspiring” such trivial contradictory nonsense to the Jews? Is the Bible God's Book? Is it the Word of God?

PILED CONTRADICTIONS

Before I conclude this series of contradictions, let me give you just one more example. There are hundreds of others in the Bible. See pages 340/341. It is Solomon again. He really does things in a big way. The ex-Shah of Iran was a nursery kid by comparison! The author of 2 Chronicles 9:25 gives Solomon one thousand more stalls of horses than the number of baths he had given him. **“And Solomon had FOUR thousand stalls for horses...”** But the author of 1 Kings 4:26 had really kingly thoughts about his royal patron. He multiplied Solomon's stalls by 1000% – from 4 000 to 40 000 stalls of horses! Before some glib evangelist draws the wool over your eyes that the difference is only a nought, a zero – “0”; that some scribe or copyist had inadvertently added a zero to 4 000 to make 40 000, let me tell you that the Jews in the time of Solomon knew nothing about the zero – “O”! It was the Arabs who introduced the zero to the Middle East and to Europe centuries later. The Jews spelt out their figures in words in their literary works and did not write them in numerals. Our Question is – Who was the real author of this staggering discrepancy of 36 000? Was it God or man? You will find these references and many more allied facts in a very comprehensive book – **“THE BIBLE – Word of God or Word of Man?”** by A.S.K. Joommal.

CHAPTER EIGHT

MOST OBJECTIVE TESTIMONY

The Christian propagandist is very fond of quoting the following verse as proof that his Bible is the Word of God.

***“All scripture IS given
by inspiration of God,
and IS profitable for doctrine,
for reproof, for correction,
for instruction in righteousness.”***

(Holy Bible) 2 Timothy 3:16 – AV by Scofield

Note the “IS’s” in capitals, Rev. Scofield is telling us silently that they do not occur in the original Greek. **“THE NEW ENGLISH BIBLE,”** translated by a committee representing the Church of England, the Church of Scotland, the Methodist Church, the Congregational Church, the Baptist Union, the Presbyterian Church of England, etc., etc., **and** the BRITISH AND FOREIGN BIBLE SOCIETY has produced the closest translation of the original Greek which deserves to be reproduced here:

**“EVERY INSPIRED SCRIPTURE HAS ITS USE FOR
TEACHING THE TRUTH AND REFUTING ERROR, OR
FOR REFORMATION OF MANNERS AND DISCIPLINE
IN RIGHT LIVING.”**

2 Timothy 3:16

The Roman Catholics in their “Douay” Version, are also more faithful to the text than the Protestants in their Authorised Version (**AV**). They say: “ALL SCRIPTURE, INSPIRED OF GOD, IS PROFITABLE TO

TEACH, TO REPROVE, TO CORRECT..."

We will not quibble with words. Muslims and Christians are agreed that whatever emanates from God, whether through inspiration or by revelation, must serve one of four purposes:-

1. It must either teach us **DOCTRINE**;
2. **REPROVE** us for our error;
3. Offer us **CORRECTION**;
4. Guide us into **RIGHTEOUSNESS**.

I have been asking learned men of Christianity for the past forty years, whether they can supply a **FIFTH** "peg" to hang the word of God on. They have failed signally. That does not mean that I have improved upon their performance. Let us examine the "**Holy Bible**" with these objective tests.

NOT FAR TO SEEK

The very first book of the Bible – **Genesis** – provides us with many beautiful examples. Open Chapter 38 and read. We are given here the history²⁴⁰ of Judah, the father of the Jewish race, from whom we derive the names "**Judea**" and "**Judaism**." This patriarch of the Jews got married and God granted him three sons, Er, Onan and Shelah. When the first-born was big enough, Judah had him married to a lady called Tamar. "*BUT ER, JUDAH'S FIRST-BORN **WAS WICKED IN THE SIGHT OF THE LORD; AND THE LORD SLEW HIM.***" (*Genesis 38:7*). Under what heading, from the above four principles of Timothy will you place this sad news? The **second** – "REPROVE" is the answer. Er was wicked so God killed him. A lesson for all, God will destroy us for our wickedness. **REPROOF!**

Continuing with this Jewish history, according to their custom, if a brother died and left no offspring, it was the duty of the other brother to give "seed" to his sister-in-law so that the deceased's name might be perpetuated. Judah, in honour of this custom, order his second son Onan to do his duty. But jealousy enters his heart. It will be **his seed** but the name will be his brother's! So at the climactic moment "***HE SPILLED IT ON THE GROUND...AND THE THING HE DID DISPLEASED THE LORD:***"

240 You remember here Dr. Kenneth Cragg in his "**Call of the Minaret**" and his "**HISTORY**". See full quotation on page 294. **This is that "history!"**

*WHEREFORE HE **SLEW HIM ALSO.***” (*Genesis 38: 9-10*). Again, where does this slaying fit into Timothy’s tests? “REPROOF!” is the answer again. No prizes are offered for these easy answers. They are so basic. Do wrong and bear the consequence! Onan is forgotten in the “Book of God,” but Christian sexologists have immortalized him by referring to “coitus interruptus,” as Onanism²⁴¹ in their “Books of Sex”.

Now Judah tells his daughter-in-law, Tamar, to return to her father’s house until his third son Shelah attains manhood, when she will be brought back so that he can do his duty.

A WOMAN’S REVENGE

Shelah grows up and is, perhaps, married to another woman. But Judah had not fulfilled his obligation to Tamar. Deep in his **heart** he is terrified. He has already lost two sons on account of this “witch,” – “*LEST PERADVENTURE HE (Shelah) DIE ALSO, AS HIS BRETHREN DID.*” (*Genesis 38:11*). So Judah conveniently forgets his promise. The aggrieved young lady resolves to take revenge on her father-in-law for depriving her of her “seed” right.

Tamar learned that Judah is going to Timnath to shear his sheep. She plans to get even with him on the way. She forestalls him, and goes and sits in an open place en route to Timnath. When Judah sees her, he thinks she is a harlot because she had covered her face. He comes up to her and proposes – “ALLOW ME TO COME IN UNTO THEE; AND SHE SAID WHAT WILL THOU GIVE ME, THAT THOU MAYEST COME IN UNTO ME.” He promises that he would send her a goat kid from his flock. What guarantee could she have that he would send it? What guarantee did she require, Judah queried. “His ring, his bracelet and his staff” is the ready answer. The old man hands those possessions to her, and “CAME IN UNTO HER, AND SHE CONCEIVED BY HIM.”

(*Holy Bible*) *Genesis 38:16-18.*

THE MORAL LESSON

Before we seek the heading from Timothy 3:16, under which to categorize this filthy, dirty story from the “Book of God,” I am tempted to ask, as you would be tempted to ask: what is the moral (?) lesson that our children

241 **ONANISM:** Now immortalized in the Oxford Dictionary.

will learn from Tamar's sweet revenge? Of course we do tell our children fables, not really for their entertainment value, but that through them some moral may be imparted. "The Fox and the Grapes," "The Wolf and the Lamb," "The Dog and his Shadow," etc. However simple or silly the story, a **moral** is aimed at.

'CHRISTIAN PARENTAL DILEMMAS'

Dr. Vernon Jones, an American psychologist of repute, carried out experiments on groups of schoolchildren to whom certain stories had been told. The heroes of the stories were the same in the case of the different groups of children, but the heroes behaved contradictorily to each group. To one group "St. George," slaying the dragon emerged a very brave figure, but to another group, fleeing in terror and seeking shelter in his mother's lap. "THESE STORIES MADE CERTAIN SLIGHT BUT PERMANENT CHANGES IN CHARACTER, EVEN IN THE NARROW CLASSROOM SITUATION," concluded Dr. Jones.

How much more permanent damage the rapes and murders, incests and bestialities of the "Holy Bible" have done to the children of Christendom, can be measured from reports in our daily newspapers. If such is the source of Western morality, it is no wonder, then, that Methodists and Roman Catholics have already solemnized marriages between HOMOSEXUALS in their "Houses of God". And 8 000 "gays" (an euphemistic term for sodomites) parade their "wares" in London's Hyde Park in July 1979, to the acclaim of the news and TV media!

You must get that "Holy Bible" and read the whole chapter 38 of Genesis. Mark in **"red"** the words and phrases deserving this adornment. We have reached verse 18 in our moral (?) lesson – *"AND SHE CONCEIVED BY HIM."*

CAN'T HIDE FOR EVER

Three months later, as things were bound to turn out, news reached Judah that his daughter-in-law, Tamar, had played the "harlot" and that she was with *"CHILD BY WHOREDOM AND JUDAH SAID, BRING HER FORTH, AND LET HER BE BURNT."* (*Genesis 38:24*). Judah had deliberately spurned her as a "witch" and now he sadistically wants to burn her. But this wily Jewess was one up on the old man. She sent the "ring," and the "bracelet," and the "staff," with a servant, beseeching her

father-in-law to find the culprit responsible for her pregnancy. Judah was in a fix. He confessed that his daughter-in-law was more “**RIGHTEOUS**” than himself, and “**HE KNEW HER AGAIN NO MORE**” (verse 26). It is quite an experience to compare the choice of language in which the different Versions describe the same incident. The Jehovah’s Witnesses in their “**New World Translation**” translate the last quotation as – “*HE HAD NO FURTHER INTERCOURSE WITH HER AFTER THAT.*”²⁴² This is not the last we will hear about in the “Book of God” of this Tamar whom the Gospel writers have immortalized in the “Genealogy of their Lord.”

INCEST HONOURED

I do not want to bore you with details, but the end verses of Genesis 38 deal with a duel in Tamar’s womb: about the twins struggling for ascendancy. The Jews were very meticulous about recording their “first-borns.” The first-born got the lion’s share of their father’s patrimony. Who are the lucky winners in this prenatal race? There are four in this unique contest. They are “**PHAREZ** and **ZARAH** of **TAMAR** by **JUDAH.**” How? You will see presently. But first, let us have the moral. What is the moral in this episode? You remember Er and Onan: how God destroyed them for their several sins? And the lessons we have learnt in each case was “**REPROOF.**” Under what category of Timothy will you place the incest of Judah, and his illegitimate progeny? All these characters are honoured in the “Book of God” for their bastardy. They become the great grandfathers and great grandmothers of the “**only begotten son of God.**” (?)

See Matthew 1:3. In every Version of the Bible, the Christians have varied the spelling of these characters’ names from those obtained in the Old Testament (Genesis chapter 38) with those contained in the New Testament (Matthew chapter 1) to put the reader off the scent. From PHAREZ in the “Old” to PARES in the “New,” and ZARAH to ZARA and TAMAR to THAMAR. But what about the moral? God blesses Judah for his incestuous crime! So if you do “evil” (Er), God will slay you; if you spill “seed” (Onan), God will kill you, but a daughter-in-law (Tamar) who vengefully and guilefully collects her father-in-law’s (Judah’s) “seed” is rewarded. Under what category will the Christians place this “honour” in

242 The Jehovah’s Witness Version is more explicit in its choice of words. It does not hesitate to call a spade a spade! Compare Ezekiel 23 with any other Version, and see the difference.

the “Book of God”? Where does it fit? Is it your...

1. **DOCTRINE?**

2. **REPROOF?**

3. **CORRECTION?** or

4. **INSTRUCTION INTO RIGHTEOUSNESS?**

Ask him who comes and knocks at your door – that professional preacher, that hot-gospeller, that Bible-thumper. Here, he deserves a prize if he can advance an explanation for the correct answer. There is none born who can justify this filth, this pornography under any of the above headings. But a heading has to be given. It can only be recorded under – “PORNOGRAPHY!”

BAN THE BOOK!

George Bernard Shaw said that the Bible is “THE MOST DANGEROUS BOOK ON EARTH. KEEP IT UNDER LOCK AND KEY.” Keep the Bible out of your children’s reach. But who will follow his advice? He was not a “B.A.,²⁴³ a “reborn” Christian.

According to the high morals scruples of the Christian rulers of South Africa, we have banned the book, “**Lady Chatterley’s Lover,**” because of a “tetragrammaton” – a four-letter word, they would have assuredly have placed a ban on the “Holy Bible” if it had been a Hindu religious Book, or a Muslim religious Book. But they are utterly helpless against their own “Holy book,” their “SALVATION” depends upon it!

Reading Bible stories to children
can also open up all sorts of opportunities to discuss the morality of sex. An unexpurgated Bible might get an X-rating from some censors,

The PLAIN TRUTH October 1977

Figure 19 Reproduction from The Plain Truth - October, 1977

243 “B.A.” short for “**born again**”, it is a new sickness. It destroyed the “SUICIDE CULT” of Rev. Jim Jones, in Jonestown, Guyana.

DAUGHTERS SEDUCE THEIR FATHER

Read Genesis 19, verses 30 to the end and mark again in **“red”** the words and phrases deserving this honour. Do not hesitate and procrastinate. Your “coloured” Bible will become a priceless heirloom for your children. I agree with Shaw, to keep the Bible “under lock and key,” but we need this weapon to meet the Christian challenge. The Prophet of Islam said that **“WAR IS STRATEGY,”** and strategy demands that we use the weapons of our enemy. It is not what we like and what we do not like. It is what we are forced to use against the **“ONE BOOK”** (Bible) professors, who always knock on our doors with **“the Bible says this”** and **“the Bible says that.”** They want us to exchange our Holy Qur’an for their “Holy Bible.” Show them the holes in the “holiness” which they have not yet seen. At times these robots pretend to see the filth for the first time. They have been programmed with selected verses for their propagation.

To continue: “history” has it that, night after night, the daughters of Lot seduce their drunken father with the noble (?) motive of preserving their father’s **“seed.”** “Seed” figures very prominently in this “Holy Bible”: forty seven times in the little booklet of Genesis alone! Out of this another incestuous relationship comes: the **“Ammonites”** and the **“Moabites,”** for whom the God of Israel was supposed to have had special compassion. Later on in the Bible we learn that the Jews are ordered by the same compassionate God to slaughter the Philistines mercilessly – men, women, and children. Even trees and animals are not to be spared, but the Ammonites and the Moabites are not to be **“harassed,” “distresses”** or **“meddled”** with because they are the seed of Lot! (Deuteronomy 2:19).

No decent reader can read the seduction of Lot to his mother, sister or daughter, not even to his fiancée if she is a chaste and moral woman. Yet you will come across perverted people who will gorge this filth. Tastes can be cultivated!

Read again and mark Ezekiel 23. You will know what colour to chose. The “whoredoms” of the two sisters, Aholah and Aholibah. The sexual details here put to shame even the unexpurgated editions of many banned books. Ask your **“born again”** Christian visitors, under which category will they classify all this lewdness? Such filth certainly has no place in any “Book of God.”

Al-Haj A.D. Ajijola in his book – **“The Myth of the Cross,”** gives a

masterly exposé of the fallacy of the Bible as well as of the crucifixion, in short, the whole of Christianity. No student of comparative religion can afford to be without this publication and **“THE BIBLE: Word of God or Word of Man?”** mentioned earlier on on page 341.

CHAPTER NINE

THE GENEALOGY OF JESUS

Watch now how the Christian fathers have foisted the incestuous progenies of the Old Testament upon their Lord and Saviour, Jesus Christ, in the New Testament. For a man who had no genealogy, they have manufactured one for him. And what a genealogy! Six adulterers and off springs of incest are imposed upon this holy man of God. Men and women deserving to be stoned to death according to God's own law, as revealed through Moses, and further to be ostracised and debarred from the House of God for generations.²⁴⁴

IGNOBLE ANCESTRY

Why should God give a "father" (Joseph) to His "son" (Jesus)? And why such an ignoble ancestry? **"This is the whole beauty of it,"** says the pervert. **"God loved the sinners so much that he disdaineth not to give such progenitors for His 'son.'"**

ONLY TWO COMMISSIONED

Of the four Gospel writers, God "inspired" only two of them to record the genealogy of His "son." To make it easy for you to compare the "fathers and grandfathers" of Jesus Christ in both the "inspired" lists, I have culled the names only, minus the verbiage. See page 351. Between David and Jesus, God "inspired" Matthew to record only 26 ancestors for His "son." But Luke, also "inspired," gathered up 41 forefathers for Jesus. The only name common to these two lists between David and Jesus is **JOSEPH**

244 *"The **bastard** shall not enter the congregation of the Lord even unto the tenth generation."* (Deuteronomy 23:2 – AV). The "Witnesses" have been hypersensitive to this word. Swallowing the camel and straining at the gnat!

and that, too, a “supposed” father according to Luke 3:23 (AV). This one name is glaring. You need no fine tooth comb to catch him. It is Joseph the carpenter. You will also easily observe that the lists are grossly contradictory. Could both the lists have emanated from the same source, i.e. God?

GENEALOGY from DAVID TO JESUS



FULFILLING PROPHECY?

Matthew and Luke are over-zealous in making **DAVID** the King, the prime ancestor of Jesus, because of that false notion that Jesus was to sit on the “THRONE OF HIS FATHER DAVID” (Acts 2:30). The Gospels belie this prophecy, for they tell us that instead of Jesus sitting on his father’s (David’s) throne, it was Pontius Pilate, a Roman Governor, a pagan who sat on that very throne and condemned its rightful (?) heir (Jesus) to death. “Never mind,” says the evangelist, **“if not in his first coming, then in his second coming he will fulfil this prophecy and three hundred others beside.”** But with their extravagant enthusiasm to trace the ancestry of Jesus **physically** to David, (for this is actually what the Bible says – **THAT OF THE FRUIT OF HIS (David’s) LOINS, ACCORDING TO THE FLESH**” (literally, not metaphorically Acts 2:30), both the “inspired” authors trip and fall at the very first step.

Matthew 1:6 says that Jesus was the son of **David** through SOLOMON, but Luke 3:31 says that he (Jesus) was the son of **David** through NATHAN. One need not be a gynaecologist to tell that by no stretch of the imagination could the seed of David reach the mother of Jesus both through Solomon and Nathan at the same time! We know that both the authors are confounded liars, because Jesus was conceived miraculously, without any male intervention. Even if we concede a physical ancestry through David, both authors would still be proved liars for the obvious reason.

BREAKING PREJUDICE

As simple as the above logic is, the Christian is so emotionally involved that it will not penetrate his prejudiced mind. Let us give him an identical example, but one where he can afford to be objective.

We know from history that Muhammad the Prophet of Islam, was the son of Abraham through ISHMAEL, so if some “inspired” writer came along and tried to palm off his “revelation” to the effect that Muhammad was the son of Abraham through ISAAC, we would, without any hesitation, brand such a writer as a liar, because the seed of Abraham could never reach Amina (Muhammad’s mother) through Ishmael and through Isaac at the same time! The difference of lineage between these two sons of Abraham is the difference between the JEWS and the ARABS.

In the case of Muhammad, we would know then that anyone who says that

Isaac is his progenitor, was a liar. But in the case of Jesus both Matthew and Luke are suspect. Until the Christians decide which line of ancestors they prefer for their “god,” both Gospels will have to be rejected. Christendom has been battling tooth and nail with these genealogies for the past 2 000 years, trying to unravel the mystery. They have not given up yet. We admire their perseverance. They still believe that **“TIME WILL SOLVE THE PROBLEM.”** Perhaps another 2 000 years?

“THERE ARE CLAIMED CONTRADICTIONS THAT THEOLOGAINS HAVE NOT RESOLVED TO EVERY ATHEIST’S SATISFACTION. THERE ARE TEXTUAL DIFFICULTIES WITH WHICH SCHOLARS ARE STILL WRESTLING. ONLY A BIBLE ILLITERATE WOULD DENY THESE AND OTHER PROBLEMS.” “The Plain Truth,” July 1975.

THE SOURCE OF LUKE’S “INSPIRATION”

We have already nailed 85% of Matthew and Luke to Mark or that **“mysterious ‘Q’”**.²⁴⁵ Let us now allow Luke to tell us who “inspired” him to tell his **“most excellent Theophilus”** (Luke 1:3) the story of Jesus. See Figure 20 on page 354 for Luke’s preamble to his “Gospel.” He tells us plainly that he was only following in the footsteps of others who were less qualified than himself, others who were less qualified than himself, others who had the temerity to write accounts of his hero (Jesus). As a physician, as against fishermen and tax collectors, he was no doubt better equipped to create a literary masterpiece. This he did, because **“IT SEEMED GOOD TO ME ALSO”** to **“PUT IN ORDER.”** These are his prominent justifications over his predecessors.

In the introduction to his translation of the **“Gospel of St. Luke,”** a Christian scholar, J.B. Phillips, has this to say – **“ON HIS OWN ADMISSION LUKE HAS CAREFULLY COMPARED AND EDITED EXISTING MATERIAL, BUT IT WOULD DEEM THAT HE HAD ACCESS TO A GOOD DEAL OF ADDITIONAL MATERIAL, AND WE CAN REASONABLY GUESS AT SOME OF THE SOURCES FROM WHICH HE DREW.”** And yet you call this the Word of God?! Obtain **“The Gospels in Modern English,”** in soft cover by ‘FONTANA’ publications. It is a cheap edition. Get it quickly before the

245 Refer page 324 and Figure 15 on page 329.

WHY LUKE WROTE "HIS" GOSPEL?

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO Saint Luke

FORASMUCH as many
have taken in hand to
set forth in order a
declaration of those things
which are most surely believed
among us,

2 Even as they delivered
them unto us, which from the
beginning were eyewitnesses,
and ministers of the word;

3 It seemed good to me also,
having had perfect under-
standing of all things from
the very first, to write unto
thee in order, most excellent
Theophilus,

4 That thou mightest know
the certainty of those things,
wherein thou hast been in-
structed.

Figure 20 Reproduction of Authorised Version Luke 1:1-4

WATCH THE PRONOUNS!

ST. JOHN 19

35 And he that saw *it* bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe.

WHO IS
"HE" and
"HIS"?

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO

Saint John

ST. JOHN 21

24 This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is true.

WHO
IS
"WE"
and
"I"
?

The Conclusion

25 And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. Amen.

➡ WHAT AN EXAGGERATION!

Figure 21 Reproduction of John 19:35 and 21:24-25

Christians decide to have Phillips' invaluable notes expunged from his translation! And do not be surprised if the authors of the RSV also decide to eliminate the "Preface"²⁴⁶ from their translation. It is an old, old habit. As soon as those who have vested interests in Christianity realize that they have inadvertently let the cat out of the bag, they quickly make amends. They make my current references "past" history overnight!

THE REMAINING GOSPEL

Who is the author of **"The Gospel of St. John?"** Neither God nor St. John! See what "he" (?) says about it "himself" (?) on Figure 21 on page 355 – John 19:35 and 21: 24-25. Who is his **"HE"** and **"HIS"** and **"THIS?"** A-N-D, his **"WE KNOW"** and **"I SUPPOSE."** Could it be the fickle one who left him in the lurch in the garden, when he was most in need, or the fourteenth man at the table, at the "Last Supper," the one that "Jesus loved?" Both were Johns. It was a popular name among the Jews in the time of Jesus, and among Christians even now. Neither of these two was the author of this Gospel. That it was the product of an anonymous hand, is crystal clear.

AUTHORS IN A NUTSHELL

Let me conclude this "authorship" search with the verdict of those 32 scholars, backed by their 50 co-operating denominations. God had been eliminated from this authorship race long ago. In the **RSV** by "Collins," invaluable notes (Its first page is preserved for posterity herein on Figure 9 on page 306) on **"The Books of the Bible"** are to be found at the back of their production. I am reproducing only a bit of that information on page 357. We start with **"GENESIS"** – the first book of the Bible. The scholars say about its "AUTHOR": **"One of the 'five books of Moses'."** Note the words **"five books of Moses"** are written in inverted commas – " " This is a subtle way of admitting that this is what people say – that it is the book of Moses, that Moses was its author, but we (the 32 scholars) who are better informed, do not subscribe to that tittle-tattle.

The next four books, **"EXODUS, LEVITICUS, NUMBERS and DEUTERONOMY":** AUTHOR? **"Generally credited to Moses."** This is the same category as the book of **Genesis.**

²⁴⁶ See Figure 9 on page 306.

Who is the author of the book of **“JUDGES”** Answer: **“Possibly Samuel.”**

Who is the author of **“RUTH”** Answer: **“Not definitely known”** AND

Who is the author of:

1ST SAMUEL?

Answer: Author **“Unknown”**

2ND SAMUEL?

Answer: Author **“Unknown”**

1ST KING?

Answer: Author **“Unknown”**

2ND KING?

Answer: Author **“Unknown”**

1ST CHRONICLES?

Answer: Author **“Unknown, probably...”**

2ND CHRONICLES?

Answer: Author **“Likely collected...”**

SOME BOOKS OF THE BIBLE

GENESIS

AUTHOR. One of the **“five books of Moses.”**

EXODUS

AUTHOR. **Generally** credited to Moses.

LEVITICUS

AUTHOR. **Generally** credited to Moses.

NUMBERS

AUTHOR. **Generally** credited to Moses.

DEUTERONOMY

AUTHOR. **Generally** credited to Moses.

FIRST CHRONICLES

AUTHOR. **Unknown**, probably collected and edited by Ezra.

SECOND CHRONICLES

AUTHOR. **Likely** collected and edited by Ezra.

EZRA

AUTHOR. **Probably** written or edited by Ezra.

ESTHER

AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

JOB

AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

JOSHUA

AUTHOR. **Generally** credited to Joshua.

JUDGES

AUTHOR. **Possibly** Samuel.

RUTH

AUTHOR. Not definitely known, **perhaps** Samuel.

FIRST SAMUEL

AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

SECOND SAMUEL

AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

FIRST KINGS

AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

SECOND KINGS

AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

PSALMS

AUTHOR. Principally David, though there are **other writers**.

ECCLESIASTES

AUTHOR. Doubtful, but **commonly** assigned to Solomon.

ISAIAH

AUTHOR. Mainly credited to Isaiah. Parts **may** have been written **by others**.

JONAH

AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

HABAKKUK

AUTHOR. **Nothing known** of the place or time of his birth.

The above facts are from Collins' R.S.V. 1971. Pages 12-17.

And so the story goes. The authors of these anonymous books are either **"UNKNOWN"** or are **"PROBABLY"** or **"LIKELY"** or are of **"DOUBTFUL"** origin. Why blame God for this fiasco? The long-suffering and Merciful God did not wait for two thousand years for Bible scholars to tell us that He was not the Author of Jewish peccadilloes, prides and prejudices; of their lusts, wranglings, jealousies and enormities. He said it openly what they do:

فَوَيْلٌ لِلَّذِينَ

So woe to those who

يَكْتُبُونَ الْكِتَابَ بِأَيْدِيهِمْ

write the "scripture" with their own hands,

ثُمَّ يَقُولُونَ

then say,

هَذَا مِنْ عِنْدِ اللَّهِ

“This is from Allah,”

لِيَشْتَرُوا بِهِ ثَمَنًا قَلِيلًا^ط

in order to exchange it for a small price.

فَوَيْلٌ لَهُمْ مِمَّا كَتَبَتْ أَيْدِيهِمْ

Woe to them for what their hands have written

وَوَيْلٌ لَهُمْ مِمَّا يَكْسِبُونَ

*and woe to them for what they earn.*²⁴⁷

Surah al-Baqarah (Holy Qur'an 2:79)

We could have started the thesis of this book with the above Qur'anic verse and ended with it, with the satisfaction that God Almighty had Himself delivered His verdict on the subject – **“Is the Bible God's Word?”**, but we wished to afford our Christian brethren an opportunity to study the subject as objectively as they wished,²⁴⁸ allowing believing Christians, **“reborn”** Christians, and their own Holy Book the Bible to testify against their “better” judgement.

What about the Holy Qur'an? Is the Qur'an the Word of God? The author of this humble publication has endeavoured to answer this question in a most scientific manner in his book **“AL-QUR'AN – The Miracle of Miracles,”** or consult Volume 1, Part 4.

247 **“THE BIBLE” – “The World's Best Seller!”** the Publishers of the RSV made a net profit of 15 000 000 dollars on the first edition alone! **“What a miserable price in exchange for eternity!”**

248 See Dr. Scroggie's plea on page 321.

EPILOGUE

The reader must by now be convinced, that is if he has an open mind, that the Bible is not what it is claimed to be by the protagonists and propagandists of Christianity.

Four nearly four decades people have asked me as to how I have such an “in depth” knowledge of the Bible and Christianity.

Frankly speaking my present position as a Muslim “expert” on Judaism and Christianity is not of my own volition. I have been forced into being what I am.

EARLY PROVOCATION

It was in 1939 when I was working as a shop assistant at Adams Mission near a Christian seminary by that name; producing preachers and priests, that I and my fellow Muslim workers were the target of young aspiring men of the cloth. Not a day passed when these young Christians did not harass me or my brothers-in-faith, through insults which they piled on Islam, the Holy Prophet and the Qur'an.

Being a sensitive young man of 20, I spent sleepless nights in tears for not being able to defend the one dearer to me than my own life, **that mercy unto all mankind** – Muhammad (PBUH). I resolved to study the Qur'an, the Bible and other literature. My discovery of the book – **“IZHARUL HAQ”** was the turning point in my life. After a short while I was able to invite the trainee missionaries of Adams Mission College and cause them to perspire under the collar until they developed a respect for Islam and its Holy Apostle.

MUSLIMS UNDER CONSTANT ATTACK

It made me ponder as to how so many unwary Muslims are being constantly assaulted by Christian evangelists who carry out a door to door campaign, and being invited in by the proverbially hospital Muslim, I thought of how the merciless missionary munched the **samoosas** and punched the wind out of the Muslim with snide remarks against his beliefs.

Determined to bring home to the Muslims their right to defend themselves and to arm them with enough knowledge to counter the hot-gospeller, the door-to-door peddler of Christianity and the shameless insulter of Islam and its Holy Apostle. I undertook to deliver lectures to show the Muslim masses that they had nothing to fear from the assaults of the Christians.

My lectures were also an invitation to the Christians to witness the truth of Islam and the fabrications which had penetrated the true teachings of Jesus (PBUH).

ATTACK NOT NEW

Christian missionaries in the past hundred years and more have challenged Muslims on many aspects and quite a number of these challenges have, to my knowledge, gone unanswered or have been partly answered. Perhaps by the will of Allah my contribution in this field can also be answers or part-answers to the challenges of the detractors of Islam. It is of paramount importance that we do not lose by default.

One such challenge comes to mind viz. Geo G. Harris, the author of **“How to lead Muslims to Christ”**. This missionary who tried to convert the Muslims of China says in the usual arrogant and condescending manner of the Westerner on page 19 under the heading – **“THE THEORY OR CHARGE OF CORRUPTION.”**

“WE NOW COME TO THE MOST SERIOUS CHARGE BY THE MOSLEM WORLD, AGAINST OUR CHRISTIAN SCRIPTURES. THERE ARE THREE ASPECTS OF THIS CHARGE.

- 1. That the Christian scriptures have been so changed and altered that they bear little, if any, resemblance to the glorious Injil praised in the Qur'an. This can be answered by the asking of one of the following questions: Wherein have these been so changed or altered? Can you obtain a copy of a true Injil and show it that I may compare it with mine? At what date in past history was the unaltered Injil in circulation?*
- 2. That our gospels have suffered corruption. The following five questions are definite*

and we have a perfect right to ask them:

- (a) Was such corruption or alteration intentional?*
- (b) Can you point out in my Bible one such passage?*
- (c) How did this passage read originally?*
- (d) When, by whom, how or why was it corrupted or altered?*
- (e) Was such corruption of the text or of the meaning?*

3. That our Gospels are “faked” substitutes for the original Injil. Or that our Gospels are the handiwork of men, not the noble Injil which descended upon Jesus. A little questioning will usually reveal the true situation, that usually the Moslem making the charge is woefully ignorant of the Bible or New Testament as it actually existed in the past or exists today.

BEFORE GOING ON TO THE LATTER HALF OF THIS DISCUSSION, A REMINDER IS IMPORTANT THAT AS SOON AS THE OBJECTOR IS WILLING TO SENSE THE FLIMSINESS OF SUCH A CHARGE WE SHOULD PRESS HOME SOME TEACHING FROM OUR SCRIPTURES, THAT OUR EFFORT MAY BE POSITIVE AND NOT NEGATIVE.”

HAVE MUSLIMS THE ANSWER?

Have we as Muslims no answers for these questions? **If you, gentle reader, have read this book you will admit that Geo G. Harris has no feet to stand on.** I have been able to give actual pages from the Bible to disprove his assertions.

MUSLIMS CHALLENGED

On page 16 of Geo G. Harris’ book he teaches his comrades a basic missionary rule in order to corner the Muslim prospective:

*“In this chapter it is assumed that the question of the authenticity and genuineness of our scriptures has been raised by the Mohammedan. When this is the case, before we undertake defence of our position we should bear in mind a basic rule. THE BURDEN OF PROOF RESTS WITH THE MOSLEM.”*²⁴⁹

249 **Alhamdu-lillah!** (Praise be to Allah), the reader will agree that in this and our other publications listed on the back cover, we have been constantly meeting this Christian challenge.

Praise be to Allah that in my 40 years of disproving the authenticity of the Bible which the Christians have so boldly asked for, I have been able to win the day.

Remember, we Muslims do not go from door to door peddling our religion, whereas Christians of different denominations encroach upon our privacy and peace and take advantage of our hospitality to harass the unwary Musalman.

Those who are afraid to project the truth when they are provoked by these Christians, who even go to the extent of insulting our beloved Nabee Muhammad (PBUH) should re-examine their Eeman.

The lectures I hold are to sound out these slinking missionaries who “attack” the home and hearth of the unsuspecting Muslim who goes about minding his own business.

The lectures are also aimed at restoring the damaged dignity of the Muslim who has been ruffled by the ruthless attacks of the Christian peddler. Ask the poor Muslims of Chatsworth, Hanover Park or Riverlea²⁵⁰ as to how they are subjected to the tyranny of certain missionaries.

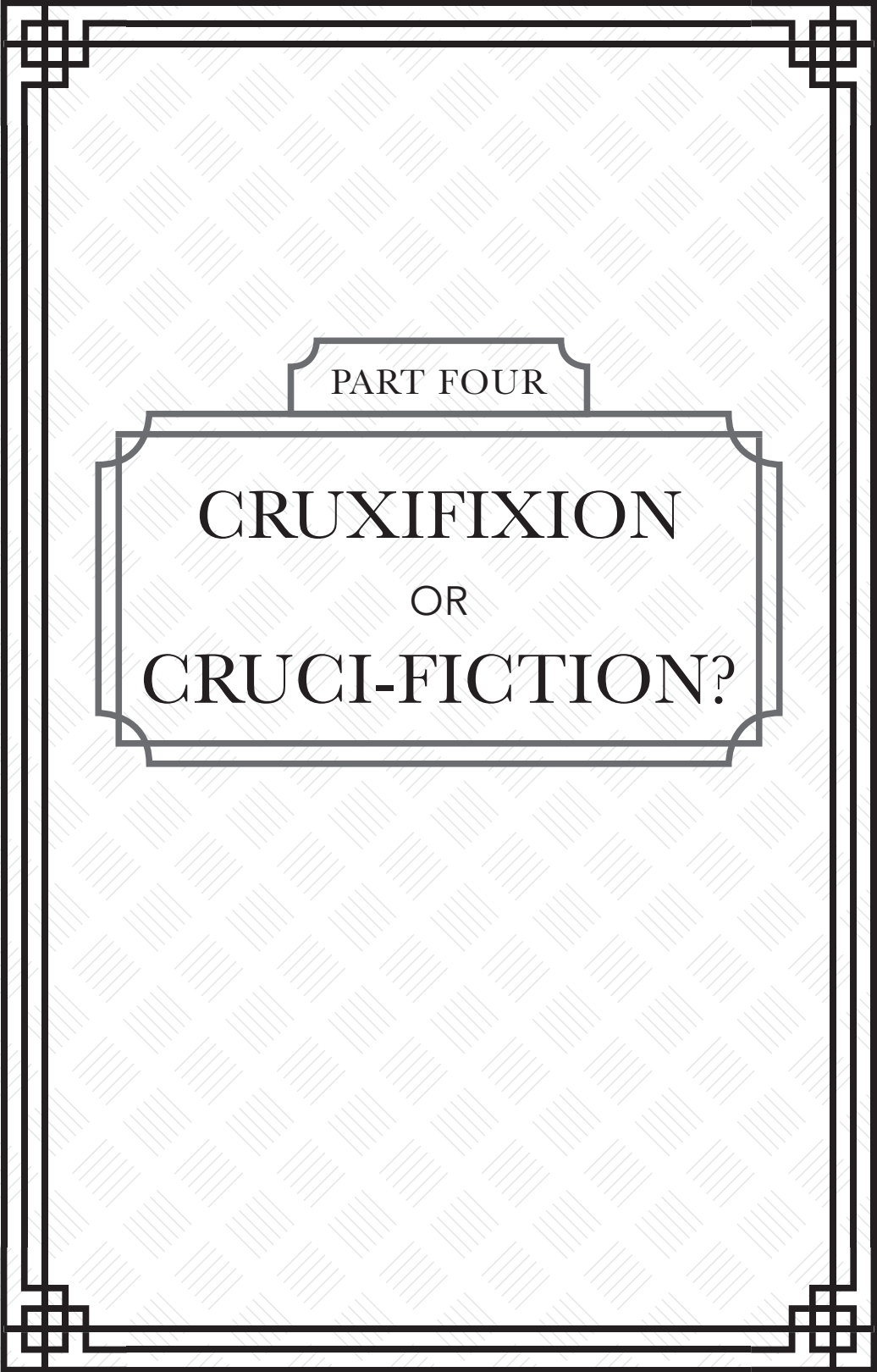
If this humble little contribution of mine – **“Is the Bible God’s Word?”** – finds a place in the Muslim home as a bulwark against the missionary menace, my efforts would be amply rewarded.

A greater reward would be if even one sincere disciple of Jesus (on whom be peace) were to be led to the truth and be removed from fabrications and falsehood.

The greatest reward of course lies with Allah Almighty whom I supplicate for guidance and mercy and pray and crave that He accepts my effort which I dedicate to Him in all humility.

250 These are just a couple of the many townships in which the poorer Muslims is made to live by law under the South African **“Group Areas Act.”**





PART FOUR

CRUXIFIXION
OR
CRUCI-FICTION?

CHAPTER ONE

THE ONLY SALES-POINT

“MOST-INFLUENTIAL MAN”

Recently, an American historical researcher and mathematician, Michael H. Hart, published a book: **“THE 100, THE TOP HUNDRED OR THE GREATEST HUNDRED IN HISTORY.”** In his book he gives the names of the **100 “Most Influential Men in History”** and his reasons for their positions in his list. Amazingly, **he** (most probably a Christian) puts Muhammad (Peace be upon Him) **FIRST** in his hundred, and with good reasons too. And with equally good reasons he places Jesus Christ (Peace be upon Him), the man accepted as “Lord” and “Saviour” by nearly all his fellow Americans, number **THREE**.

REAL FOUNDER OF CHRISTIANITY

Though there are at the moment 200 million more nominal Christians in the world than the 100 million Muslims, Mr. Hart divides the credit for founding Christianity between Paul and Jesus, and he gives the greater credit to Paul. Hence the 3rd position for Jesus. Every knowledgeable Christian concedes that the real founder of Christianity is St. Paul and not Jesus Christ (Peace be upon Him).

REASON FOR DIFFERENCE

In any event, if there is any division between a Muslim and a Christian on the grounds of dogma, belief, ethics or morality, then the cause of such conflict could be traced to an utterance of Paul found in his books of Corinthians, Philippians, Galatians, Thessalonians, etc., in the Bible.

As against the teaching of the Master (Jesus) that salvation only comes

through keeping of the commandments (*Matthew 19:16-17*), Paul nails the law and the commandments to the cross (*Colossians 2:14*)²⁵¹, and claims that salvation can only be obtained through the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ:

***“If Christ be not risen from the dead,
then our preaching is vain,
and your faith is also vain.”***

(Holy Bible) 1 Corinthians 15:14

THE KINGPIN OF CHRISTIANITY

According to St. Paul, there is nothing that Christianity can offer mankind, other than the blood and gore of Jesus. If Jesus did NOT die, and he was NOT resurrected from the dead, then there can be no salvation in Christianity! ***“For all your good deeds,”*** says the Christian dogmatist, ***“are like filthy rags”*** –

(Holy Bible) Isaiah 64:6

NO CRUCI-FICTION - NO CHRISTIANITY

“THE DEATH OF JESUS ON THE CROSS IS THE CENTRE OF ALL CHRISTIAN THEOLOGY... ALL CHRISTIAN STATEMENTS ABOUT GOD, ABOUT CREATION, ABOUT SIN AND DEATH HAVE THEIR FOCAL POINT IN THE CRUCIFIED CHRIST. ALL CHRISTIAN STATEMENTS ABOUT HISTORY, ABOUT THE CHURCH, ABOUT FAITH AND SANCTIFICATION, ABOUT THE FUTURE AND ABOUT HOPE STEM FROM THE CRUCIFIED CHRIST”, says Profesor Jurgen Moltmann in his – ***“The Crucified God.”***²⁵²

In a nutshell, No Crucifixion! – No Christianity! This is the experience of us Muslims, in this ocean of Christianity, which is South Africa. A

251 One of the multifarious letters correspondence of Paul among the 27 Books of the New Testament.

252 **“GOD”**: The bulk of Christendom accept Jesus Christ as God incarnate – God in human flesh. According to the Christian dogma, Jesus must die as God, for a million human sacrifices cannot redeem mankind for their sin.

thousand sects and denominations of Christianity are vying with one another to redeem the **“heathen”** (as they say) from hellfire. However, in this battle no Christian priest, parson or predikant, or hot-gospeller, local or imported, will ever endeavour to teach the Muslim something about **hygiene**; for we Muslims can claim to be the most hygienic people (I am talking about personal hygiene). Nor do they endeavour to teach us about **hospitality**; for we are the most hospitable people. Nor about ethics or morality; for we are the most moral people – (as a whole) i.e. we don’t drink, we don’t gamble, we don’t date, court or dance; we pray 5 times a day, we fast for one whole month during the Muslim Holy month of Ramadhan; and we take pleasure in being a charitable people. Despite any of our shortcomings, we venture to suggest that there is not another group of people that can “hold a candle” to us in brotherhood, piety or sobriety.

BLOOD FOR SALVATION

“Yes! Yes! says the Christian missionary, **“but you do not have salvation.”** Because salvation comes “only through the blood of the Lord Jesus.” “All your good works are like filthy rags,” he says. “If only you Muslims would accept the redeeming blood of Jesus, and take Jesus as your ‘Personal Saviour’, you Muslims, then would be like angels walking the earth.”

AN ANSWER SUPREME

What are we Muslims to say to this Christian claim? Nothing better than Allah’s²⁵³ shattering reply to the Jewish boast!

وَقَوْلِهِمْ

And (for) their saying,

إِنَّا قَتَلْنَا الْمَسِيحَ

“Indeed, we have killed the Messiah,

253 **Allah:** Allah is the name of God Almighty in the Semitic Languages, i.e. in the language of Moses, Jesus and Muhammad (may the Peace of God be upon Them All)..

عِيسَى ابْنِ مَرْيَمَ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ

Jesus the son of Mary, the messenger of Allah.”

وَمَا قَتَلُوهُ

And they did not kill him,

وَمَا صَلَّبُوهُ

nor did they crucify him;

وَلَكِنْ شُبِّهَ لَهُمْ

but (another) was made to resemble him to them.

وَأَنَّ الَّذِينَ اخْتَلَفُوا فِيهِ

And indeed, those who differ over it

لَفِي شَكٍّ مِنْهُ

are in doubt²⁵⁴ about it.

مَا لَهُمْ بِهِ مِنْ عِلْمٍ

They have no knowledge²⁵⁵ of it

إِلَّا اتِّبَاعَ الظَّنِّ

except the following of assumption.²⁵⁶

وَمَا قَتَلُوهُ يَقِينًا

And they did not kill him, for certain.

Surah an-Nisa (Holy Qur'an 4:157)

254 “In Doubt” – in a state of confusion.

255 “No Knowledge” – in ignorance.

256 “Following of Assumption” – Guesswork – Fiction!

Could anyone have been more EXPLICIT, more EMPHATIC, more DOGMATIC, more UNCOMPROMISING in rejecting the dogma of a faith than this? **“IMPOSSIBLE!”** is the answer. The only One who could, would be the All-Knowing, the Omniscient, the Omnipotent Lord of the Universe – GOD ALMIGHTY Himself!

The Muslim believes this categorical Qur’anic statement to be from God. Hence he asks no questions and seeks no proof.

“My Lord saith!” he says:

We hear and we affirm!

Had the Christians accepted the Holy Qur’an as the Word of God, the problem of the crucifixion would never have arisen. They vehemently oppose the Qur’anic teaching and attack everything Islamic. In the words of Thomas Carlyle – “THEY (the Christians) HAVE BEEN TRAINED TO HATE THE MAN MOHAMED AND HIS RELIGION.”

CHAPTER TWO

CALL YOUR WITNESSES

HIGH-PRESSURE SALESMANSHIP

In trying to prove their dogmas²⁵⁷, they invent shocking statements and posers – one of which has been used as the title of this book – “CHRIST CRUCIFIED – Hoax or History?”²⁵⁸ No doubt it sounds provocative; but it is a borrowed title – from the Christian’s own extravagances; from his own vocabulary.

Garner Ted Armstrong, the Executive Vice-President and Co-Publisher of the **“PLAIN TRUTH”** (a Christian Magazine from America, which boasts a current, FREE, worldwide circulation of 6 million copies a month)²⁵⁹, attempts to answer his own puzzle under the heading: **“WAS THE RESURRECTION A HOAX?”** This is the typical American way of selling religion. He elucidates his poser – **“HOAX?”** with the words, **“THE RESURRECTION OF JESUS CHRIST OF NAZARETH IS EITHER THE SUPREME FACT OF HISTORY OR A FLAGRANT, DELIBERATE FABRICATION FOISTED OFF ON THE FOLLOWERS OF CHRISTIANITY.”**

Another budding, young “Billy Graham” from America, Josh McDowell effuses in his book **“THE RESURRECTION FACTOR,”** saying, **“I WAS FORCED TO THE CONCLUSION THAT THE RESURRECTION OF JESUS CHRIST IS EITHER ONE OF THE MOST WICKED,**

257 **Dogma:** “Principle, tenet, doctrinal system; arrogant declaration of opinion.” – Oxford Dictionary.

258 Original title of this book.

259 As claimed in their February 1984 issues.

HEARTLESS, VICIOUS, HOAXES EVER FOISTED UPON THE MINDS OF MEN, OR IT IS THE MOST FANTASTIC FACT OF HISTORY.” Since it is not possible for an Oriental to match American superlatives and extravagant verbiage, I do not have to apologise for humble borrowing their words for my book: **“CHRIST CRUCIFIED – Hoax or History?”**²⁶⁰

CHRISTIAN OBJECTION

To the Muslim belief that Jesus Christ was **“neither killed nor crucified”**, the Christian objects, “how can a man (Muhammad PBUH) a thousand miles away from the scene of a happening, and 600 years after an event, pronounce as to what had transpired?” The Muslim says that the words Muhammad (PBUH) uttered were not his own, but that the Words were “put into his mouth” by the All-Knowing, All-Seeing God. The Christian retorts that he is not prepared to accept the metaphysical aspect of Muhammad’s revelation; more so, in view of the written records by “eye-witnesses” (?) and “ear-witnesses” (?) as regards the happenings on that Easter weekend some two thousand years ago.

The Christian plea is valid. Their logic is good. To entertain their plea we will call up their witnesses and cross-examine them to discover the truth or falsity of the matter from their own authorities. Admittedly, the key witnesses in the case are Matthew, Mark, Luke and John – the alleged authors of the Canonical Gospels. But they have all died and are in their graves. “Yes, that is true, but we have in our possession their sworn affidavits!” says the Christian.

DEMAND FOR PROOF

When confronted with the extravagant and conflicting claims of the Jews and the Christians to their exclusive rights to salvation, Allah (**subhanahu wa ta-ala**) commands us to demand for proof. He says:

قُلْ هَاتُوا بُرْهَانَكُمْ إِن كُنْتُمْ صَادِقِينَ

Say, “Produce your proof, if you should be truthful.”

Surah al-Baqarah (Holy Qur’an 2:111)

260 Now changed to – “CRUCIFIXION OR CRUCI-FICTION?”

And they have produced the only proof they have; in over fifteen hundred different languages! Eleven different dialects of the Bible for the Arabs alone!²⁶¹ Are we going to swallow them hook, line and sinker? No! It is presupposed that when Allah commands us to demand for proof, that we would be in a position to analyse the proof, once it is produced. Otherwise, it makes no sense to demand for proof; it would be nonsense.

261 See Figure 8 on page 253.

CHAPTER THREE

ESTABLISHING GOD'S KINGDOM

THIRD PARTY EVIDENCE – “ACCORDING TO...”

The amazing thing about the Christians' sworn affidavits (writings attributed to Matthew, Mark, Luke and John) is that not a single one of them is duly attested. Not a single one bears the signature, mark or thumb-print of its author in the so-called originals. They now boast of being in possession of over 24 000 “originals” of which no two “originals” are identical. Amazing! Little wonder of the Christians themselves label their Gospels as – “The Gospel **according** to St. Matthew,” “the Gospel **according** to St. Mark,” “the Gospel **according** to St. Luke,” and “the Gospel **according** to St. John.”

When Christian scholars are asked why the words “**according to**”²⁶² are repeated at the beginning of every Gospel, the obvious implication is that they are not autographed. It is only assumed that they are authored by the names of the Gospels carry today. The translators of the “**New International Version**” have unceremoniously expunged the “**According to's**” from the four Gospels in their latest translation. Of the alleged Gospel writers, viz., Matthew, Mark, Luke and John it can be categorically stated that 50% were not even the elected Twelve Disciples of Jesus (PBUH).

262 “**According to**”; This aspect is dealt with in detail in the book – “**Is the Bible God's Word?**”

PRIMA FACIE CASE

I dare to claim humbly that such unattested documents would be thrown out of hand, in any court of law, in any civilised country, in just two minutes. Furthermore, one of the alleged witnesses, St. Mark, tells us that the most critical juncture in the life of Jesus –

***“All his disciples
forsook him and fled”***

(Holy Bible) Mark 14:50

Please ask your Christian friend, “Does **“all”** mean **all** in your language, you Englishman?” (This applies to the North American as well) And he will no doubt say – **“Yes!”** “Does **‘almal’** mean **almal** in your language, you Afrikaner?” And no doubt he will say – **“ja!”** (pronounced **Yaa**); “And does **‘bonke’** mean **bonke** in your language, you Zulu?” and he will say – **“Ahe!”** This is true of every language. Why not memorise this verse from the Bible in your own dialect? Even in some additional languages?

So the so-called “eye-witnesses” were not really **eye-witnesses** to the happenings, unless St. Mark is not telling us the whole truth, the “gospel truth.” Yet he is supposed to be speaking under oath! You will agree that a case based on such hearsay evidence would be thrown out of Court, TWICE in two minutes, in any court of law, in any civilised country; that is TWICE in just 120 seconds flat! But a ghost (dogma) of two thousand years standing, upon which hangs the salvation of 1200 million Christians, should not be summarily dismissed. It deserved a little more circumspection. We will therefore entertain the alleged testimonies of Matthew, Mark, Luke and John as if they were duly attested.

WHERE DO WE BEGIN?

At the beginning of course! – exactly as the Bible does (“In the beginning...” – Genesis 1:1) – just 24 hours before the cataclysmic events of **“a thunderstorm; an eclipse of the sun; an earthquake; rocks being rent; the veil of the temple being torn from the top to bottom; graves being opened and sleeping corpses marching through the streets of Jerusalem...”** as narrated by the Christians’ Witnesses. What a scenario for a billion dollar, record-breaking film production!

We must not forget that the Jews are in the dock, allegedly for the murder of Jesus Christ; and we as Muslims are constrained to defend them against

the Christian charge, because justice must be done. Whatever their sins of commission and omission, Allah exonerates them from the charge of murder. He says:

وَمَا قَتَلُوهُ يَقِينًا

And they did not kill him, for certain.

Surah an-Nisa (Holy Qur'an 4:157)

PLAYING THE “CRUCI-FICTION” CARD

The Christian world has been unjustly persecuting and hounding and killing our Jewish cousins for nearly two thousand years for a murder they did not commit. Attempted murder? – maybe! But murder? – **No!** By absolving the Jew of a crime he did not commit, we are also taking the wind out of the hot-gospellers' and the Bible-thumpers' sail. In the battle for the hearts and minds of mankind, “cruci-FICTION” is the only card the Christian holds. Free him from his infatuation and you will have freed the Muslim world from missionary aggression and harassment.

AROUND THE TABLE

On the eve of the Passover Feast, Jesus and his twelve disciples are seated around a huge Table with their host – the “**beloved disciple,**” whose name also happened to be **John.** Johns' and Jesus²⁶³ were names, common among the Jews in the year 30 A.C. as Tom, Dicks, Johns and Jimmys are with us in the twentieth century. There were at least 14 men at the table (count them if you wish) and not the unlucky thirteen of Western superstition.²⁶⁴

MARCH INTO JERUSALEM

Jesus (PBUH) made his triumphant regal entry into Jerusalem at the head of an excited and enthusiastic following, with high hopes of establishing the “Kingdom of God” any minute; riding a donkey to fulfil a prophecy (Zechariah 9:9) –

263 Of the three candidates for the 3 crosses at Golgotha on the 1st Easter weekend, there were 2 Jesus. The one released was Jesus Barabbas.

264 A country as advanced as South Africa, like an adjunct of the U.S.A. has no Row 13 on any of its aeroplanes!!

*Tell ye the daughter of Zion,
 behold, thy KING cometh...
 sitting upon an ass...
 and great multitude
 spread their garments...
 and branches in the way...
 and the multitude cried, saying,
 "Hosanna to the SON OF DAVID...
 Hosanna is the highest..."*

(Holy Bible) Matthew 21: 5-9

Let Luke the beloved physician, add his stroked to clarify the picture.

*"...because he was near to Jerusalem,
 and because they thought
 that the kingdom of God
 should IMMEDIATELY appear" –*

(Holy Bible) Luke 19:11

HEAVENLY KINGDOM?

*"But those enemies,
 who would not that
 I should REIGN over them,
 bring the hither,
 and SLAY them before me" –*

(Holy Bible) Luke 19:27

*"...Blessed be the KING who cometh
 in the name of the Lord..." –*

(Holy Bible) Luke 19: 38

And John adds that the excited throng exclaimed –

*"Hosanna!
 Blessed is the KING of ISRAEL*

that cometh in the name of the Lord” –

(Holy Bible) John 12:13

*“The Pharisees said...
Behold, the world is gone
(mad) after him (Jesus)” –*

(Holy Bible) John 12:19

*“NOW is the judgement of this world;
N-O-W shall the prince
of this world be CAST OUT”*

(Holy Bible) John 12:31

Who would withstand such heady-wine of impending glory? Little wonder that Jesus was tempted physically to oust those that bought and sold within the temple precincts. He overthrew the money-changer's tables and drove them out with a *“whip of cords”* – (John 2:15).

AN ABORTED COUP

The overthrow of the Temple Authority was imminent, and a forerunner to the expulsion of the Romans, heralding the **“Kingdom of God.”** But alas his high hopes did not materialise. The whole performance fizzled out like a damp squib, despite all the **“Hosannas”** and hoorays to the **“Son of David”** and the **“King of Israel.”** All this ballyhoo was only forty years premature.

Jesus had failed to heed the warning of the Pharisees to curb the over-exuberance of his disciples (Luke 19:39). He had miscalculated. Now he must pay the price of failure. His nation was not ready for any sacrifice, in spite of all their infantile clamour.

JEWISH REASONING

The Jewish leaders reasoned that this one man had almost brought the nation to destruction. Therefore,

“It is expedient

for one man to die for the nation” –

(Holy Bible) John 11:50

But with all the mass hysteria surrounding him, it was also NOT expedient to apprehend Jesus in public. They waited for the opportunity of a clandestine arrest. As luck would have it they found in Judas, an elected disciple of Jesus (PBUH), a traitor who would sell his Lord and Master for thirty miserable pieces of silver.

JUDAS WAS DISGRUNTLED

In the opinion of Christian divines it was the greed of gold which enticed Judas to do his dastardly deed. But he had more money-sense than the Christians gave him credit for. As a purser for the elect group of Jesus he had endless opportunities of pinching pennies permanently. Why jeopardise that for all times for 30 paltry pieces? There is more to that than meets the eye. Judas was disgruntled, after all those mass demonstrations on Jesus' regal entry into Jerusalem – those hot outpourings of: **“The HOUR is come – and NOW is – the Prince of this World will be CAST OUT –I should REIGN over them – bring them HITHER and SLAY THEM before me.”** Jesus had now developed cold feet. If only Jesus could be provoked, he might react with miracles, and bring down fire and brimstones from Heaven upon his enemies; and, of course, the legions of angels (which he boasted were at his disposal), which would enable him and his disciples to rule the world.

From close contact with the Master, Judas had learned that Jesus was kind, tender and loving. But, he was not a mealy-mouthed man; he was no milk-and-water Messiah. But he could not understand the “hot and cold” blowings of Jesus. Perhaps if Jesus was accosted, he would react, he would yet deliver the goods; to this end Judas schemed.

THE TRAITOR KNOWN

The furtive looks and the suspicious behaviour of Judas has revealed everything to Jesus (PBUH). He did not need the Holy Ghost to interpret the misgivings in Judas's mind. At the Table in the Upper room where Jesus and his disciples were having that “Last Supper”, Jesus dismissed Judas with the words:

“...What thou doest, do quickly.”

(Holy Bible) John 13:27

And Judas took off to put the seal on the deal to the stab-in-the-back.

CHAPTER FOUR

PREPARATION FOR JIHAAD

POLICY CHANGE

Jesus will not be a sitting-duck for a clandestine arrest by the Jews. He prepares his disciples for the impending showdown. Discreetly, so as not to frighten his disciples, he introduces the subject of defence. Gently he begins:

***“When I sent you without purse,
and scrip, and shoes,
lacked ye anything?”
And they said, “Nothing.”
Then said he unto them,
“But now, he that hath no purse,
let him take it,
and likewise his bag;
and he that hath no SWORD,
let him sell his garment
and buy one!”***

(Holy Bible) Luke 22:35-36

This is a preparation for **Jihaad**, a Holy War – Jews against Jews! Why? Why this somersault? Did he not advice them to **“turn the other cheek”**; **“to forgive seventy times seven”** ($70 \times 7 = 490$)? Did he not send his chosen Twelve with the advice:

***“Behold, I send you forth as sheep
in the midst of wolves;
be ye, therefore, as wise as serpents, (?)***

and as harmless as doves.”

(Holy Bible) Matthew 10:16

TO ARMS! TO ARMS!

The situation and circumstance have changed and as with any wise and able general, the strategy must also change. The disciples were already armed. They had some foresight. They had not left Galilee with bare knuckles. They responded:

***“...Lord, behold, here are two SWORDS.”
And he said unto them, “It is enough.”***

(Holy Bible) Luke 22:38

The missionary, so as to retain the impression of the “meek and gentle Jesus,” “the Prince of Peace,” pleads that the SWORDS were spiritual! If the swords were spiritual, then the **“garments”** must also be spiritual. If the disciples of Jesus were to sell their SPIRITUAL garments to buy SPIRITUAL swords, in that case they would all become SPIRITUALLY naked! Furthermore, one does not lop off peoples physical ears with spiritual swords –

***“And, behold,
one of those who were with Jesus
stretched out his hand,
and drew his SWORD,
and struck a servant of the high priest’s,
and cut off his ear.”***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 26:51

The only purpose of swords or guns is to maim and to kill. People did not carry swords to pare apples and bananas in the time of Christ.

WHY COUPLE OF SWORDS ENOUGH?

If this was a preparation for war, then why should two swords be **“enough?”** The reason is that Jesus was not contemplating a battle against the legions of Rome. Since his **“friend”** Judas was in league with the Temple authorities, he was expecting a sly, underhand attempt by the

Jewish oligarchy to seize him. It would be a question of Jews against Jews. In such a battle against the Jewish temple servants and the riffraff of the town, he would prevail. Of that he was sure. He had with him Peter (**the Rock**) and John and James (**the sons of Thunder**) together with the other eight, each vying with one another to go to prison for him; to die for him.²⁶⁵ These were all Galileans. They had a reputation of zealotry, terrorism, and repeated insurrections against the Romans.

Armed with sticks and stones, and the swords, and fortified with the spirit of self-sacrifice which they had avowed for their Master, he was sure to knock hell into any Jewish rabble that dared to confront him.

A MASTER TACTICIAN

He had proved himself a skilful strategist and planner, alert and resourceful. This was not the time to sit and twiddle thumbs; to be a sitting-duck, cooped up with his disciples in the upper-room! No, not for him. He leads his platoon, in the middle of the night, to Gethsemane. Gethsemane – an olive press – was a courtyard built of stone walls some 5 miles out of town.

On the way, he unburdens to them the seriousness of the situation. The implications and the explosive nature of the coup that failed. Now he must bear the wrath of the powers that be. The price of failure!

You do not have to be a military genius to appreciate that, Jesus (PBUH) deploys his forces as a master tactician, in a manner that would bring credit to any Officer out of “Sandhurst.”²⁶⁶ He places eight of the eleven disciples at the entrance to the courtyard, commanding them:

***“...Sit ye here,
while I go and pray yonder.”***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 26:36

The question that would bug any thinker is: “Why did they all go to Gethsemane?” To pray? Could they have not prayed in the upper-room? Could they have not gone to the Temple of Solomon, a stone’s throw from where they were, if prayer is all that they wanted to do? No! They went to the Garden so that they might be in a better position to defend themselves. Observe, Jesus does not take eight with him to pray. He positions them

²⁶⁵ ***“Likewise also said all the disciples.”*** – (Matthew 26:35)

²⁶⁶ A leading military academy in England.

strategically at the entrance to the courtyard; armed to the hilt, as the circumstances would allow:

***“And he took with him Peter
and the two sons of Zebedee...
Then saith he unto them...
tarry ye here and watch with me.”***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 26: 37-38

Where is he taking Peter and John and James now? Further into the Garden! To pray? No! To make an inner line of defence – he had put eight at the Gate, and, now these zealous Zealots (the fighting Irishmen of their day), armed with SWORDS, to **“wait and watch”** – TO KEEP GUARD! The picture is very vivid; Jesus leaves nothing to our imagination. A-n-d **HE** (alone) prayed!

JESUS PRAYS FOR RESCUE

***“...and began to be sorrowful
and very depressed.
Then saith he unto them,
‘my soul is exceedingly sorrowful,
even unto death’...”***
***“And he went a little further,
and fell on his face
(Exactly as the Muslim does in Salaat),
and prayed, saying,
‘O my Father, if it be possible,
let this cup pass from me;
nevertheless, not as I will,
but as thou wilt.”***

(This is the quality of a good Muslim who submits his will to the will of God.)

(Holy Bible) Matthew 26: 37-39

***“And being in an agony,
he prayed more earnestly;
and his sweat was, as it were,
great drops of blood***

falling down to the ground.”

(Holy Bible) Luke 22:44

MESSIAH SOBS FOR HIS PEOPLE

Why all this bewailing and lamentation? Is he crying to save his skin? It would be highly cynical on his part to do that! Did he not advise others:

*“And if thy right eye offend thee,
pluck it out...
And if thy right hand offend thee,
cut it off, and cast it from thee;
for it is profitable for thee that
one of thy members should perish,
and not that thy whole body
should be cast into hell.”*

(Holy Bible) Matthew 5: 29-30

We would be doing Jesus a grave injustice if we thought that he was crying like a woman to save his body from physical harm. He was crying for his people – the Jews. They held a queer logic, that if they succeeded in killing any would-be **Messiah** (Christ), it would be a sure proof of his imposture. For God Almighty will never allow His truly **“anointed one”** (Christ)²⁶⁷ to be killed – (Deuteronomy 18:20). Hence the insistence of the Jews as a people, as a whole, in rejecting Jesus, the son of Mary, as their promised Messiah – **“The eternal rejection.”**

IMAGINATIVE VERSION

This harrowing sob-story, the blood-curdling cries and lamentations would evoke sympathy in the hardest of hearts. And the hot-gospeller and the Bible-thumper is not averse to its effective exploitation. We are told that Jesus was destined to die for the sins of mankind. That he was “being prepared for this vicarious sacrifice before the foundation of the world”. That even before the material universe came into being, there was a contract between “Father and son,” and that in the year 4000 A.A. (After

267 Messiah, **“Anointed,”** Christos, **“Christ.”**

Adam)²⁶⁸ God himself in the form of Jesus, as the second person from the enigmatic Trinity²⁶⁹, was to get himself hanged to redeem mankind from the Original Sin and their actual sins.

JESUS UNAWARE OF HEAVENLY CONTRACT

From the “call to arms” in the upper-room, and the masterful deployment of forces at Gethsemane, and the blood-sweating prayer to the God of Mercy for help, it appears that Jesus knew nothing about the contract for his crucifixion. It reminds one of the Biblical Abraham, leading his son to the slaughter with the bluff that the Lord will provide a ‘scapegoat.’

AN UNWILLING VICTIM

If this was God’s plan for a vicarious atonement to redeem mankind, then obviously He had chosen a wrong substitute. This candidate was most reluctant to die. Arming! Wailing! Sweating! Crying! Complaining!²⁷⁰ Contrast these responses with those of Lord Nelson, a war hero, who gave up the ghost with these undying words:

“THANK GOD, I HAVE DONE MY DUTY!” There are millions today, who would happily immolate themselves for king and country, with smiles on their faces, with shouts of **“Amandhla!”** or **“Allahu-akbar!”** or **God save the Queen!”** Jesus was an unwilling victim. If this was God’s scheme of salvation, then it was a heartless plot. It was murder in the first degree, and not redeeming self-sacrifice.

Major Yeats-Brown, in his life **“Life of a Bengal Lancer,”** summarises the Christian Doctrine of the Attonement in just a single sentence:

“NO HEATHEN TRIBE HAS CONCEIVED SO GROTESQUE AN IDEA, INVOLVING AS IT DOES THE ASSUMPTION, THAT MAN WAS BORN WITH A HEREDITARY STAIN UPON HIM: AND THAT THIS STAIN (FOR WHICH HE WAS NOT PERSONALLY RESPONSIBLE) WAS TO

268 According to Christian calculations the world and everything in it is 6000 years old.

269 **“Trinity”:** The closest approximation to the Christian dogma of the trinity as found in the Bible – **“For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one”.** (1st Epistle of John 5:7) has now been unceremoniously thrown out as fabrication in the R.S.V. the most up-to-date translation of the Bible.

270 **“Eli, Eli, La’ma sabach’thani?”** ...Why has thou forsaken me?”

BE ATONED FOR: AND THAT THE CREATOR OF ALL THINGS HAD TO SACRIFICE HIS ONLY BEGOTTEN SON TO NEUTRALISE THIS MYSTERIOUS CURSE."

GOOD FOR EXPORT

"No heathen tribe!" proclaims this Britisher. But the mighty nations of the West, live and die by this "FICTION." If it is no longer fit for home consumption, then it is still good for export! More than 62,000 full-time missionaries (Modern-day Crusaders) are raising the dust throughout the world, harassing the "heathen" as they call them. Over 40% of these cultists are **"born-again"** Americans!²⁷¹

Strange as it may sound, after every outpouring of prayer, Jesus Christ found his disciples lulled to sleep at their post. Again and again he bewailed:

JESUS (PBUH) – HIS ORDEAL

***"What could ye not watch
with me for one hour?"***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 26:40

***"And again he (Jesus) went away,
and prayed,
and spoke the same words.
And when he returned,
he found them asleep again..."***

(Holy Bible) Mark 14:39-40

Poor St. Mark bemoans that the disciples could give no excuse for their lassitude, their sleepiness. He records:

271 **"Born-Again:"** The latest cult among the Christians. Billy Graham claims that there are 70 million such cultists in America. Immaculate people, veritable angels! Yet in that nation over a quarter million "gays" gathered in San Francisco last June on a pilgrimage, led by 50 lesbians on motorbikes. In New York, there are **only** one million more women than men and of the "men: it is said that one third are sodomites! Overall there are 10 million **"problem drinkers"** (meaning DRUNKARDS), in the U.S.A. If all this is true with 70 million veritable angels (**"Born-Again"**) in their midst, then it gives a lie to Paul's: **"...a little leaven leaveneth the whole..."** – (1 Corinthians 5:6). Here in the Christian West not even one third yeast can ferment the loaf. Strange!

***“neither knew they
what to answer him,”***

(Holy Bible) Mark 14:40

However, the most lucid, the most coherent and systematic of all Gospel writers, St. Luke, hazards a guess for this sleepy state of his disciples.

He says:

***“And when he (Jesus) rose from prayer,
and was come to his disciple,
he found them sleeping for SORROW.”***

(Holy Bible) Luke 22:45

UNUSUAL REASONING

St. Luke, though he was never one of the elected Twelve disciples of Christ, holds numerous distinctions according to Christians. Among them, the **“most historical,”** the beloved **“physician,”** etc. As a physician, his theory of men **“SLEEPING FOR SORROW”** is unique. Cries and wailings, sobs and sorrows were in abundance from Jerusalem to Gethsemane on the lips of Jesus (PBUH) which would shock and alert to wakefulness any un-ebriated²⁷² person. Why were the “lullabies” of woe, lulling the disciple to slumber? Was their psychological make-up any different from that of twentieth century man? Professors of physiology opine that under shock, stress and fear the adrenal gland secretes a hormone into the bloodstream – nature’s own injection – which chases away all sleep. It is not possible that the disciples of Jesus had eaten **too** much: remembering that food and drink was all **“on the house,”**²⁷³ i.e. FREE!

272 **“Un-ebriated”**: a sober person, not drunk.

273 Note to translators: please do not attempt a literal translation of English idiom and figures of speech.

CHAPTER FIVE

DISCRETION OR VALOUR?

SECOND MISCALCULATION

Jesus had doubly miscalculated:

1. Regarding the enthusiasm demonstrated by the disciples in the upper-room, believing that he would only have to contend with the Jews in a furtive arrest.
2. The Jews were more wily than he had then he had thought. They brought Roman soldiers with them.

The Christian scholars are no less wily in their translations and manipulations of the Bible. They have changed the words **“Roman soldiers”** to simply **“soldiers”** and now from the word soldiers to **“band of men”** and **“the guard”**.

*“Judas then, having received
a **BAND OF MEN**²⁷⁴ and officers
from the priests and Pharisees,
cometh there with lanterns
and touches and weapons.”*

(Holy Bible) John 18:3

²⁷⁴ **“Band of men”**: here and in the verse 12 following the words in the so-called original manuscripts are **speira** and **chiliarchos** respectively. Both Roman military terms meaning **“cohort”** and **“tribune”**. That John is the first Evangelist to mention **Roman soldiers** among the party which went out to arrest our Lord...See Knox's – **“A New Testament Commentary”**, page 260.

CAUGHT NAPPING

The disciples were caught, as the Englishman would say, “with their pants down”.²⁷⁵ Literally they were caught napping. The enemy trod over them roughshod. Only one of the soldiers of Christ had the presence of mind to ask:

***“...Master, shall we smite them
with the sword?”***

(Holy Bible) Luke 22:49

But before Jesus could attempt a reply, the impetuous Peter struck out with his sword and cut off the right ear of one of the enemy. Jesus had not anticipated Roman soldiers. Realising that the tables were turned against his misconceived strategy, he advises his disciples:

***“...Put up again thy sword into its place;
for all they that TAKE THE SWORD
shall PERISH WITH THE SWORD.”***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 26:52

CHANGE OF STRATEGY

Did Jesus not know the truth of this statement when he ordered his disciples to sell their garments and buy SWORDS? He surely did! Then why the contradiction now? There is really no contradiction! The situation changes, so the strategy must also change. He had sense enough to realise that against trained and well-equipped Roman soldiers it would be suicidal for his sleepy warriors to offer even a pretence of resistance.

PRINCE OF PEACE?

Why do not the Christian controversialists give their “Lord and Master” credit for this simple common sense? Because they have been programmed for a period of two thousand years that Jesus the **“lamb,”** the **“prince of peace,”** couldn’t harm a fly. They overlook the other side of his nature which demanded blood and fire! They forgot his instructions to his soldiers regarding those of his enemies who would not like him to rule over them,

275 **“Pants down”**: a figure of speech meaning caught in an unguarded moment; unawares.

to bring them forth:

“...and SLAY²⁷⁶ them before me.”

(Holy Bible) Luke 19:27

***“Think NOT that I am come
to send PEACE on earth;
I came NOT to send PEACE,
but a SWORD.”***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 10:34

***“I am come to send FIRE on earth;
and what will I,
if it be already kindled?
Suppose ye that I come
to give PEACE on earth?
I tell you, NAY;
but rather DIVISION.”***

(Holy Bible) Luke 12:49 & 51

In view of these solemn pronouncements and his repeated vitriolic outbursts against the learned men of his time, if the sword of Peter had prevailed, we would have witnessed a massacre without compunction, equal to that of his ancestor Joshua (meaning **Jehova – Saviour**)²⁷⁷ who utterly destroyed all that was in Jericho:

***“both man and woman, young and old,
and ox, and sheep, and ass,
with the edge of the SWORD.”***

(Holy Bible) Joshua 6:21

And the Gospel writers would not have been slow in putting words into the mouth of Jesus, word for word, as fulfilment of prophecies **VATICINIUM**

276 Means to KILL. Jesus broke the commandment – **“Thou shalt not kill.”** (Exodus 20:13)

277 **Joshua**: a type of Christ, says C.I. Scofield. D.D. in his Bible commentary.

EX EVENTU (prophecies after the event) as recorded²⁷⁸ of his “father” (?) David.

FAILURE, AND TRIAL

The march on Jerusalem had fizzled out. The sabre rattling in the Garden had proved abortive. As there is a reward for success, likewise there is a price for failure. The odds are heavy! Hence the trial, the tribulation, the turmoil and the sweat and blood.

With heavy hands, the Roman soldiers dragged Jesus (PBUH) from Gethsemane to Annas, and from Annas to Caiphas the High Priest, and on to the Sanhedrin as directed by the Jews for trial and execution.

Whilst Jesus was being manhandled and buffeted towards his doom, where were his heroes who were beating their breasts with the war-cry: **“Master, we are prepared to die for you, Master, we are prepared to go to prison for you!”** St. Mark, the first of the Gospel writers unashamedly and without any apology reveals:

“AND THEY ALL FORSOOK HIM, AND FLED.”

(Holy Bible) Mark 14:50

The authors of the 27 books of the New Testament could not find a similar dastardly desertion in the Jewish Bible²⁷⁹ to fulfil prophecy. If there was, they would have been quick to exploit it.

GLOATING OVER DEFEAT

In a debate between Islam and Christianity, on SABC T.V. one of the participants, claiming to be **“reborn,”** gloated over the word DESERTION. He articulated the word with such relish – D-E-S-E-R-T-I-O-N- which must have left a taste of triumph in the mouth of the cultists, instead of the bitterness of shame and defeat. The Bible-thumpers have developed a new sickness of glamourising despicability and ignominy. Everyone, male or female, of these cultists, will not fail to relate their

278 His “father’s” record: **“The conquered Ammonities he treated with even greater ferocity, tearing and hewing some of them in pieces with harrows, axes, and saws; and roasting others in brick-kilns”**. Maitland’s comment on 2 Samuel Chs. 8 to 12 in **“Jewish Literature and Modern Education”** – (page 21).

279 The Old Testament.

peccadillos, their adulteries and bestialities, their drinkings and druggings. It appears that one must have been part of the dregs of humanity to become a candidate for this **“born again”** cult.

Daily News March 25, 1975

“The Winking Corpse”

Daily News Correspondent

MUNICH. Tuesday,

THE UNDERTAKER was about to put the lid on the coffin of 79-year-old Emma Sikorski when the “corpse” winked at him.

Relatives had found Mrs Sikorski apparently dead in bed in her Berlin home. They called a doctor, who pronounced the old lady dead and wrote out a death certificate.

Then they called an undertaker who prepared the body for burial, put it in a coffin and was about to lower the lid when - said the funeral director shakily - “it moved and an eye winked.”

The old lady is now recovering in hospital. “She’s got some colour back in her cheeks and is doing fine,” was the latest report.

Figure 22 Reproduction from Daily News - March 25, 1975

CHAPTER SIX

TRIALS OF JESUS

GONE IN HIS HOUR OF NEED

In the history of the world, there is no parallel of such a contemptible betrayal. From the beginning to the end, Jesus (PBUH) received the most shabby response from his chosen ones. Professor Momerie succinctly sums up the “Disciples” and their response to the Master:

“His immediate disciples were always misunderstanding him and his work: wanting him to call down fire from heaven; wanting him to declare himself king of the Jews; wanting to sit on his right hand and on his left hand in his kingdom; wanting him to show them the Father, to make God visible to their bodily eyes: wanting him to do, and wanting to do themselves, anything and everything that was incompatible with his great plan. This was how they treated him until the end. When that came, they all forsook him, and fled.”

If Muhammad (PBUH) was the **“Most Influential Man in History”** – *Michael H. Hart*;

If Muhammad (PBUH) was the **“Most Successful of all Religious Personalities”** – *Encyclopedia Britannica 11th Ed*;

If Muhammad (PBUH) was the **“Greatest Leader of all Time”** – *Lamartine in his “History of the Turks”*;

THEN IT CAN BE CLAIMED WITH JUSTIFICATION THAT Jesus Christ (PBUH) was the **“Most unfortunate of all God’s Messengers.”**

The disciple of Jesus **always** misunderstood him. His nation, the Jews, **always** misrepresented his utterances, AND his so-called **followers are always** misinterpreting his teachings, even to this day. If Jesus were a Japanese instead of being a Jew, he would most assuredly have committed that honourable “HARA-KIRI” (suicide) rather than endure the fickleness and infidelity of his followers.

PREDETERMINED JUDGEMENT

The fate of Jesus (PBUH) was already sealed. Caiphas the High Priest, at the head of the Sanhedrin (a Religious Board of Jewish Deputies), was a man who could have rescued himself in any civilised court of law, because of his prejudice against the defendant. He had already condemned Jesus to death without any hearing. He had recommended to his Council, even before the case that:-

“...it is expedient for us that one man die for the people, and the whole nation perish not.”

(Holy Bible) John 11:50

Jesus had to be liquidated! There was no question of right or wrong, justice or injustice; it was “EXPEDIENT!” The trial was a farce. By hook or by crook they would have Jesus convicted and done away with. In the middle of the night, what we might call at 2 o’clock in the morning. The Jews had mustered up false witnesses to testify against Jesus. A trial, past midnight was against Jewish practice; but who cares? Despite sympathetic and encouraging prosecutors and jurors, the false witnesses could not tally in their evidences.

It was too much for Jesus. He could not hold his peace. He had to remonstrate. He made a telling plea in his own defence, saying:

***“...I spake openly to the world;
I ever taught in the synagogue,
and in the temple,
where the Jews always gather;
and in secret have I said nothing.”***

(Holy Bible) John 18:20

In essence, he said that he expounded no secret or esoteric doctrines.

He did not teach anything in private which he would not be prepared to proclaim in public. In which case, the Jews would have been able to line up an army of witnesses to testify against him. But what a farce! The Jews could not get even two to agree²⁸⁰ in their allegations! ***“But neither did their witness agree together”*** – (Mark 14:59). His argument was so potent that an officer standing by was provoked to strike him to silence. Did that intimidate Jesus? No! Instead, he protested further:

***“...if I have spoken evil,
bear witness of the evil.
But if well,
why smitest thou me?”***

(Holy Bible) John 18:23

The victim was slipping out from between their fingers. It was now or never. Legally they could not incriminate him. Direct intervention was necessary. The High Priest interjects with a side thrust. Tell us then:

***“...Art thou the Christ,
the son of the Blessed?
And Jesus said, I am...”***

(Holy Bible) Mark 14:61-62

“SON OF GOD” – NO BLASPHEMY

There was nothing blasphemous or treasonable in the simple avowal of Jesus (PBUH). **“Christ”** is the Greek translation of the Hebrew word **“Messiah,”** which meant the ANOINTED ONE or the APPOINTED ONE. Nowhere was the word Christ equated with God. We must divorce this notion from the paganised Christian doctrine of the incarnation, wherein God becomes man. The Jewish expectation of a Messiah, did not identify the Messiah with God. Indeed the nature of Jewish monotheism wholly excludes such pagan connotations. **“Son of God”** is also another harmless expression in Jewish theology. God seems to have sons by the tons

280 It reminds one of the 5000 (so-called original) Greek Manuscripts of the New Testament of which **“NO TWO ARE PERFECT DUPLICATES”**, say the Jehovah’s Witnesses. The “cultists” are now claiming the discovery of a staggering 24 thousand Manuscripts; to which of course the same stricture will apply. See **“Is the Bible God’s Word?”** for further information.

in the Jewish Bible. But if you are looking for trouble, you do not have to go far.

You will find it round the corner. The High Priest was exultant. He felt that his rapier thrust had ripped open the defence of Jesus. To dramatise his contrived victory, he began renting his clothes.

***“What need have we
for any further witnesses?
And they all condemned him
to be guilty of death.”***

(Holy Bible) Mark 14:63-64

GUILTY OR NOT GUILTY – “JESUS MUST DIE!”

The Jews false charged that Jesus had blasphemed, which is treason in the spiritual realm. The Christians are “ONE” with the Jews regarding this “blasphemy” of Jesus, but contend that he was not guilty, because as God, he was entitled to “blaspheme” – it was no blasphemy. Between the two (Jews and Christians) they want poor Jesus to die. One for **“GOOD RIDDANCE”** and the other for **“GOOD REDEMPTION.”**

The verdict was quick and unanimous. It was cut and dried! But without the Roman consent, they could not hang him. In the morning they took their victim to Pontius Pilate, because, as they said:

***“It is not lawful for us (Jews)
to put any man to death.”***

(Holy Bible) John 18:31

PILATE “PASSES THE BUCK”

On discovering that Jesus was a Galilean, the most troublesome of his subjects, Pilate felt it advisable to “pass the buck” to Herod.²⁸¹ You remember, the oldest game in the world. It started in the Garden of Eden according to the Christian Scriptures. But it did not work. After a fruitless attempt to elicit co-operation from Jesus, Herod sends him back to Pilate.

The Jews had condemned Jesus for blasphemy. A man claiming to be

²⁸¹ Luke 23:7.

God, they alleged. This would not hold water before Pilate. He had his man-gods beyond counting. His Jupiter and Pluto, his Vulcan and Eros, his Mars and Neptune, his Apollo and Zeus, to name just a few out of his Pantheon. One more, or one less, would not make any difference to him. This the Jews very well knew. So they changed their charge from blasphemy to treason. They began accusing:

***“...We found this fellow
perverting the nation,
and forbidding to give tribute to Caesar,
saying that he himself is Christ, a king.”***

(Holy Bible) Luke 23:2

SECOND FALSE CHARGE

The charge was absolutely false. Contrary to what they are alleging, he had said, on the subject of taxation:

***“Render unto Caesar
the things that are Caesar’s,
and unto God,
the things that are God’s”***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 22:21

What is subversive about this? Like the Christians,²⁸² the Jews too, before the, had invented a new meaning for the word **“Christ,”** viz. **“A KING!”** So that he could be more easily presented as a challenge to their Roman overlords. Pilate got the message. But this poor man, meek and passive, seemed to be no threat. He did not look like a Zealot, a political agitator, a subversive person, a terrorist!

A MASTERFUL DEFENCE – AND A JUST VERDICT

Incredulously he asks Jesus:

***“... ‘Art thou the King of the Jews?...
Jesus answered him,
‘MY KINGDOM IS NOT OF THIS WORLD,
if my kingdom was of this world,***

282 The Christians equate the word **“Christ”** to **“A GOD!”**

*then would my servants fight,
that I should not be delivered to the Jews;
but now is my kingdom not from hence.”*

(Holy Bible) John 18:33-36

A masterful defence! No Q.C.²⁸³ could have done a better job. As a man of God, he could not disavow his religious status. His was a spiritual kingdom, a ruler to rescue his nation from sin and formalism. This was all nonsense to the Roman Governor. The man may be deluded, mad; but of no danger to the State. He was on no collision course with Rome. Pilate goes to the waiting Jews and delivers an unequivocal verdict –

“...I FIND IN HIM NO FAULT AT ALL!”

(Holy Bible) John 18:38

Though Matthew, Mark, Luke and John are supposed to be writing independent records on the life of Jesus, it is astonishing that the Synoptists²⁸⁴ the first three had never heard the words – **“My kingdom is not of this world”** – at all. If God dictated these words exclusively to Jon, or if he had been informed by some witness, then these words must have escaped the lips of Jesus. A most telling defence against the false allegation of the Jews. How did these words reach any ear, **without Jesus opening his mouth?**

SPEAKING WITH CLOSED MOUTH?

The hot-gospellers are getting hoarse in the throat, singing and shouting, that Jesus was led

*“to the slaughter like a lamb,
like a sheep before her shearers is dumb,
so HE OPENED NOT HIS MOUTH”*

(Holy Bible) Isaiah 53:7

Poor deluded souls, they hymn songs:

283 **Q.C.** means Queen’s Counsellor, previously K.C. (King’s Counsellor). The highest legal representative in English court of law.

284 **Synoptists**: meaning one-eyed; looking from one angle.

***“Hy het sy mond nie
ooggemaak nie!
Hy het sy mond ni
ooggemaak nie!”***

(And he opened not his mouth). Now, an Attorney-at-Law, claiming to be “re-born” has joined the chorus of Bible-thumpers with the same senseless repetition. Let me quote, word for word from his Book, to enable you to diagnose this new sickness of cultism to which even people having undergone a discipline of Law are not immune. He says:

“Isaiah predicts about Jesus Christ:

1. He would **not defend** himself at his trial (Jesus did not): “He opened not his mouth”.

When you meet these cultists in the flesh, please ask them, “Did Jesus speak with his mouth closed?” How did the following utterances which are attributed to Jesus, escape his lips without him opening his mouth –

- (a) Before Pontius Pilate: ***“My kingdom is not of this world”***

(Holy Bible) John 18:36.

- (b) Before the Sanhedrin: ***“If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil, but if well, why smitest thou me”*** –

(Holy Bible) John 18:23.

- (c) Before God in the Garden: ***“O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass away...”***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 26:39.

We Muslims believe in the many, many miracles of Jesus, but we would be reluctant to believe that he dabbled in ventriloquism.²⁸⁵ Again and again, whenever the need arose, during his trials and tribulations, Jesus opened his mouth with telling effect, **“according to the Scriptures.”** But for those who refuse to see or hear, we can only seek solace in the words of the Master:

285 **Ventriloquism:** The art of speaking, or uttering sounds in such a manner that the voice appears to come from some source other than the speaker, like Charlie McCarthy and his doll.

***“...they seeing, see not;
and hearing, they hear not,
neither do they understand.”***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 13:13

THE BLACKMAIL

In the case under discussion, Pilate finds Jesus NOT GUILTY! His implacable enemies blackmail Pilate, saying:

***“...If thou let this man go,
thou art not Caesar’s friend:
whosoever maketh himself a king
speaketh against Caesar.”***

(Holy Bible) John 19:12

While the trial was under way, Pilate’s wife sends him a message:

***“Have thou nothing to do
with that just man (Jesus);
for I have suffered many things this day
in a dream because of him.”***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 27:19

As reluctant as Pilate was to condemn an innocent and harmless subject, and despite the pleadings of his dear wife based on supernatural visions, he could not prevail against the Jewish “lobby!” He was forced to give in to the Jewish clamour of:

***“Crucify him, crucify him!”
“Pilate took water, and washed
his hands before the multitude,
saying, I am innocent
of the blood of this righteous man.”***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 27:24

You (Jews) are culpable for this unjust crime. And he handed Jesus over to be crucified.

CHAPTER SEVEN

METHODS OF CRUCIFIXION

ORIGIN OF CRUCIFIXION

Crucifixion was the common code of eliminating political prisoners, murderers and insurgents. Long before the birth of Jesus, the Phoenicians had experimented with various methods to get rid of their anti-social characters. They had tried hanging, impaling, stoning, drowning, etc. But all these were too quick in their effects; the culprits expired too soon for their liking. So they invented the crucifixion, a system which produced a slow L-I-N-G-E-R-I-N-G death.

TWO METHODS OF CRUCIFIXION

The Romans borrowed and perfected the system. They developed a crucifixion for **fast** death and disposal, and another for a **slow** death and disposal.

The Christian Masters²⁸⁶ are confused in their paintings of the gruesome scene. They portray the two robbers²⁸⁷ who were simultaneously crucified with Jesus, his “crossmates,” one on his right hand and the other on his left hand, as undergoing the FAST method, whereas Jesus himself is painted as undergoing a S-L-O-W process.

The Romans never combined these two different methods. They were

286 Meaning great artists like Michaelangelo, Rembrandt, Leonardo Da Vinci, etc.

287 Mark 15:27 – “**lestes**” in the original. Alternatively translated as “**thieves**” or “**brigandas**” is actually a derogatory term for “**Zealot**”. These “crossmates” of Jesus were not common thieves or crooks. They were the terrorists of their day, heroes of their nation.

never confused, as the Christian artists were, with the fast and the slow methods. The Old Masters have painted hybrid crosses (mixture) of the “fast” and “slow” methods in their drawings of Jesus’ bodily supports on the cross – i.e. with **Sadile** or without **sadile**²⁸⁸; either nails or leather thongs to bind the arms to the crossbar; and, either platforms to support the feet, or spikes.

“THE GOSPEL UNTRUTH”

Contrary to common belief, Jesus was not nailed to the cross, but bound, if at all, like the other two. In the light of the knowledge available, we must regard the “Doubting Thomas” episode as a flagrant “gospel fabrication”, similar to the story of the woman caught in the act of adultery. See Figure 23 on page 404 for a reproduction of the Bible page and note that John, Chapter 8, begins with verse 12. Can you imagine any chapter in any religious Book beginning with verse **12** as the **first verse**? Verses 1 to 11 are expunged as a fabrication by the 32 Christian Scholars of the highest eminence, backed by 50 co-operating denominations in their “Most up-to-date Version of the Bible” – the **R.S.V.**²⁸⁹

THEIR HURRY A BLESSING IN DISGUISE

The Jews were in extreme haste to have Jesus done away with. Remember the midnight trial? Early in the morning, they dragged him to Pilate. From Pilate to Herod. From Herod back to Pilate. According to a boisterous American (another “**born-again**”) there were “**SIX**” trial within twelve hours. At the busiest time in Jerusalem, around the Feast of the Passover, it appears from the Gospel narratives that people of worth had nothing else to do but twiddle their thumbs in great expectation of interviewing Jesus. Exactly as things happen on the “set”, for the shooting of films. Hurry! hurry! hurry!

According to the Gospel writers, the Jews and the Romans managed to have Jesus on the cross by the 6th hour, that is by 12 noon; and by the 9th

288 **Sadile**: obviously a SADDLE, or “horn” which was fitted in the middle of the upright piece of the cross, so that it projected between victim’s legs at the crotch to support his body-weight, but for aesthetic reasons the Christian fathers have eliminated the “horn” from the cross. See Figure 24 on page 405

289 **R.S.V.** stands for Revised Standard Version, first published in 1952. The translators claimed to have had access to the “**Most Ancient Manuscripts**” from which they learnt that the story about the adulteress was a fabrication.

THIS PAGE IS REPRODUCED FROM THE R.S.V. 1952

JOHN 7

mus, who had gone to him before, and who was one of them, said to them, ⁵¹ "Does our law judge a man without first giving him a hearing and learning what he does?" ⁵² They replied, "Are you from Galilee too? Search and you will see that no prophet is to rise from Galilee."

8 ¹² Again Jesus spoke to them, saying, "I am the light of the world; he who follows me will not walk in darkness, but will have the light of life." ¹³ The Pharisees then said to him, "You are bearing witness to yourself; your testimony is not true." ¹⁴ Jesus answered, "Even if I do bear witness to myself, my testimony is true, for I know whence I have come and whither I am going, but you do not know whence I come or whither I am going. ¹⁵ You

96

"Truth will make you free"

of this world. ²⁴ I told you that you would die in your sins, for you will die in your sins unless you believe that I am he." ²⁵ They said to him, "Who are you?" Jesus said to them, "Even what I have told you from the beginning." ²⁶ I have much to say about you and much to judge; but he who sent me is true, and I declare to the world what I have heard from him." ²⁷ They did not understand that he spoke to them of the Father. ²⁸ So Jesus said, "When you have lifted up the Son of man, then you will know that I am he, and that I do nothing on my own authority but speak thus as the Father taught me. ²⁹ And he who sent me is with me; he has not left me alone, for I always do what is pleasing to him." ³⁰ As he spoke thus, many believed in him.

8 ³ They went each to his own house, ¹ but Jesus went to the Mount of Olives. ² Early in the morning he came again to the temple, all the people came to him and he sat down and taught them. ³ The scribes and the Pharisees caught him talking to the Jews and saying to them, "Why do you break the Sabbath?" ⁴ He answered them, "My Father is always at work to this present hour, and I also work." ⁵ They said to him, "What do you mean by saying, 'My Father is always at work to this present hour,' and you say, 'I also work'?" ⁶ He answered them, "Truly, truly, I say to you, the Father is always at work to this present hour, and I also work. ⁷ For as the Father raises the dead and gives them life, so also the Son gives life to whom he will. ⁸ For the Father loves the Son, and shows him all that he himself does, and will do, so that the Son may do just what he sees the Father doing. ⁹ And the Father who sends the Son, and who testifies of him, says, 'I have not heard of him, but I have seen him.' ¹⁰ And once more he bent down and wrote with his finger on the ground. ¹¹ But when they heard it, they went away. ¹² They had remained with him about an hour, and Jesus was left alone with the Jews standing about him. ¹³ Jesus looked up and said to her, "Woman, where are they? Has no one condemned you?" ¹⁴ She said, "No one, Lord." ¹⁵ And Jesus said, "Neither do I condemn you; go, and do not sin again."

THIS IS A FOOTNOTE, REPRODUCED AS IS FROM THE BIBLE

Figure 23 Reproduction of John:7 from The R.S.V 1952

hour²⁹⁰, that is, by 3 o'clock he had given up the ghost – he had died (?). Strange people, these Jews! As much as they were in a hurry to mount Jesus on the cross, no sooner had they succeeded, they were once more agitated to bring him down. Can you imagine why? Their religious scruples – the Sabbath! They were warned in the "fifth Book of Moses":

***His body (any crucified person)
shall not remain all night upon the tree,
but thou shalt in any wise
bury him that day,
(for he that is hanged is accursed of God),
that thy land be not defiled,
which the Lord thy God giveth thee***

290 Matthew 27:46.

for an inheritance.”

(Holy Bible) Deuteronomy 21:23

To appease the religious scruples of the Jews (or for any other reason) if it becomes necessary to expedite death on the cross, the executioners resorted to the **“cruri-fragium,”** a club-like horror with which the legs were broken. The victim expired by suffocation within the hour. This was the **fast** method.

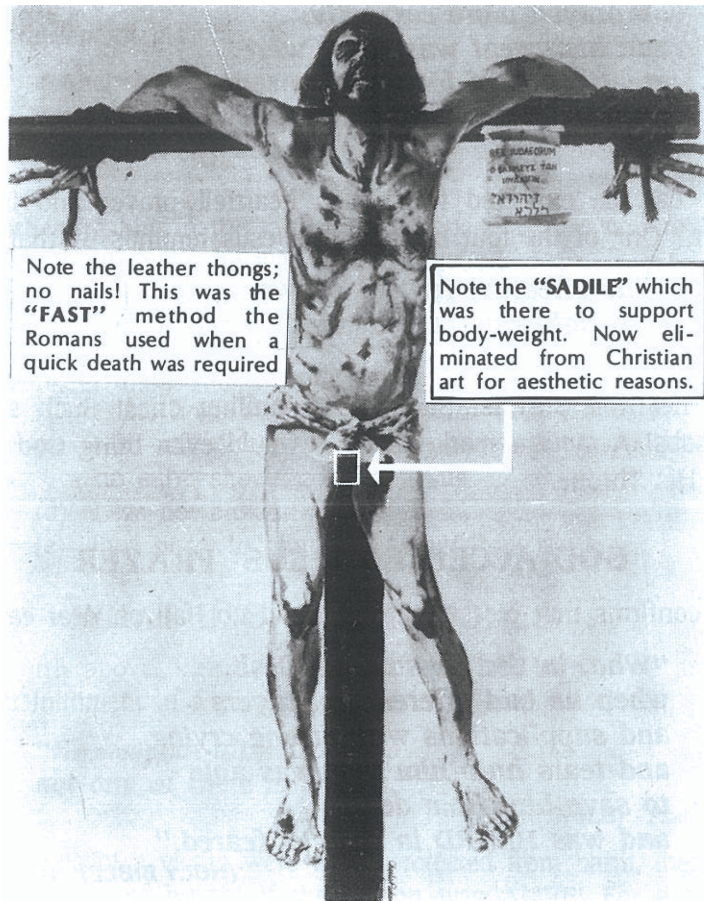


Figure 24 Drawing of the “Execution” of Jesus by Charles Pickard

This drawing is an attempt at a more accurate representation of the “execution” of Jesus. To check his ideas, the artist, Charles Pickard, actually manoeuvred himself into this position.

CHAPTER EIGHT

GOD'S WAYS ARE NOT OUR WAYS

Was the prayer of Jesus (PBUH) being answered? He had cried to the loving Father in heaven for help, with strong crying and tears:

***“And being in an agony,
he prayed more earnestly;
and his swear was, as it were,
great drops of blood
falling down to the ground.”***

(Holy Bible) Luke 22:44

What can be expected from such heartfelt prayer and importuning? One of the four brothers²⁹¹ of Jesus reminds us that:

***“The effectual fervent prayer
of a righteous man availeth much.”***

(Holy Bible) James 5:16

Such heartfelt prayers! Such blood-curdling cries! Such sorrow and sobs! A cynic remarked that it would even bring God down from His Throne.²⁹²

GOD ACCEPTED JESUS' PRAYER

Paul confirms that his supplications did not fall on deaf ears:

291 The Christians give brothers and sisters to Jesus, through a union of Mary with Joseph the Carpenter. (*Matthew 13:55-56*).

292 God Almighty does not go up or down. He is Omnipresent, All-Pervading, Present everywhere!

***“Who, in the days of his flesh,
when he had offered up prayers
and supplications with strong crying
and tears unto him that was able
to save him from death,
and was HEARD in that he feared.”***

(Holy Bible) Hebrews 5:7

What does it mean **“God heard”** his prayers! It means that God **accepted** his prayers. God Almighty is not deaf at any time. He is the All-Hearing God. He heard (accepted) the supplication of Jesus in the same way that He had heard (accepted) the prayer of father Abraham. Abraham, in his old age had prayed for a son, and Ishmael was born. The words of Abraham had become flesh. ‘Ishmael’ literally means ‘GOD HEARD’ in Hebrew. Zakariah also in his old age prayed for a son, and God heard (accepted) his prayers:

***“And there appeared an angel
unto him from heaven,
strengthening him.”***

(Holy Bible) Luke 22:43

Strengthening him in the faith, in the hope that God will save him. This is actually what he was beseeching God to do for him. When and how rests alone in the Hands of God. His ways are not our ways. Count the blessings so far:

- (a) An assurance from Heaven.
- (b) Pilate finds him not guilty!
- (c) His wife shown a dream in which she is told that
- (d) no harm should come to Jesus.
- (e) Legs not broken!
- (f) In a hurry to bring him down from the cross.

WHAT USE – “THE BONES”...

The fourth above: **“and they brake not his legs”**, we are told was in fulfilment of a prophecy:

***“He keepeth all his bones,
not one of them is broken.”***

(Holy Bible) Psalm 34:20

If the bones of a victim were to be protected from harm, then they could only be of benefit if the person was **ALIVE!** For a person, already dead, intact bones means nothing whether they are sawed into pieces, or smashed into smithereens, it will not make any difference to the resurrected body, the spirit or the ghost. But for living persons or the cross (like the “crossmates” of Jesus), the breaking of the legs made all the difference between life and death. The pagan Romans were not hell-bound to fulfil any prophecy. Their reason was that they

***“SAW that he was dead already,
they brake not his legs.”***

(Holy Bible) John 19:33

“SAW” is a very simple word. We may yet ask, what did they see? Could it be the fulfilment of the words of Christ: ***“seeing, ye shall see and shall not perceive”*** – (*Matthew 13:14*). When John says that the soldiers “saw”, he means that they surmised. For no modern-day stethoscope was used to verify death; nor did anyone touch his body or feel his pulse before concluding that ***“he was already dead.”*** I see in the word “saw” another step in God’s plan of rescue.

WEEKEND
WORLD
SUNDAY AUGUST 3 1969

CRUCIFIED

This man is not being **CRUCIFIED** as the newspaper proclaimed but is being **CRUCI-FICTED!**¹

Mr. Pieter van der Bergh is lowered to the ground after hanging on a cross for 20 minutes. Mr. van der Bergh, a barman from Newcastle, **Natal**, allowed himself to be nailed to the cross last week to prove "that man is master over his body."



Figure 25 Reproduction from Weekend World - August 3, 1969

CHAPTER NINE

"RESURRECTIONS, DAILY!"

STRANGER THAN FICTION

With all the advancement in the medical field since Christ; with all the modern, scientific instruments at our disposal; hundreds of people are being certified "dead" everyday all over the world. Whilst busy writing this, my attention is being drawn to the near murder of a Mr. Barnabas who was being carried to the mortuary after being "declared clinically dead" not by inexperienced ancient Roman soldiers, but by highly-qualified medical men. The news item is reproduced on the side, as it is, as a New Year '84 shock!²⁹³ This, with another shocker from Ripley's "BELIEVE IT OR NOT!" is also reproduced on Figure 31 on page 459, with a suggestion that some young journalist keep his eye open for people who have come back from the "dead", and write an anthology, which may become a best-seller. Here is a list for a start. What would you say?

RESURRECTED OR RESUSCITATED?

1. LITTLE GIRL WHO "DIED" TELLS HOW SHE CAME BACK TO LIFE (After 4 Days) –
(**"Daily News"** 15/11/55).
2. MAN DIED FOR TWO HOURS: STILL LIVES – "Miracle" amazes doctors –
(**"Sunday Tribune"** 27/3/60).
3. HE DIED FOR 4 MINUTES – Man's heart stops but he lives on –

²⁹³ See Figure 31 on page 459.

- (“**Sunday Express**” 23/7/61).
4. HE DOES NOT KNOW THAT HE DIED FOR 90 SECONDS –
 style="text-align: right;">(“**Cape Argus**” 16/3/61).
 5. DR. HITGE RETURNED FROM THE DEAD –
 style="text-align: right;">(“**Cape Argus**” 4/5/61).
 6. THE COFFIN MOVED – Young man narrowly escaped being buried alive –
 style="text-align: right;">(“**Sunday Tribune**” 13/5/62).
 7. BACK FROM THE DEAD – After being thought dead for 2 days –
 style="text-align: right;">(“**Post**” 25/7/65).
 8. “CORPSE” WINKS AT UNDERTAKER – Doctor wrote out a death certificate –
 style="text-align: right;">(“**Daily News**” 23/5/75).
 9. “CLINICALLY DEAD” – Toddler alive after hour-long revival battle –
 style="text-align: right;">(“**Natal Mercury**” 5/12/82).
 10. WAS HE DEAD OR ALIVE? – The dilemma facing transplant doctors –
 style="text-align: right;">(“**Sunday Tribune**” 17/7/83).
 11. SHAKEN AND STIRRED – Declared clinically dead “from too much Christmas liquor” –
 style="text-align: right;">(“**Daily News**” 3/1/84).

This sombre list would be incomplete without the picture of an exclusive club, the only qualification of whose membership is – TO HAVE DIED AND LIVED AGAIN! If everything happened to Jesus “**according to the Scriptures,**” them, he could easily become its doyen (Senior member of a body).



THIS picture is an undertaker's nightmare. It shows the first seven members of the most exclusive club in the world -- motto: "It's Good to be Alive"—at a luncheon at London's Savoy Hotel.

Qualification for membership: To have died and lived again.

From the left are: Mr. Percy Hopcroft, Mrs. Dorothy Dickens, Timothy Poole, Mrs. Barbara Poole, Mr. Desmond Whila, Mrs. Kathleen Holder and Mrs. Molly Barnes.

Mr. Hopcroft died 30 years ago in hospital, was brought back again by artificial respiration. Mrs. Dickens, mother of seven, died twice on the same day—Friday the 13th—during an operation. The first death lasted two-and-a-half minutes. The surgeon made an incision above her heart, revived her by massage. Just when

he had sewed her up her heart stopped again for four minutes.

Timothy Poole is the nine-year-old son of Mrs. Barbara Poole, whose heart stopped for two minutes when Timothy was born. And it took a doctor 30 minutes to bring Timothy to life. Desmond Whila, 22-year-old conscript serving in Germany, died for four minutes last December. Mrs. Kathleen Holder (39) died for six minutes 15 years ago. Mrs. Molly Barnes (41), died two years ago during a mastoid operation.

CHAPTER TEN

SYMPATHY FOR JESUS

God works in a mysterious way. He inspires the soldiers to think that the victim is **“dead already”** so as not to break his legs, but at the same time inspires another to lance him on the side²⁹⁴ with a spear, and...

“...FORTHWITH came there out blood and water.”

(Holy Bible) John 19:34

It is a Blessing of God that when the human body cannot endure further pain or agony, unconsciousness supervenes. But immobility, fatigue and the unnatural stance on the cross²⁹⁵ must have slowed down the blood circulation. The lancing came to the rescue. By “blood-letting”, the circulation could regain its rhythm. We are assured in the Encyclopedia Biblica, under the article **“cross,”** column 960, that **“Jesus was alive when the spear was thrust.”** This also confirms the statement of John that the flow of **“water and blood”** was instantaneous. In his own word he says: **“FORTHWITH”** – straightaway, immediately, which was a sure sign Jesus was ALIVE!

But why the **“Water and the Blood?”** Dr. W. B. Primrose, a senior anesthetist of the Glasgow Royal Infirmary, gave his expert opinion. In the **“Thinkers Digest,”** London, winter 1949 issue, he said that **“THE WATER WAS A RESULT OF THE NERVOUS UPSET OF THE BLOOD VESSELS LOCALLY DUE TO THE OVER STIMULATING EFFECT OF**

²⁹⁴ The “side” of his body and not the front.

²⁹⁵ See Figure 33 on page 465 for illustration from “A Campus Crusade” publication where a **“born-again”** cultist after 1000 hours study of the cruci-FICTION is inspired to draw their caricature of Jesus.

THE SCOURGING BY STAVES.” This may be an extreme case, but so was his sweating, like **“great drops of blood, falling down to the ground,”** when Jesus was in agony in the Garden of Gethsemane, Medical authorities also confirm the latter phenomenon.

EVANGELISTS DIFFER

The Gospel writers are not unanimous regarding the time when Jesus was hoisted unto the cross. But John tells us that Jesus (PBUH) was still before Pilate in the praetorium at 12 noon: **“...and about the sixth hour** (Hebrew time), **he saith unto the Jews, Behold, your King!”** – (*John 19:14*). And after much wrangling he was handed over for crucifixion. Imagine the disorderly mob, the heavy cross which Jesus himself is supposed to have been loaded with. The long climb to Golgotha could never have been accomplished in minutes. And the saddling, the tying and the lifting must have taken some time. On TV shots, they can do it all in 30 seconds! But we know that in real life it does not happen that fast. The author of John’s Gospel failed to record the time when **“Jesus gave up the ghost”** (*John 19:30*), but the synoptists seem to be agreed that it was around the **“ninth hour,”** meaning 3 p.m.

Dean Farrar, in his **“Life of Christ,”** says on page 421, that **“JESUS WAS ON THE CROSS FOR ONLY THREE HOURS WHEN TAKEN DOWN.”**

PONTIUS PILATE MARVELS

We are told in the Gospels, in varying terms, that between the **“sixth”** and the **“ninth”** hours, there was THUNDER, an ECLIPSE, and an EARTHQUAKE! – Without purpose? No, to disperse the sadistic mob after their enjoyment of a Roman holiday. To enable the hands of mercy, his **“secret”** and faithful disciples, to come to his succour.

Joseph of Arimathea together with a sympathetic Roman centurion who had declared: **“Truly this man was the Son of God”** (*Mark 15:39*), went to Pilate to claim the body of Jesus, and:

***“Pilate marvelled
if he were already dead,
and calling unto him the centurion,
he asked him whether***

he had been any while dead.”

(Holy Bible) Mark 15:44

What was the reason for Pilate’s amazement? Why did he marvel? He knew from experience that normally no man would die within 3 hours on the cross, unless the **“crurifragium”** was resorted to, which was not done in the case of Jesus; unlike in that of his “crossmates”, who were given the treatment **because they were still ALIVE!**

REASON FOR MARVELLING

It stands to reason, that if a man faces a firing squad, and shots are fired into his body, and he dies, there would be nothing to “marvel” about. If a person is taken to the gallows and is hanged, and he dies, there is nothing to “marvel” about. But should they survive, after our common knowledge expects them to die, then there is much to MARVEL about. Conversely, Pilate expects that Jesus should be ALIVE on the cross, and not dead as he is being told, therefore his marvelling is only but natural. He had no special reason for verifying whether Jesus was dead or alive. If he was ALIVE – so what? Had he not found Jesus innocent of the charges levelled against him by the Jews? Did his wife not warn him against doing any harm to **“that just man”**? So if Jesus was alive, – Good Luck to him. Pilate grants permission for Joseph to have the body.

SO HE HAD “SECRET” DISCIPLES

The so-called disciple of Jesus, whom he called **“my mother and brethren!”**²⁹⁶ (in preference to his own mother and his uterine brothers and sisters), were nowhere in sight when he was most in need. His “secret” disciples, Joseph of Arimathe’a and Nicodemus, would never have been heard of had it not been for Jesus’ ordeal. And they were the only persons to handle the body of Jesus, with Mary Magdalene and the other Mary(s)²⁹⁷ as the only spectators.

To satisfy the religious scruples of the Jews – the burial bath, the anointing and the shrouding – would well-nigh have taken more than two hours. If there were any signs of life in the limp of body, no one was foolish

²⁹⁶ Matthew 12:49

²⁹⁷ Mark 15:47

enough to shout to the retreating curiosity mongers” “He is ALIVE! He is ALIVE!” They knew that the Jews would then make doubly sure that life was snuffed out.

CHAPTER ELEVEN

WHY THE INVERTED COMMAS "..."?

JEWS SUSPICIOUS AND UNEASY

We must not suppose that Jesus was buried 6 feet underground. The sepulchre was a big, airy chamber and not a grave. Jim Bishop (a Christian authority of note), in his book **"The Day Christ Died,"** gives the dimensions as 5 feet wide by 7 feet high by 15 feet deep, with a ledge or ledges inside, which any "pondokkie" dweller in our slums would have been happy to own as his residence. The Jews were suspicious. It was all very "fishy".

- (a) The tomb within easy reach.
- (b) Helping hands of his "secret" disciples.
- (c) His "crossmates" still alive.
- (d) His legs not broken, whereas those of his "crossmates" were!
- (e) Quick and easy permission granted by Pilate to obtain the body of Jesus.

For these and many more reasons, the Jews were suspicious. They felt that they had been cheated. Jesus was ALIVE! (?) So they ran to Pilate. But they had missed the bus again! They were 24 hours too late!

JEWISH ERRORS

***"Now the NEXT day...the chief priests
and Pharisees came together unto Pilate,
Saying, Sir, we remember that deceiver said...
Command, therefore, that the sepulchre***

*be made sure until the third day, lest...
the LAST error shall be worse than the FIRST (error)."*

(Holy Bible) Matthew 27: 62-64

The Jews are talking about **"first"** and **"last"**, not realising that in all their nervous haste they had made another slip. They had gone to Pilate only the NEXT day. They wanted to close the stable door after the horse had bolted. Pilate was not interested in their childish plots. He had had enough of them. So he says to them:

*"...Ye have a watch:²⁹⁸ go your way,
make it as sure as ye can."*

(Holy Bible) Matthew 27:65

He was not going to pander to their whim. He had more than enough reasons to hate them.

CULTISTS' MANIA

What the Jews did or did not do after Pilate's curt reply is immaterial. They had already lost a day! But the Christian cultists clutching at straws, transform the Jewish temple **"guard"** to soldiers, and make these **"soldiers"** into **"Roman"** soldiers. Then they fill pages expounding the efficiency of the Roman military machine, that it can never be caught napping or caught off-guard! And the dire consequences in store for any that slipped. Did all this make the Roman soldier impeccable, faultless (?). By the time the unwary and weary reader wades through the profuse, irrelevant details, he is ready to swallow everything hook, line and sinker uncritically. It is a deception they have developed as an art!

What was the FIRST **"error"** that the Jews made in wanting to eliminate Jesus? The first was that they had permitted Jesus to be brought down from the cross without breaking his legs, under the false assumption that he had died. The LAST would be to allow the "secret" disciples of Jesus

298 From the word **"watch"** in the King James Version of the Bible and **"guard"** of the Roman Catholic Version: the 32 Christian scholars of the R.S.V. have now interpolated the words **"of soldiers"** after the word **"GUARD"**, reading **"guard of soldiers"**. There is no end to Christian theological ingenuity! Further see page 184 again; the revisers have re-revised the R.S.V. and have re-inserted the spicy verses about the woman **"caught in the act"**, once more into their 1971 version.

to render help to the wounded man, by NOT sealing off the tomb. But in the meantime, they made another mistake by approaching Pilate the “**NEXT**” day which was **TOO LATE!** God works in a mysterious way. His Ways are not our ways. He says:

وَمَكَرُوا وَمَكَرَ اللَّهُ وَاللَّهُ خَيْرُ الْمَكِرِينَ

And the disbelievers planned, but Allah planned. And Allah is the best of planners.

Surah Ali 'Imran (Holy Qur'an 3:54)

SUNDAY MORNING

It was Sunday morning, the **FIRST** day of the week, according to Hebrew calculations, with Saturday the **Sabbath** as the seventh, when Mary Magdalene **alone** (Mark 16:9 and John 20:1) visited the tomb of Jesus.

The question arises: “why did she go there?” “**TO ANOINT HIM,**” Mark 16:1 tells us. The Hebrew word for anoint is “**masaha,**” which means to rub, to massage, to anoint. The second question is: “Do Jews massage dead bodies after 3 days?” The answer is “**No!**” “Do the Christians massage dead bodies after 3 days?” The answer again is, “**No!**” Do the Muslims (who are the nearest to the Jews in the ceremonial laws) massage dead bodies after 3 days? And the answer again is, “**No!**” then why should a Jewess want to massage a dead, decaying body after 3 days? We know that within 3 hours **rigor mortis** sets in – the stiffening of the body after death. In 3 days’ time, the body would be fermenting from within – the body cells would be breaking up and decomposing. If anyone rubs such a decaying body, it will fall to pieces. Does the rubbing make sense? **No!**

It would, however, make sense if she was looking for a **LIVE** person. You see, she was about the only person besides Joseph of Arimathe’a and Nicodemus who had given the final rites to the body of Jesus. If she had seen any sign of life in the limp body of Jesus when he was taken down from the cross, she was not going to shout, “**HE IS ALIVE!**” She returns after 2 nights and a day, when the Jewish Sabbath has passed, to take care of Jesus.

STONE REMOVED – WINDING SHEETS UNWOUND

She was sorely amazed to find on arrival, that somebody had already removed the stone and, on peeping into the tomb, she finds that the winding sheets (shroud) were folded up inside. More questions arise? “Why was the stone removed?” Because for a resurrected body, one which had conquered death, it was not necessary for the stone to be removed for it to get out, nor was it necessary for the winding sheets to be unwound for it to move. Because, for a spiritualised body: “STONE WALLS DO NOT A PRISON MAKE, NOR IRON BARS A CAGE.”

The removal of the stone and the unwinding of the winding sheets was the need of a **physically resuscitated body**, not that of a resurrected body! The empty tomb was an anticlimax to what she had expected! So the hysterical woman (Jesus had had to cast out of her “*seven devils*” – *Mark 16:9*) breaks down and sobs, Jesus was all the while watching her from the vicinity – not from heaven, but from earth.

This burial vault (tomb) was a privately owned property belonging to Joseph of Arimathea (a very rich, influential Jew), who could afford to carve out of rock the big roomy chamber.²⁹⁹ Around this tomb was his vegetable garden. Please do not try to tell me that this Jew was so generous that he was planting vegetable 5 miles out of town, for other people’s goats and sheep to graze upon. Surely, he must also have built gardeners’ quarters for his labourers and his own country home for himself and his family to relax during the weekends?

A PRACTICAL JOKE

Jesus is there! He is watching this woman. He knows who she is, and he knows why she is there. He approaches her from behind, and finds her crying. So he asks her:

***“Woman, why weepest thou?
Whom seekest thou?”***

(Holy Bible) John 20:15

Before she replies, allow me to interject: “Why does he ask what appears to be silly questions? Doesn’t he know the obvious reasons? Of course he does! Then why the silly questions?”

²⁹⁹ Dimensions already given on page 418.

The answer is that in reality they are not silly questions, though they appear to be so. He knows that this woman is looking for him, and she is disappointed at not finding him; hence the weeping. But he also knows that because of his heavy disguise she would not be able to recognise him. So metaphorically speaking, he is pulling her leg. In describing this incident, John, referring to Mary Magdalene, says:

***“She supposing him
to be the gardener,
saith unto him.”***

(Holy Bible) John 20:15

Now why should she suppose that he is a **gardener**? Do resurrected persons look like “gardeners”? No!! Then why does she suppose him to be a gardener? Because he is **afraid** of the Jews! Why is he afraid of the Jews? Because he did **not die** and did **not conquer death**! If he had died, and if he had conquered death, then he would not be afraid anymore. Why not? Because a resurrected body cannot die twice! Who says so? The Bible says so. Where? In the Book of Hebrews 9:27. It says:

***“...it is ordained
unto all men ONCE to die,
and after that the judgement.”***

BACK FROM THE DEAD

But what about the hundreds of people who have come back from the “dead”? We read about them daily in our newspapers. Those persons who were certified dead by medical men, and who subsequently came back to life; were not really DEAD, in the sense of DEATH AND RESURRECTION. Our doctors have erred and will continue to make mistakes; it cannot be helped. But I want you to note the word **“dead”** on Figure 28 on page 440, and **“Corpse”** Figure 22 on page 393 and **“crucifixion”** on Figure 32 on page 463. All these words are in inverted commas. The honest and alert newspaper reporter in each case is telling us, very subtly, that the “DEAD” was not really dead. That the “CORPSE” was not really a corpse, and that the “CRUCIFIXIONS” were not really crucifixion but cruci-**fiction**s! They were SO-CALLED dead, the SO-CALLED corpses, the SO-CALLED crucifixions, etc. But from the newspaper circulation point of view, the word “SO-CALLED” would greatly diminish the

sensationalism, lessen the news value, and reduce possible sales. After all business is business! Hence the inverted commas "...". In reality, **no** man ever died twice, no matter how many death certificates are issued.

THE DRAMA CONTINUES

Mary supposing the disguised Jesus to be a gardener, says unto him:

***"Sir, if you have taken HIM hence,
tell me where have you laid HIM..."***

(Holy Bible) John 20:15

She is not looking for a corpse, for **"it"**. She is looking for a LIVE person, for **"HIM"**. And further she wants to know as to "where have you **'LAID'** him?" (i.e. To rest, to relax, to recuperate!) **NOT**, "where have you **BURIED** him?"

"So that I might take HIM away."

(Holy Bible) John 20:15

Take **HIM** away, where? What could she want with a dead (?), decomposing body? She could only bury it. Who dug the grave? Carrying a corpse is one thing for an American Super woman, but another for this frail Jewess; carrying a corpse of at least a hundred and sixty pounds. That weight plus another 100 pounds of medicaments (*according to John 19:39*) would not make a neat load of 260 pounds. Carrying would be one thing, but burying? She would have to dump it in a hole! Does it make any sense?

The prank that Jesus was playing upon this woman had gone too far. The woman had not been able to see through the disguise yet and Jesus was "laughing under his breath," but could restrain himself no longer. He blurts out: **"M-A-R-Y!"** Only the one word! But it was enough. This one word, **"Mary!"** did what all the exchange of words failed to do. It enables Mary to recognise her Master. Everyone has his or her unique and peculiar way of calling one's nearest and dearest. It was not the mere utterance of the word "Mary", but its deliberate intonation which made her respond "Master! Master!" Mad with happiness, she lunges forward to grab her Master, to pay reverence. Jesus says,

“Touch me not!”

(Holy Bible) John 21:17

SOBERING QUESTIONS

Why not? Is he a bundle of electricity, a dynamo, that if she touches him, she might get electrocuted? No! **“Touch me not!”**, because it would hurt. Though he appears normal to all intents and purposes, he had, nevertheless, been through a violent physical and emotional ordeal. It would be excruciatingly painful if he allowed her any enthusiastic contact. Jesus continues:

***“For I am not yet ASCENDED
unto my Father”***

(Holy Bible) John 20:17

She is not blind. She can see the man standing there before her. What does he mean by **“not yet ascended?”** – GONE UP – when he was **DOWN** right there? He is, in fact, telling her that he is **not** RESURRECTED from the DEAD. In the language of the Jew, in the idiom of the Jew, he is saying: **“I AM ALIVE!”**

***“And they (the disciples),
when they heard that he was ALIVE,
and had been seen by her
(Mary Magdalene), they BELIEVED NOT.”***

(Holy Bible) Mark 16:11

CHAPTER TWELVE

DISCIPLES DISBELIEVED

JOURNEY TO EMMAUS

That very day, on the way to Emmaus, Jesus joins two of his disciples and discourses with them for 5 miles without being recognised by them! What a perfect masquerade! On reaching their destination, the disciples persuade the Master to join them for a meal.

***“And it came to pass,
as he sat **EATING** with them,
he took bread and blessed it,
and broke it,
and gave it to them.”***

(Holy Bible) Luke 24:30

By the manner in which he broke bread (meaning the way he blessed it), **“their eyes were opened.”** Did they walk from Jerusalem to Emmaus with closed eyes? No! We are being told that the disciples recognised him only at that juncture. Luke continues with his story, that when they recognised him, **“he vanished out of sight.”** Did he do the Indian “Rope Trick?” Please don’t be ridiculous! What it means is that he went away. He went out of their sight.

INCREDIBLE SCEPTICISM

Full of excitement, the two disciples rushed up to that upper room, where the other disciples were:

“And they went and told it

*unto the residue (of the disciples),
NEITHER BELIEVED they them.”*

(Holy Bible) Mark 16:13

What is wrong with these disciples of Jesus? Why are they reluctant to believe? What is their difficulty? The problem is that they are confronted with evidence that Jesus is **ALIVE! Not resurrected** (i.e. not spiritualised), but evidence that he is the same **physical** Jesus, **flesh and bones** as any one of them! Eating food! In disguise – but not a spirit and not a ghost. This is what they could not believe. If they were told that Mary had seen the ghost of Jesus, they would have believed. If the above two had told the rest that they too had seen the ghost of Jesus, they would certainly have believed that. They were a people who had seen spirits going into pigs and stampeding two thousand of them to destruction – (*Mark 5:13*). They had seen spirits going into trees and drying them up from their very roots overnight – (*Mark 11:20*). They had seen “**seven devils**” coming out of Mary Magdalene – (*Mark 16:9*). All this was quite natural to their age. Spirits, ghosts and devils! They could accept that which was believable at that time and age. But a **LIVE** Jesus? A physical Jesus? One who had escaped the **stings of death** – (*Acts 2:24*)? This was too heavy for their “**little faith**” – (*Matthew 6:30, 8:26, 14:31, 16:8; and Luke 12:28*).

- (a) Mary Magdalene testifies that Jesus is **ALIVE!**³⁰⁰
- (b) The disciples from Emmaus testify that he is **ALIVE!**
- (c) Angels said that Jesus was **ALIVE!** (*Luke 24:23*).
- (d) Two men that stood by told the women “why seek ye the **living** among the dead?” That he is **ALIVE!** (*Luke 24:4-5*).

Yet they will not believe! Let us see whether they will believe the words of their own “Lord and Master”, in the following chapter.

300 **ALIVE:** Here as well as in every other place where this word “**alive**” occurs, it has been faithfully reproduced from the Christian Scriptures, and it is not any interpretation of mine. If these verse were inspired by God, then, it seems that the poor “Holy Ghost” did not have the word “**RESURRECTED**” in its vocabulary!

CHAPTER THIRTEEN

JESUS NO PHANTOM

ARITHMETICAL CONUNDRUM

The two from Emmaus,

***“rose...and returned to Jerusalem,
and found the ELEVEN
gathered together,
and those who were with them***

(Holy Bible) Luke 24:33

Which **“eleven”**? They **“found** the eleven.” Did they include themselves in the number they FOUND? Even then the disciples these (of the elected twelve of Jesus) could never be more than 10 altogether. Because on this first visit of Jesus to that upper room, Judas and Thomas were definitely not present. But Luke was not an eyewitness to this scene. He is simply copying verbatim from *Mark 16:14* who said, **“he** (Jesus) **appeared unto the ELEVEN as they sat eating.”**

Now listen to Paul, the thirteenth self-appointed apostle of Jesus. He says that after three days of hibernation, **“(Jesus) was seen of Cephas** (meaning Simon Peter), **then to the TWELVE”** – (*1 Corinthians 15:5*). Which **“twelve?”** The word “THEN,” here, excludes Peter! But if you add him on, and with all good luck, you can still never get the “CHOSEN TWELVE” together to see Jesus, because the traitor Judas had committed suicide by hanging – (*Matthew 27:5*), long before Jesus’ alleged resurrection.”

We are dealing here with a strange mentality, where **“Eleven”** does not mean ELEVEN – (*Luke 24:33*). **“Twelve”** does not mean TWELVE,

and **“Three and three”** means TWO AND ONE!³⁰¹ Jesus would truly sympathise with us:

***“it is hard for you
to kick against the pricks”***

*(Holy Bible) Acts 9:5*³⁰²

ENTER JESUS

Whilst the two are telling their sceptical audience about their encounter with a **physical**, living Jesus (one who was eating food with them), **“IN WALKS JESUS”** (these are my words)³⁰³ the doors being shut for fear of the Jews.

The Christian controversialist says: “No! Our records state that Jesus simply ‘STOOD IN THEIR MIDST,’³⁰⁴ he did not WALK in!” It was a question of disappearance from Emmaus and a reappearance in Jerusalem – like the **“Invisible Man”**, like the **“Indian Rope Trick,”** like **“Star Trek”** (a science-fiction fantasy where people are “beamed” from Space Ships to planets and back again). You actually “see” people disappearing before your very eyes and materialising in another place. People who believe this to be real are victims of their own delusions. They have seen too many films and viewed too many TV programmes.

THE HARE AND THE TORTOISE

But why did it take Jesus (PBUH) so long to reach the upper room? He had **“vanished”** before the **“two”** made a beeline for Jerusalem, and yet Jesus had not preceded them. He was late in coming. It reminds one of the story of the hare and the tortoise. Could it be that he was nursing his wounds on the way?

The cultists imagine that Jesus was floating around from place to place, appearing and disappearing at will. Jeffrey Hunter, the handsome young actor, playing the role of Jesus Christ in the film, **“King of Kings,”** made

301 This conundrum will be discussed further on pages 442 to 445.

302 Paul says that these words were spoken to him by Jesus, originally in the Hebrew tongue – (*Acts 26:14*)

303 **“Came Jesus and stood in their midst”** – (*John 20:19*)

304 In *John 20:19, 24, 26*, the word **“CAME”**, **“CAME”**, **“CAME”**, contradict the notion that he simply appeared meaning that he materialised out of thin air.

a very sensible observation after climbing Mount Zion for the scene of the **“temptation”** of Jesus by the Devil. After heaving and hoving, sweating and panting for breath while climbing the hill, he remarked, **“FOR THE FIRST TIME IN MY LIFE I REALISED HOW HUMAN JESUS WAS!”**

*Neither Luke nor John, who record this episode of Jesus’ visit to the upper room, venture to tell us that he simply **o-o-z-e-d** through the keyhole, or that he **oozed** through crevices in the wall. O! But why did they deprive us of this vital information? Because no oozing happened! But the problem remains – how did he get in when the **“doors were shut.”** – (John 20:19). Amazingly, Luke 24:36, who also records this incident word for word did not think fit to add, **“the doors were shut.”** It was unimportant to him! Why? Because it was irrelevant! Claiming an “orderliness” and judiciousness for his writings, he would not confuse the issues –*

(Holy Bible) Luke 1:3.

THE UPPER-ROOM

This abode in question, is alternatively described as a **“guest chamber”** and as a **“large upper-room”** – (Mark 14:14-15). It is not the whole residence. It is part of a mansion. Do I have to prove this to you? Could this be the only room upstairs? Taking into account that this particular room contained a table big enough to seat at least 14 people on 14 clumsy chairs- Jesus and his 12 disciples making the “unlucky thirteen,” and John the **“disciple whom Jesus loved”** being the owner of the house and **“leaning on Jesus’ bosom”** (John 13:23) making fourteen in all.

Can you imagine the size of this **“guest room?”** – With pantry, kitchen, and other facilities; and downstairs, where the owner’s family and servants resided. It was like a small palace! Jesus was familiar with this mansion. He had visited Jerusalem often for the feast of the Passover. Remember how he directed his disciples to find the place? – (Luke 22:10).

My own humble abode has four entrances. Perhaps John’s **“GUEST CHAMBER”** had only one main-entrance with two doors. But was there a need to seal it off from the rest of the house? For the visitor, the front doors were sufficient for all their needs – entry and exit. And Eastern guests do not pry into passages, attics and apartments of their hosts! They are easily gratified with every little hospitality bestowed. But Jesus was no stranger to

the house. He was like a member of the family of the disciple Jesus loved. He had no need to knock at bolted doors to terrify his timid flock. There were more ways than one of getting in. If there was any misgiving on the part of the disciples for his sudden appearance in their midst, he was quick in dispelling it.

***“Peace be unto you”, he cried;
but his little lambs “were terrified!”***

(Holy Bible) Luke 24: 36-37

OPPOSITE REACTIONS ON RECOGNISING JESUS

Remember at the break of dawn that very morning, a lone woman, Mary Magdalene, was mad with glee on recognising him around the tomb. And she had to be stopped in her stride from embracing him. But these ten heroes who were rattling sabres in this very room were now petrified on recognising their Master. Why were there opposite reactions between the men and the woman? – Men terrified, woman not afraid? The reason is that the woman was an eyewitness to all the happenings around Calvary, whereas the men were nowhere in sight. Therefore the woman went to the tomb with the intention of meeting a LIVE Jesus, and thus her joy on meeting him. But the ten were not witnesses to the happenings, hence their supposition about seeing a ghost. They were physically and emotionally on the verge of breaking down. Luke succinctly describes their condition:

***“But they were terrified and affrighted
and supposed that they had seen a spirit.”***

(Holy Bible) Luke 24:37

REASON FOR FEAR

The reason for their terror was that they thought that the man they saw standing in their midst was not Jesus himself but his ghost. Ask your **“BORN-AGAIN”** friends who want to share heaven with you, the reason for the disciples thinking that Jesus was a spirit. Ask the reason for the disciples thinking that Jesus was a spirit. Ask them, “Did he look like a spirit?” And though misguided as they may be, you will hear their answer – **“No!”** Then why did the disciples of Jesus think that Jesus was a spirit, when he did not look like one? There is no answer! They are speechless.

Please help them. Free them from their misconception. If we don't, they will harass us and our people till kingdom come. They will steal our children (as they are doing now in Muslim lands), in the guise of feeding hungry children, and at times with our own money. Have you heard of **"World Vision"** and the like? Crusades once more but with arms invisible!

The reason the disciples of Jesus were afraid was that they had learned by **hearsay** that their Master was killed by being fastened to the cross – that he was crucified.³⁰⁵ They had learned by **hearsay** that he had "given up the ghost": that he had **died**. They had learned by **HEARSAY THAT NOW** he was "DEAD AND BURIED" for three days. A man with such a reputation would be expected to be decomposing in his tomb. **FOR ALL THEIR KNOWLEDGE WAS FROM HEARSAY!** – What they had heard! Because none of them was there to witness what was really going on with Jesus at Golgotha. In the most critical juncture in the life of Jesus:

"...THEY ALL FORSOOK HIM AND FLED."

(Holy Bible) Mark 14:50

THE GENUINE DISCIPLES

Mark is talking about the chosen **"twelve."** Not about Jesus' **"secret"** devoted ones like the other John who took Mary the mother of Jesus home, and Nicodemus³⁰⁶ and Joseph of Arimathea and the like. In view of the dastardly desertion by the other "twelve", I am loathe to call these "men" disciples. Or is Mark lying? When he said **"all"**, did he not mean "All?" There was no comeback with these heroes. The author of the fourth Gospel lists a number of women from Jesus' entourage. Among them three Marys, **"and the disciple whom Jesus loved."** He repeats this phrase a number of times without actually identifying him as JOHN their benefactor in Jerusalem. Why? If that John is the author himself of the fourth gospel, then why does he not say so. Why is he so shy? He was not

305 **"Crucified"**: see **"CRUCIFIED OR CRUCIPLAYED"** on page 460. The Gospel writers had not known the use of inverted commas to imply, that this is what others say, or this is the "so-called".

306 **Nicodemus**: A selfless soul, who, having risked his all in associating with a man (Jesus) condemned by a Roman Court for treason, is deliberately blotted out of the 26 Books of the N.T. **"It is difficult to avoid concluding that the omission in the synoptic tradition of the mysterious disciple was intentional,"** says Dr. Hugh J. Schonfield, one of the world's leading Biblical scholars.

very bashful when asking Jesus to make him and his brother sit:

***“One on thy right hand,
and the other on thy left hand
in thy Kingdom”***

(Holy Bible) Mark 10:37

The reason for his reticence is that the “beloved disciple” is his namesake, i.e. his name is also John! The rest of the disciples were nowhere to be found when he (Jesus) was most in need. They all had, as Mark says,

“forsaken him and fled!”

(Holy Bible) Mark 14:50

WHAT WOULD YOU CALL THIS — “CRUXIFIXION or CRUCI - FICTION ?

WEEKEND WORLD, Sunday, August 3, 1969

Crucified man hung on cross



LEFT: A friend hides his face as Newcastle barman, Mr. Pieter van der Bergh, is nailed to a cross.

NEWCASTLE—Blood spurted from the hands of a Newcastle barman, Mr. Pieter van der Bergh last week, after he was publicly crucified in one of South Africa's weirdest "religious" services.

Hundreds of people, including scores of children, watched as 4-inch nails were driven through Mr. van der Bergh's hands and right foot, and he drooped for 20 minutes from a six-foot cross. Mr. van der Bergh told me he held the crucifixion to prove that "man was master over his body."

Most spectators attended out of morbid curiosity and shouted protests when views of the grotesque ceremony were blocked by photographers.

Mr. R. Rietheven used a builder's metal hammer to force the nail through Mr. van der Bergh's flesh. Mr. van der Bergh did not flinch as the nails were driven home while cries of "sit down in front" and "we want to see too" echoed over the Newcastle circus ground.

SHOCKED

Several women turned away shocked, and children gaped, open-mouthed. Men lifted the cross from the ground and manhandled it into a shallow hole, where it was fixed in position.

An 18-inch spike was plunged through Mr. van der Bergh's thigh. For 20 minutes he hung on the cross chanting psalms and giving a sermon.

No blood flowed while he was there.

BELOW: A four-inch nail driven through the hand of Mr. Van der Bergh did not draw blood as it was hammered into a wooden cross.

Figure 26 Reproduction from Weekend World - August 3, 1969

SUNDAY TRIBUNE, JULY 17, 1983

WAS HE DEAD OR ALIVE?

THE DILEMMA FACING TRANSPLANT DOCTORS
AFTER THE BIZARRE CASE OF DONOR ANTONIE



THE mystery surrounding, whether potential kidney donor Antonie Franken was dead or alive when Tygerberg Hospital doctors decided to operate on him may jeopardise transplant operations.

Antonie Franken
... a bizarre dead
or alive question

An "urgently needed" transplant has been called off because of the controversy following the death of the 21-year-old Goodwood fireman who suffered devastating brain damage in a car crash on Saturday, July 9.

**By Tony
Spencer-Smith**

The transplant operation had to be cancelled this week, said the medical superintendent of Tygerberg, Dr J P van der Westhuyzen.

Transplant doctors around the country now fear the supply of organs from donors could dry up because of the incident.

The bizarre case began the Sunday morning following Antonie Franken's fateful accident the Saturday night before.

THE SUNDAY TRIBUNE, MARCH 27, 1960

MAN DIED FOR TWO HOURS: STILL LIVES

'Miracle' amazes doctors

(Sunday Tribune Correspondent)

LONDON, Saturday.

ONE thing is being kept very carefully from 27-year-old Walter Harridge in St. Bartholomew's Hospital at Rochester, Kent—the fact that he was dead for nearly two hours. Doctors fear that the shock of knowing it might kill him. Newspapers are forbidden him. The hospital staff has been warned that he must not be told that by all normal standards he should not be alive. For no one has ever died for so long and lived again.

Figure 27 Reproduction from Sunday Tribune - July 17, 1983

CHAPTER FOURTEEN

JESUS NOT RESURRECTED

A PHYSICAL, LIVE JESUS!

After the due greetings of “**Shaloam**,” Jesus begins calming the disciples’ fear for taking him to be a ghost. He says:

***“Behold (have a look at) my hands
and my feet, that it is I
myself (I am the same fellow, man!):
handle me and see;
for A SPIRIT has no flesh and bones,
as you see me have.
...And he showed them his hands
and his feet.”***

(Holy Bible) Luke 24:39-40

What was the man trying to prove? That he had been resurrected from the dead? – That he was a spirit? – What has the demonstration of hands and feet to do with resurrection? **“It is I MYSELF!”** Can’t you see, you fools!? **“For a SPIRIT...”** – any spirit, has **“NO flesh and bones, as YOU see ME have!”** This is an axiomatic, self-evident truth. You do not have to convince anybody, whether Hindu, Muslim, Christian, Jew, Atheist or Agnostic. Everyone will acknowledge without any proof that A SPIRIT HAS NO FLESH AND BONES!

WHY BELABOUR THE OBVIOUS?

Then why did Jesus need to belabour the point? It is simply because the disciples were thinking that he had returned from the dead, that he had been resurrected, and if so he would be in a spiritual form – A SPIRIT! And Jesus is telling them that he is NOT that – he is not a spirit – NOT resurrected! The above verses in their original, in every language, are so vivid, so simple, so clear that you do not need a dictionary nor a D.D. to explain them to you.

Why don't you (dear reader) memorise just this one verse. In your own language – English, Arabic, Zulu or Afrikaans, and with just one verse you can take the wind out of the missionaries' sail. You can “CRACK HIS SKULL,” exactly as young David, with his little pebble did to Goliath. The pleasure is yours...Allah is giving you the opportunity, in this day and age to disabuse the Christian mind from his fantasies!

I have asked learned giants of Christendom to tell me whether in their language, when a man says, “A Spirit has **NO** Flesh and Bones,” that it means – A Spirit **HAS** Flesh and Bones! In debates, no opponent of mine has ever had the courage to tackle the question. They all pretend that the words were never uttered.

VIVID EXPLANATION...I AM ALIVE!

If I tell you in English that “**Because I have flesh and bones** – I am not a SPIRIT, I am not a GHOST, I am not a SPOOK!” – is that what it really means in your language? You say “**Yes!**” (This reasoning equally applies to every language under sun). In other words, Jesus was telling his disciples, when he said: “**Behold by HANDS and my FEET,**” that the body he wanted them to see, feel and touch was not a SPIRITUAL body, nor a METAMORPHOSED³⁰⁷ body, nor a RESURRECTED body. Because a resurrected “body” becomes spiritualised!

WHO SAYS SO?

The argumentative Crusader asks: “Who says that resurrected persons will be spiritualised?” I say, “Jesus!” He asks: “Where?” I say: “In the Gospel of Luke: go back four chapters from where Jesus said: “***A spirit has no flesh and bones,***” that is, to *Luke 20:27-36*, and you will see...” The Jews

307 **Metamorphose:** to change in form: to change the nature of.

were coming to Jesus again and again with posers and riddles, like:-

**(a) “Master, must we pay
tribute to Caesar or not?”**

(Holy Bible) Matthew 22:17

**(b) “Master, this woman was taken
in adultery, in the very act.”**

(Holy Bible) John 8:4

**(c) “Master, what commandment
is the first of all?”**

(Holy Bible) Mark 12:28

Now they come to him concerning a Jewess who had seven husbands. According to a Jewish practice – if one man dies leaving no offspring behind, then the 2nd brother of the deceased husband takes her to wife, to give her his seed. But when he fails and dies, the 3rd takes her on; and so on. In the case before Jesus, seven brothers died, and in time, the woman also died. There was no problem while each was trying to fulfil his obligation on earth – it was ONE by ONE! But the question of the Jews was that, at the RESURRECTION, which one was going to **HAVE** this woman, because they had all **“HAD”** her here! The picture the Jews are trying to conjure up in Jesus’ mind is that if the seven brothers are resurrected simultaneously at the RESURRECTION, and the woman also, then there will be a war in heaven among the seven brothers, everyone claiming the woman as his own wife, because they has **“all had her”**. In short, which fellow will have this woman as his wife in heaven? In answer to that Jesus says: **“Neither shall they die anymore”** meaning that the resurrected persons will be immortalised: needing no food, no shelter, no clothing, no sex, no rest of the type we know. **“For they are equal unto the angels,”** meaning that they will be ANGELISED, they will be SPIRITUALISED, they will become SPIRITUAL CREATURES, they will be SPIRITS! As regards himself, four chapters further on he says: **“A spirit has no flesh and bones, as you see me have”** – I am **NOT** a spirit, I am **NOT** a ghost, I am **NOT** a spook, I am **NOT** RESURRECTED! I am the same living Jesus – **ALIVE!**

***“And when he had thus spoken,
he showed them his hands and feet.”***

(Holy Bible) Luke 24:40

THE DISCIPLES' FEAR SUBSIDES

The disciples were **“overjoyed and wondered,”** what could have happened? They had thought that he was dead and gone, but here with them stands their Master, with flesh and bones – with 100% characteristics of a man who is **ALIVE!**

To assure them further, to calm their shaky nerves, he asks:

“Have you here any meat,”

(i.e. anything to eat?)

***“And they gave him
a piece of broiled fish and of a honeycomb,
and he took it,
and DID EAT before them.”***

(Holy Bible) Luke 24:41-43

To prove what? that he is RESURRECTED? Why does he not then he say so instead of proving everything to the contrary? Presenting his physical body for examination, eating and masticating **“broiled fish and honeycomb.”** Is all this an act, a pretence, a make-believe, another **“leela”** as the Hindus might say? “No!” Said Schleiermacher a hundred-and-sixty-five years ago. Albert Schweitzer in his book, **“In Quest of the Historical Jesus,”** page 64, quotes him:-

**“IF CHRIST HAD ONLY EATEN TO SHOW THAT HE
COULD EAT, WHILE HE REALLY HAD NO NEED OF
NOURISHMENT, IT WOULD HAVE BEEN A PRETENCE
– SOMETHING DOCETIC.”**

EASY SALVATION

What is wrong with our Christian brethren? Jesus says that a spirit has no flesh and bones. They say that it has! Please ask your friends among them. Who is lying? Jesus or you, the billion so-called followers of his? This is the result of two thousand years of brainwashing or “programming” as the

Americans say. Salvation is cheap in Christianity! The Christian does not have to fast, and pray, and straitjacket his life as the Muslim is obliged to do. He merely has to BELIEVE and salvation is his.

For us, all our efforts, all our good deeds are **“like filthy rags,”** he says. You better reprogramme him, or he will programme you. He will never be satisfied with us, never mind how far backward we bend to appease him. Allah says:

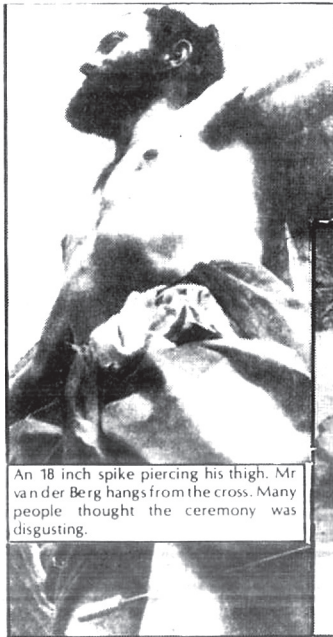
وَلَنْ تَرْضَىٰ عَنْكَ الْيَهُودُ وَلَا النَّصَارَىٰ حَتَّىٰ تَتَّبِعَ مِلَّتَهُمْ

And never will the Jews or the Christians approve of you until you follow their religion.

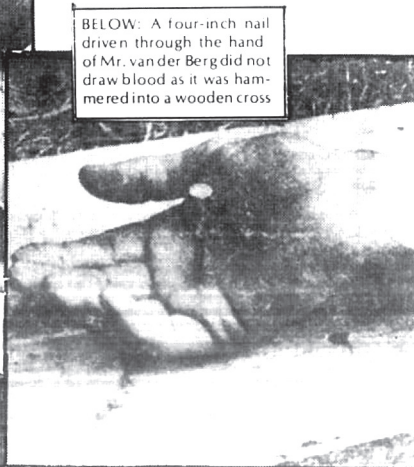
Surah al-Baqarah (Holy Qur'an 2:120)

It's either you change them, or they change you! If you want peace – Peace – Salaam – ISLAM!

**THIS SOUTH AFRICAN
DID ONE BETTER THAN
THE PHILIPPINOS. ***



An 18 inch spike piercing his thigh. Mr. van der Berg hangs from the cross. Many people thought the ceremony was disgusting.



BELOW: A four-inch nail driven through the hand of Mr. van der Berg did not draw blood as it was hammered into a wooden cross

* See page 463 for story of multiple **cruci-fictions**

SUNDAY
EXPRESS

23rd JULY, 1961



Man's heart stops but he lives on

SUNDAY EXPRESS REPORTER

THE heart of a 52-year-old man stopped after a minor operation at Johannesburg's South Rand Hospital last week, but within the four-minute deadline in such cases his chest had been opened and hand-massage restored him to life.

He was 'dead'

One of the staff noticed something wrong. When the surgeon arrived, Mr. Jeffery's heart had stopped. He was "dead."

An eight-inch incision was made in his chest and for 30 minutes only the skill of the team kept him alive. Oxygen was pumped down his throat, injections were made directly into his heart. The heart itself was hand-massaged throughout the emergency. A defibrillation machine was used several times.

The Natal Mercury,
DURBAN, WEDNESDAY,

'Clinically dead'
toddler alive
after hour-long
revival battle

Miss Gillanderes said the child was clinically dead when the team arrived. There was neither heartbeat, blood pressure nor breath and his pupils were dilated.

'A neighbour had already started resuscitation before we arrived. We put through an air way to help him start breathing, we used drugs and we tried to shock his heart into working with the paddles.'

Brain damage

He was moved to hospital where doctors aided the resuscitation bid and about 10 minutes later the monitor indicated his heart had begun to pump.

Figure 28 Reproduction from Sunday Express - July 23, 1961

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

THE ONLY MIRACLE PROMISED

VATICINIUM EX EVENTU

The hot-gospeller and the Bible-thumper does not tire of quoting statements, alleged to have been made by Jesus, that he was going to Jerusalem to die, and on the third day he would **come back** to life. The Gospels, any Christian scholar will confirm, were first penned decades and centuries after Jesus. In his lifetime, not a word was written, nor did he instruct anyone to write a word! Taylor in his commentary on the Gospel of St. Mark, page 437, discounts the so-called prophecies regarding the “crucifixion” as **vaticinium ex eventu** meaning “prophecy after the event.” The Gospel-writers fabricated words and sayings, and put them into the mouth of Jesus, as if he had foretold the happenings.

The Christian missionary, the evangelist, the crusader, is reluctant to give a hearing to any Christian scholar despite the latter’s sincerity or greatness of calibre – whether Taylor, or Schweizer, or Brandon or Anderson. As soon as they say a word which goes against their pet prejudice, they will discount them all as “**external source**” and “**minority 20th-century speculation.**” Therefore, I am constrained here to take the proverbial “bull by the horn” and take him to the drinking trough.

DEMAND FOR A MIRACLE

The Jews had murmured in the wilderness against Moses (PBUH). They had given him endless trouble, and now his successor, the Messiah is given no lesser parrying. In their bouts of harassing questionings, they come to him, now, sounding most respectable and polite:

“Master, (Hebrew – Rabbi, meaning Teacher)

we would have a sign of thee.”

(Holy Bible) Matthew 12:38

All his teaching and preaching, and healing were not enough to convince the Jews that he was a man sent by God; that he was their Messiah. Now they are asking for a “SIGN” – a Miracle – such as flying like a bird, or walking on water; in short, anything they considered IMPOSSIBLE.

Before you proceed any further in the discussion with the Christian, please make sure that he understands the word “sign” in the above verse to mean a “miracle”. This simple English word from the King James Version of the Bible, which every other Version seems to have copied, is creating difficulty in the grasping of its true significance. In the **“New International Version,”** supported by Baptist, Lutheran, Methodist, Presbyterian and Reformed churches, the word is expanded as **“miraculous sign,”** thank God! Not just any sign, or road signs – “Stop, Yield or Go!” but a **MIRACLE.**

It is also necessary for us to try and define what is meant by a miracle. One of the simplest and truest of definitions is that given by Dr. Lyttelton in, **“The Places of Miracles in Religion,”** that is:-

“AN ACT BEYOND HUMAN POWER.”

This is exactly what the Jews wanted from Jesus. An act which they, the Scribes and the Pharisees, could not duplicate. On the face of it the request seems quite fair, but it is a sick mentality which craves for “tricks” which every sceptic and materialist can rationalise.

NO “SIGN” BUT ONE!

So Jesus reacts:

***“...An evil and adulterous generation
seeketh after a sign (miracle),
and there shall be no sign (miracle)
be given to it, but the sign (miracle)
of the prophet, Jonah.”***

(Holy Bible) Matthew 12:39

What was the “sign” or the miracle that Jonah performed that Jesus now proposes to emulate? To discover this miracle, we have to go to the **“Book**

of Jonah,” in the Bible. But this “Book” is very elusive! It happens to be a single leaf, with four short chapters, and is difficult to find in any encyclopedia of a thousand pages, such as the Christian Bible. But you do not have to go to the Book itself. Every Christian child who ever attended Sunday school, knows the whole story.

BACKGROUND TO THE “SIGN”

To refresh your memory, let me tell you that God Almighty commands Jonah (PBUH) to go to Nineveh (a city of a hundred thousand people) and warn them to **“repent in sack-cloth and in ashes.”** That is, to humble themselves before the Lord; or God will destroy them.

Jonah feels despondent, fearing that the materialistic Ninevites, **“The Wicked and Adulteress Generation”** of their time, will not listen to him; they will make a mockery of him. So instead of going to Nineveh, he goes to Joppa and sets sail to Tarshish. At sea there is a terrible storm and, according to the superstition of the mariners, whoever runs away from his “Master’s Commands” creates such a turmoil at sea. An enquiry begins and Jonah realises that he is the guilty party, that as a prophet of God, he was the soldier of God. And as a soldier of God he had to obey the Commands of God. He had no right to act presumptuously. So he volunteers and makes a manly comeback. He feared that God was after his blood, and in wanting to kill him, He will sink the boat, and innocent people will die. Jonah reasons that it will be better for him to be thrown overboard, and thus avert the disaster overtaking them.

CASTING OF LOTS

These “pre-exilic”³⁰⁸ people, eight centuries before Christ, had more sense of Justice and fair play than modern civilised (?) man. They felt that Jonah wanted to commit suicide, and perhaps wanted their helping hand. They were not going to aid and abet him in his folly. So they said that they had a system of their own to discover right from wrong, by casting “lots”, something like our tossing of the coin – “head or tail!” And according to their primitive system the lot fell on Jonah, who was discovered as being the guilty man. So they took him and threw him overboard!

308 Before the Jews were carried away into exile under Nebuchadnezzar.

DEAD OR ALIVE?

The question arises that, when they threw Jonah overboard, was he dead or alive? To make it easy for you to get the right answer, let me help you by suggesting that Jonah had volunteered when he said:

*“...Take me up,
and cast me forth into the sea;
so shall the sea be calm for you;
for I know that for my sake
this great tempest is upon you.”*

(Holy Bible) Jonah 1:12

When a man volunteers, one does not have to strangle him before throwing him; one does not have to spear him before throwing him; one does not have to twist his arms or legs before throwing him. Everyone agrees that that is so.

Now once more the question: Was Jonah **dead or alive** when he was thrown into the raging sea? We get a unanimous reply – that he was **ALIVE!** The storm subsides. Perhaps it was a coincidence. A fish comes and swallows him. Was he **dead or alive?** And again everyone says **ALIVE!** From the belly of the fish he prays to God for help. Do dead men pray? “No!” So he was...**ALIVE!** On the third day the fish vomits him onto the seashore – **dead or alive?** And the reply again is **ALIVE!** It is a miracle of miracles! The Jews say that he was **ALIVE!** The Christians say that he was **ALIVE!** And the Muslims say that he was **ALIVE!** Little wonder that Jesus chose the “SIGN” (miracle) of Jonah as his only “SIGN” (miracle): This is something on which the followers of three major religions are agreed.

Let me recapitulate this Mighty Miracle from the Book of Jonah:

1. When you throw a man into a raging sea, he ought to die. Since Jonah did not die, it is therefore, a MIRACLE!
2. A fish comes and gobbles up the man; he ought to die. He did not die. It is now therefore, a double MIRACLE!
3. Because of heat and suffocation in the whale’s belly for three days and three nights, he ought to have been dead. He did not die. Therefore it is now a miracle of MIRACLES!

When you expect a man to die, and he does **not** die, only then it is a

MIRACLE. If a man faces a firing squad and six bullets are pumped into his body at the given signal, and the man dies, is it a miracle? Of course it would be a MIRACLE. We expected Jonah to die each time, but he does not die; therefore, his is a multiple MIRACLE.

JESUS LIKE JONAH

Jesus too, after the ordeal he is supposed to have gone through, ought to have been dead. Had he died, it would be no miracle. But if he had lived, as had himself foretold, and proved **“according to the scriptures,”** it would be a **“sign”** – a MIRACLE! And these are his words:

...For as Jonah was...(English), *“Want soos Jonah...”*(Afrikaans), *“Ngokuba njengo Jonah...”* (Zulu).

“For **as Jonah was** three days and three nights in the belly of the whale, **so shall the son of man be...**” – (*Matthew 12:40*). How was Jonah in the whale’s belly for three days and three nights – **Dead or Alive?** The Muslims, the Christians and the Jews again give a unanimous verdict of **A-L-I-V-E!** How was Jesus in the tomb, for the same period of time – **Dead or Alive?** Over a thousand million Christians, of every church or denomination give a unanimous verdict of **D-E-A-D!** Is that **like** Jonah or **unlike** Jonah in your language? And everyone whose mind is not confused, says that, that is very **UNLIKE** Jonah. Jesus said that he would be **“LIKE JONAH”** and his infatuated followers say that he was **“UNLIKE JONAH!”** Who is lying – Jesus or his followers? I leave the answer to you!

BIG BUSINESS

But religion is good business. In the name of Christ they are minting it! The crusaders say that we have got it all wrong. They say it was the time factor that Jesus was prophesying about, and not whether he would be Dead or Alive. They say, “Can’t you see that he emphasising the time factor? He repeats the word, **“three”**, four times.” These are drowning men and women clutching at straws. What did Jesus say?

***“For as Jonah was THREE days
and THREE nights in the whale’s belly;
so shall the son of man be THREE days
and THREE nights***

in the heart of the earth.”

(Holy Bible) Matthew 12:40

Jesus was nowhere near the **“heart of the earth;”** he was supposed to have been in a tomb, which is well-above ground level. Maybe he was speaking figuratively.

Three and three are no doubt repeated four times, but there is nothing miraculous about a time factor. The Jews were asking Jesus for a **“sign”** – a miracle and there is nothing to make THREE days, or THREE weeks or THREE months into a miracle. The first time when I went to Cape Town from Durban, thirty years ago, was by train, and the train took exactly THREE days and THREE nights to reach there. It’s a Miracle! Nonsense, you will say, and I am forced to agree.

But it is not so easy for the Christian to agree because his salvation hangs upon a thread. Therefore he must hold on for dear life. We can afford to be charitable. So let us humour him! So was it the time factor that Jesus was out to fulfil? “Yes!” says the Christian. When was he “crucified?”³⁰⁹ The bulk of Christendom believes that it was on a Friday afternoon some two thousand years ago.

309 **Crucified:** The wisdom of the inverted commas will become apparent when you read the **“Crucified or Cruciplayed?”** on page 460

CHAPTER SIXTEEN

SIMPLE CALCULATIONS

WHY “GOOD FRIDAY?”

In my country, we enjoy a four day holiday during Easter, beginning with what is called GOOD FRIDAY. What makes Good Friday good? They say it is so because Christ died for their sins on that day. And in tune with that, every Christian country in the world – Britain, France, Germany, America, Lesotho, Swaziland, Zambia, Zimbabwe, they all commemorate Good Friday. I have already proved to you that Jesus could not have been on the cross for more than three hours, if at all. For all their rush and hurry, they could not bundle Jesus into the tomb before the sunset of Friday.

More than a thousand and one sects and denominations of Christianity, bickering on every aspect of faith are nevertheless, almost all agreed that Jesus Christ was **SUPPOSED** to have been in the tomb on the **night** of Friday. He was still **SUPPOSED** to be in the tomb on the **day** of Saturday. And he was still **SUPPOSED** to be in the tomb on the **night** of Saturday.³¹⁰ But on Sunday morning, the first day of the week, when Mary Magdalene visited the tomb, she found the tomb empty. You will note that I have repeated the word SUPPOSED, SUPPOSED, SUPPOSED, three times. Do you know why? Surely not to rhyme with the other THREE, THREE, THREE of the prophecy. The reason is that none of the 27 Books of the New Testament records the time of his exit from the tomb.

310 We are dividing 24 hour day into DAY part and NIGHT part exactly as Jesus had. As a Jew, he was reckoning time exactly like a Jew, not according to any heathen calculation, like those of the Romans from midnight to midnight. His people the Jews, to this day, reckon the day from sunset to sunset.

Not a single writer of these 27 “tomes”³¹¹ was an eyewitness to his alleged “resurrection.” The only ones who could have told us a word or two on the subject, authoritatively, have been utterly silenced.

May another Arab lad make a find like the **“Dead Sea Scrolls,”** but this time autographed by Joseph of Arimathe’a and Nicodemus themselves! These two would have told us candidly how they had taken their Master soon after dark that very Friday evening, to a more congenial place for rest and recuperation. Is it not amazing that the only genuine witnesses have been eternally silenced? Could it be that these two and the disciples at Jerusalem were preaching about **“ANOTHER JESUS,** and **ANOTHER GOSPEL.”**” – (2 Corinthians 11:4)

EASY ADDITIONS

If it was the time factor that Jesus was trying to stress in the prophecy under discussion, let us see whether that was fulfilled, **“according to the scriptures,”** as the Christians boast.

EASTER WEEK	IN THE SEPULCHRE	
	DAYS	NIGHTS
FRIDAY Placed in tomb at sunset	-nil-	One Night
SATURDAY Supposed to be in tomb	One day	One Night
SUNDAY	-nil-	-nil-
TOTAL	One day	Two Nights

You will no doubt observe from the above table that the grand total amounts to no more than **ONE** day and **TWO** nights and, juggle as you may, you will never, never get **three** days and **three** nights as Jesus himself foretold, **“according to the Scriptures.”** Even Einstein, the Master mathematician, cannot help you for this! Can’t you see the Christian is giving a double lie to Jesus from this one prophecy alone? Jesus said, that he would be **LIKE** Jonah!

1. The Christians allege that Jesus was **UNLIKE** Jonah. Jonah was **ALIVE**

311 **Tome:** A volume, a large book.

for three days and three nights, whereas Jesus was **“DEAD”** in the tomb!
(?)

COUNT BACKWARDS TO SOLVE DILEMMA

For all their learning, you have cornered them. And they know it! We must not relent. The Christians are already inventing a way out of this dilemma. They have now invented the “GOOD Wednesday” theory. **“The Plain Truth”** with its monthly FREE worldwide circulation of 6 million copies, is offering further FREE books on the subject of “Three DAYS and three NIGHTS.” There are other organisations in South Africa like **“Bible Revelation”** Johannesburg, who are also offering FREE books to prove that the “crucifixion” took place on a GOOD **Wednesday**, and not on a Good **Friday**.

Mr. Robert Fahey from that great country, America – where almost all (?) new cults originate e.g. the Jehovah’s Witnesses, the Seventh Day Adventists, the Christian scientists, the Mormons, you name them, and they have them – representing the premier Christian magazine, named in the previous paragraph, lectures recently in the “Holiday Inn”, Durban. He startled his overwhelmingly Christian audiences with a lot of novel ideas. Among these newfangled doctrines was one about **Good Wednesday**. He agreed 100% with the present writer’s conclusion that Good Friday was **actually disproving** Christ’s claim to be the Messiah. To solve this problem he suggested that we count backwards from the time he was discovered to be missing from the tomb, viz. on that Sunday morning, (**“the first day of the week”**) when Mary Magdalene went to anoint him. If we deduct 3 DAYS and 3 NIGHTS from Sunday morning, we ought to get Wednesday as an answer. It is not difficult from here to get your THREE DAYS AND THREE nights to resolve the Christian dilemma. The audience, already pre-prepared with a flood of FREE³¹² magazines and literature, gave Mr Fahey a resounding applause.

GOD OR THE DEVIL?

After the meeting, during a personal discussion³¹³, I congratulated Mr. Fahey for his ingenuity. “How was it possible for the past two thousand

312 They have a fantastic system for achieving a FREE worldwide monthly circulation of 6 million **“Plain Truth”** magazines alone.

313 The Christians do not allow their speakers to be questioned in public.

years, that the Christian world had not known their religious arithmetic to get their sums right?" Even to this day the bulk of Christendom commemorate a **GOOD FRIDAY** instead of a **GOOD WEDNESDAY**. "Who has deceived the 1,200,000,000 Christians of the world, including the Roman Catholics who claim an unbroken chain of Popes from the first Pope (Peter) to the present Pope, into falsely celebrating GOOD FRIDAY," I asked Mr. Fahey.

Mr. Fahey unashamedly answered: **"The Devil!"** I said, 'If the Devil can succeed in confusing the Christians, and keep them confused for two thousand years in the most simple aspect of Faith, how much easier it would be for the Devil to mislead them in things concerning God?' Mr. Fahey blushed and walked away. If this is the belief of the trendsetters of Christianity,³¹⁴ we may well ask, "is this 'crucifixion' not the mightiest hoax in history?" Should we not now, more appropriately, call it **CRUCIFIXION!**

CRYSTAL-CLEAR EVIDENCE

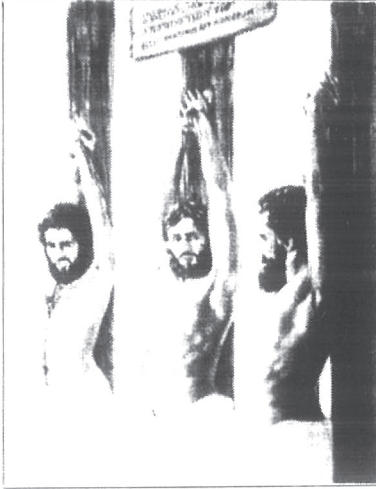
I have given you a list on page 456 showing overwhelming proof from the Christian scriptures where it was being said, again and again, that Jesus was ALIVE, **ALIVE!** Yet the disciples did not believe. Will the modern-day disciples believe now? Are they prepared to believe their own Master who had said: - "AS Jonah was...**SO SHALL** the son of man be?" Not likely! Remember Thomas – another one of the elected ones of Jesus, dubbed by the Christians as "Doubting Thomas"? He was **"not with them** (the disciples) **when Jesus came"** – (*John 20:24*), the first time in the upper-room. Subsequently, when these very disciples who had felt, and touched and eaten with Jesus, testified that they had seen the **"Lord"** (not God, not the ghost of Jesus, but he himself flesh and blood – ALIVE!), Thomas said unto them:

***"Except, I shall see in his hands
the print of the nails, and put my finger
into the print of the nails,
and thrust my hand into his side,
I will not believe."***

(*Holy Bible*) *John 20:25*

³¹⁴ At the rate of this cults progress, before long the whole Christian world will opt for a **"Good Wednesday."**

THE WATCHTOWER — OCTOBER 15, 1983 5



The Watchtower

Announcing Jehovah's Kingdom

*In an article covering four full pages on the subject "Does the Bible Promise an Earthly Paradise?" where this picture appears, there is not one word about this — **STAKI-FICTION!***

The fastest growing Christian cult — the "**Jehovah's Witnesses**"¹ (excepting the "**born-again**") — have innovated a novel concept of the **cruci-FICTION**. They choke on the word, **cross (cruci)**, which they claim is the symbol of phallic worship.

On page 110 of their book — "**What Has Religion Done for Mankind?**" They say about the cross (**crux ansata**) — "**THIS LOOKED LIKE THE LETTER T WITH AN OVAL HANDLE ON TOP. ACTUALLY THIS REPRESENTED THE MALE AND FEMALE ORGANS OF REPRODUCTION COMBINED, AND SO WAS THE 'SIGN OF LIFE!'**" Hence they will never countenance their "**lord**" and "**paviour**" Jesus Christ being associated in anyway with a cross — a pagan totem.

Therefore they claim that Jesus was instead killed on a **STAKE** (a pole) and not on a "**cruci**" (a cross). If we accept their hypothesis then Jesus would have been **STAKIFIED** instead of crucified. Hence it would be **STAKIFICTION** instead of **CRUCI-FICTION!**

Watch, how their cleverness shunts them from the "fraying pan into the fire". The **stake** is the symbol of the totem-pole, a nother form of the phallus of the phallic worshipping cults. I wonder, how long they will hold on to this?

Figure 29 Reproduction from The Watchtower - October 15, 1983

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

FABRICATED “SCRIPTURE”

NEW NAME, OLD GAME

A **“born-again”** had been boasting how he used to pinch 10 cents from the church collection plate for a **“milk-shake”**, and how he used to tie his drunken father **“...in the barn...”** – the same barn where he used to see his **“...mother lying in the gutter in the manure – the bathroom of the cows – beaten so badly by my father...”**³¹⁵ now he does another confidence trick upon his readers. He quotes the above verse (*John 20:25*) from his American Bible without giving the reference.³¹⁶ And after the words, **“I will not believe,”** he begins a new paragraph with the words, **“AT THIS POINT, Jesus said to Thomas,”** quoting again from the Bible without giving the reference. St. John, gives a lie to this cultist by saying,

*And, AFTER EIGHT DAYS,
again his disciples were inside,
and Thomas with them;
then CAME Jesus...”*

(Holy Bible) John 20:26

315 The sickness is so cultivated that when this type of tripe is narrated, the **“born-again”** Christians go into ecstasy with their **“Alleluyas!”**

316 On the same page 20 of **“The Resurrection Factor”** (by Josh McDowell) the author gives four other quotations, with references for everyone! On the following page he gives three quotes, also with references for everyone! But the verses where he wants to deceive, no references at all.

ARTFUL LIES

Another of these cultists, a lawyer by profession, supports his reborn brother from America with yet another lie. He says on page 120 of **“The Islam Debate,”** that “Deedat has recently made a big issue of the stone which sealed the tomb by publishing a booklet entitled **Who Moved The Stone?** In it he suggests that the stone was moved by two disciples of Jesus who were Pharisees – Joseph of Arimathea and Nicodemus (page 18). But in his booklet **Was Christ Crucified? SUGGESTS** it was a Superwoman (page 25), **IMPLYING** that it was Mary Magdalene.” (Emphasis are mine).

How can a born-again Christian and an attorney-at-law lie? To ensnare his victim he even quotes the page number, **“25”**. The book has been out of print for a long time. Even if you had a copy, you were not likely to check it up. The cultist sounds so cocksure! But the “Gospel Truth” is that my actual words are:

“SHE WAS PLEASANTLY SURPRISED ON HER ARRIVAL TO FIND THE STONE ALREADY ROLLED AWAY.”

Where is the suggestion that it was Mary Magdalene? Where do I **imply** that it was Mary Magdalene? But for these sick people, whether American or South African, every trick in the bag is permissible to clinch a convert for Christ. I “throw in the towel.” I am not prepared to give battle to every false charge, and I want you to do the same. You simply deliver your message the best way you can and leave to God.

A FABRICATION

Biblical scholars are coming to a conclusion that the “Doubting Thomas” episode is of the same variety as that of the woman **“caught in the act”** – (*John 8:1-11*), i.e. it is a fabrication! But as the orthodox will not allow this interpolation – (*John 8:1-11*) to be expunged from their Versions of the Bible, he exhibits a similar stubbornness in dealing with the verses about **“putting fingers into the print of the nails”** – (*John 20:25*). For the present we will deal with them for what they are worth.

The Romans had no special reasons for being vindictive towards Jesus as compared to his two “crossmates.” Why make fish of one (his “crossmates”) and fowl of the other (Jesus), i.e. to have the two tied with leather thongs to the crossbar and to have Jesus “nailed”?

Not **"at this point,"** as the cultist alleges, but **"eight days"** later, Jesus walks once more into the upper-room, and he finds Thomas there this time. And according to John, he commanded Thomas to...

***...Reach hither thy finger,
and behold my hands;
and reach hither thy hand,
and thrust in into my side;
and be not faithless, but believing."***

(Holy Bible) John 20:27

Thomas realises the heel he has been. He had signally rejected every proof that Jesus was ALIVE! Every other disciple, beside Judas Iscariot the traitor, had testified that they had seen Jesus and felt him and eaten food with him, but Thomas WOULD NOT BELIEVE! What would he not believe? That the living, pulsating Jesus was making his rounds – Not a ghost of Jesus. Now, being confronted with the PHYSICAL reality of his presence, demonstrating his physical, material body, he was forced to exclaim,

"My Lord and my God!"

(Holy Bible) John 20:28

WHAT DID THOMAS REALISE?

Did Thomas at that juncture that Jesus Christ was his Jehovah? Did he and other disciples fall down in prostration before him? Never! His words were the words of self-reproach. We utter them daily, "My God! What a fool I have been!" Are you addressing your listener, as your God?

DAILY NEWS - OCTOBER 17, 1955.

GIRL, AWAITING BURIAL FOR 4 DAYS, WAKES UP

SITEBE, a Native woman of Fairleigh, near Newcastle, sat in mourning beside the coffin of her 14-year-old daughter early yesterday, waiting for a hearse to come and take the child away.

For four days she had mourned her daughter's death, but she had one comfort - there was to be no pauper's burial.

The whole family had helped pay for the shroud, the coffin and a funeral at a distant cemetery.

It was early when Mrs. Sitebe sat for the last time beside the coffin. All was quiet in the house.

Then she heard a rustle and a slight movement. She stood up and looked down into the open coffin.

Her daughter stared back at her.

MOVED AND SPOKE

For a moment the mother stood shocked and stunned, then she screamed and ran from the

building.

Relatives hurried in, lifted the girl from the coffin and placed her gently down.

The girl, apparently dead since Thursday, moved on to her side and spoke. Feebly she asked for water and then for a drink of milk. A doctor was called to attend to her.

She had escaped being buried alive by a few hours.

Had there been a conveyance available earlier than yesterday to carry the coffin, she might have gone to her grave. The Sitebe family, however, had had to postpone the funeral and the coffin was never closed.

Figure 30 Reproduction from Daily News - October 17, 1955

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

NONE SO BLIND...

TAKE STOCK. THE TRUTH SHINES THROUGH

Let me give you a quick summary of the points we have discussed so far, concluding that Jesus Christ was neither killed nor was he crucified, as alleged by the Christians and the Jews, but that he was ALIVE!

1. JESUS WAS RELUCTANT TO DIE!

He has worked out a strategy of defence to repel the Jews, because he wanted to remain ALIVE!

2. HE BESEECHED GOD FOR HELP.

With strong crying and tears for God Almighty to keep him ALIVE!

3. GOD “HEARD” HIS PRAYERS

Which means that God accepted his prayers to keep him ALIVE!

4. AN ANGEL OF GOD CAME TO STRENGTHEN HIM

in the hope and belief that God will save him ALIVE!

5. PILATE FINDS JESUS NOT GUILTY!

Good reason to keep Jesus ALIVE!

6. PILATE’S WIFE SHOWN A DREAM IN WHICH SHE WAS TOLD THAT –

“No harm should come to this just man.” In other words, he should be saved ALIVE!

7. SUPPOSED TO BE ON THE CROSS FOR ONLY THREE HOURS.

According to the system in vogue, no man could die by crucifixion in so short a time which means that even if he was fastened to the cross – he was **ALIVE!**

8. THE OTHER TWO – HIS “CROSSMATES” ON THEIR RESPECTIVE CROSSES WERE ALIVE.

So Jesus too, for the same period of time, must have been **ALIVE!**

9. ENCYCLOPEDIA BIBLICA UNDER ARTICLE “CROSS COLUMN 960, says:

“When the spear was thrust – Jesus was **ALIVE!**

10. “FORTHWITH” CAME THERE OUT BLOOD AND WATER:

“Forthwith” means straightaway, immediately, which was a sure sign that Jesus was **ALIVE!**

11. LEGS NOT BROKEN – AS A FULFILMENT OF PROPHECY

“Legs” can be of any use only if Jesus was **ALIVE!**

12. THUNDERSTORM, EARTHQUAKE, AND DARKENING OF THE SUN ALL WITHIN 3 HOURS!

To disperse the sadistic mob to enable his “secret disciples” to help keep him **ALIVE!**

13. JEWS DOUBTED HIS DEATH

They suspected that he had escaped his death on the cross – that he was **ALIVE!**

14. PILATE “MARVELS” TO HEAR THAT JESUS WAS DEAD

He knew from experience that no man can die so soon by crucifixion. He suspected that Jesus was **ALIVE!**

15. BIG ROOMY CHAMBER

Close at hand, big and airy for willing hands to come to the rescue. Providence was out to keep Jesus **ALIVE!**

16. STONE AND “WINDING SHEETS” HAD TO BE REMOVED

Necessary only if Jesus was **ALIVE!**

17. REPORT ON WINDING SHEETS

German scientists who carried out experiments on the “**Shroud of Turin**” said that the heart of Jesus had not stopped functioning – that he

was **ALIVE!**

18. **EVER IN DISGUISE!**

Disguise not necessary if Jesus was “resurrected.” Only necessary if he was **ALIVE!**

19. **FORBADE MARY MAGDALENE TO TOUCH HIM**

“Touch me not” for this reason that it would hurt; because he was **ALIVE!**

20. **“NOT YET ASCENDED UNTO MY FATHER”**

In the language of the Jews, in the idiom of the Jews, he was saying, “I am not dead yet.” in other words, “I am **ALIVE!**”

21. **MARY MAGDALENE NOT AFRAID IN RECOGNISING JESUS**

Because she had seen signs of life before. She was looking for a Jesus who was **ALIVE!**

22. **DISCIPLES PETRIFIED ON SEEING JESUS IN THE UPPER-ROOM**

All their knowledge about the “crucifixion” was from hearsay, therefore, they could not believe that Jesus was **ALIVE!**

23. **ATE FOOD AGAIN AND AGAIN IN HIS “POST CRUCIFIXION” APPEARANCES**

Food only necessary if he was **ALIVE!**

24. **NEVER SHOWED HIMSELF TO HIS ENEMIES**

Because he had escaped death by the “skin of his teeth”. He was **ALIVE!**

25. **TOOK ONLY SHORT TRIPS**

Because he was not resurrected, not spiritualised, but **ALIVE!**

26. **TESTIMONY OF MEN AROUND THE TOMB**

“*Why seek ye the living among the dead?*” – (Luke 24:4-5). That he is not dead, but **ALIVE!**

27. **TESTIMONY OF ANGELS**

“...angels who had said that he was **ALIVE!** – Luke 24:23. Did not say, “resurrected” but the actual word uttered by the angels was **ALIVE!**

28. **MARY MAGDALENE TESTIFIES –**

"...they heard that he was *ALIVE*, and had been seen by her; they believed not."—(Mark 16:11): Mary did not vouch for a spook, or ghost or spirit of Jesus but a *LIVE* Jesus. What they could not believe was that the Master was **ALIVE!**

29. DR. PRIMROSE TESTIFIES

That the "water and the blood," when Jesus was lanced on the side, was on account of an upset in the nervous vessels because of the scourging by staves. This was a sure sign that Jesus was **ALIVE!**

30. JESUS HAD HIMSELF FORETOLD THAT HIS MIRACLE WILL BE THE MIRACLE OF JONAH!

According to the **Book of Jonah**, Jonah was *ALIVE*, when we expected him to be *DEAD*; similarly when we expect Jesus to be *DEAD*, he should be **ALIVE!**

These thirty points and many more arguments are fully expounded in the preceding pages of this book. Please read and re-read the arguments and practice them on your friends. The pleasure is yours. I pray for your success!

The coffin moved

MOULMEIN (Burma),
Saturday

A YOUNG man narrowly
escaped being buried
alive here.

Maung Tin Win, 17-year-old son of O U Hla Tin and Daw Thein of Pabedan quarter, had small-pox and was pronounced dead.

The sorrowing parents held the funeral for him at the Buddhist cemetery in Myenigone quarter. While the last rites were being performed by Buddhist monks besides the wooden coffin at the edge of the freshly-dug grave, it began to move.

When groans were heard inside the coffin, relatives decided to open it. They found Maung Tin Win alive.—Sapa-Reuter.

Riley's—**Believe It or Not!**

THE DAILY NEWS

JANUARY 3, 1984

Shaken and stirred

NAIROBI: Mr Barnabas Achachi suddenly stirred while being carried to a mortuary after he was declared clinically dead "from too much Christmas liquor".

Returned to hospital, doctors advised him to go easy on strong drink.
—Sapa-AP



THE LIVING WHO WAS DEAD FOR 3 DAYS!
SAI BABA
(1856-1981) of Shirdi, India, WAS PRONOUNCED DEAD IN 1886, WITH BOTH CIRCULATION AND BREATHING STOPPED COMPLETELY. AS PREPARATIONS FOR HIS FUNERAL WERE BEING MADE 3 DAYS LATER, IT WAS OBSERVED THAT HE WAS BREATHING, AND HE LIVED ANOTHER 32 YEARS.

Figure 31 Reproduction from The Daily News - January 3, 1984

CHAPTER NINETEEN

CRUCIFIED OR CRUCIPLAYED?

LANGUAGE DEFICIENCY

Every word is a frozen picture of what it represents. If we take a word and cogitate on it, we will be able to see or visualise it in our minds. Try – **“ship,”** you will see a ship in your mind. **“Handbag,”** you will see a handbag in your mind. **“Cigarette,”** you will see a cigarette in your mind. But we speak at such rapid rate that we apprehend words as ideas, thoughts and concepts. Words are the tools wherewith we convey our messages. The greater the vocabulary, the clearer and easier the communication. But wrong words can mar the ideas.

THE LANGUAGE CUL-DE-SAC

The Arabic language is very rich in conveying spiritual thoughts and concepts, but English is richer in the field of science and technology. Yet this latter language is letting me down. It seems to have no verbs for incomplete or attempted actions. For example:

1. A man is taken to the gallows, the noose is put around his neck, “he kicks the bucket” meaning the rope is pulled for him to die, but fate intervenes and he is reprieved before he expires. Twenty years later the same man dies drowning. We want one verb to explain us what happened – was the man **“hanged”** or what happened? Not un-hanged. We want just one verb...?
2. Another person is taken to the electric chair for electrocution. He is strapped to the chair. And the switch is put on. A bolt of electricity goes through the man, but the power fails. The man revives, and before another bolt of electricity is shot through him, he is reprieved. A few days later the man dies in a motor car accident. What was his end? What happened to

him on the “chair”? Was he electrocuted or not? One verb...?

3. Josephus, a Jewish historian, records in his book of **“Antiquities”** about “crucifixions,” in which he intervened and as a result the “crucified” men were lowered from their crosses. One survived! What had happened to him on the cross? Was he crucified? The one who did not die by crucifixion, but an attempt was made to crucify him. Was he crucified? One verb...?

CRUCI-FICTIONS GALORE

The above are hypothetical cases one might say. But we are with history in the making. See Figure 25 on page 410, a reproduction from the **“Weekend World,”** dated August 3, 1969. Mr. Pieter van der Bergh, a barman by occupation, was “crucified” for “kicks!” – just for the thrill of it. In his own words, he simple wanted to prove, **“THAT MAN IS MASTER OVER HIS BODY.”** He was on the cross; he went through the whole process of the crucifixion. To outdo the three of Golgotha, he had **“An 18 inch spike piercing his thigh”**. This barman is still alive and kicking. Was he crucified? One verb...? There is no such verb in English.

When the Jews cried repeatedly to Pilate – ***Crucify him! Crucify him!*** – (*Luke 23:21, John 19:6*), they meant **“KILL”** him! Not just “taking him for a ride” on the cross! and, if after all the due ceremony, like that of Mr. van der Bergh, the man did not die by crucifixion, what would you say happened? What verb are you going to use, when you haven’t got it in your language?

MULTIPLE DEFICIENCY?

A South African Englishman, and his American counterpart, jointly confess³¹⁷: “If the word **crucify** only means to **kill on the cross**, we are at a loss to find an alternative verb to describe the mere act of **impaling on a cross.**”³¹⁸ (Their own emphasis). Shame on them. They make a mockery of me while the deficiency lies in their own language in their own ability to coin an appropriate word.

With all its **“IN** dwelling of the Holy Ghost”, the Christian world has failed to coin an appropriate verb describe, “the mere act of being fastened to the cross”. Presently, I will get them out of their misery, **Insha-Allah!**³¹⁹,

317 From the book – **“The Islam Debate,”** page 113.

318 Why does it not occur to them to write “crucify” within inverted commas?

319 If Allah wills!

before the chapter is finished. But why the rhetoric when they still say: **“IF the word *crucify* ONLY MEANS to *Kill...*”** Will Christendom tell us what else ***crucify*** means? The world renowned Oxford Dictionary simply defines ***crucify*** as “Put to death by fastening to a cross”³²⁰. The **“born-again”** authors of “The Islam Debate” cannot solve the problem, so I will solve it for them!

“CRUCIFIXIONS” NOW FOR KICKS

There is always something new coming out of the East. Now in the Far East, the Filipinos have developed a new craze of getting “CRUCIFIED!” They want to walk in the footsteps of Jesus. – (See page Figure 32 on page 463). A reproduction from the “SUNDAY NEWS” of Daressalam, dated May 3rd 1981, reports of multiple **“*crucifixions*”** in the Philippines. At least seven cases of “crucifixions” were reported in the local press. There could have been many more “crucifixions” in the hinterland, which the newspaper failed to report. Among those “crucified” was one Luciana Reyes, described as **“the first woman known to have performed the ritual”** of “crucifixion”! A new addition to the fanatical elements of the “crucifixions” is that “the penitent’s hands are nailed to a wooden cross”.

CRUCIFIED OR CRUCIPLAYED?

Not a single person died by “crucifixion”! (i.e. was crucified). One of the **“*crucified*”** men fainted. Another **“*crucified*”** man “was up and smoking a cigarette as soon as his hands were bandaged”. A vendor “had gone through the ritual (of “crucifixion”) for the fifth time”. This man has vowed to perform the **“*crucifixion*”** ten times! It all sounds like a fairy tale. But there were 25,000 witnesses to four “crucifixions” in one town alone. Some of these **“*crucifixions*”** are shown “live on television”.

The Christian world has been notorious in exploiting Jesus to make money. The films on the life of Jesus, everyone of them, was a “box-office” record smasher! They have their **“*Nativity Play*,”** they have their **“*Passion Play*,”** why not a **“CRUCIPLAY?”**

Reg Gratton, the correspondent for the **“*Sunday News*,”** (see Figure 32 on page 463) has solved the problem of the **“*crucifixions*”** by having the words in inverted commas. He has used the words **“*crucifixion*”** and

320 See Figure 24 on page 405 for a more accurate representation of “fastening”.

6 SUNDAY NEWS, May 3, 1981

DAR-ES-SALAAM

Jesus' footsteps?

CHURCH Leaders are concerned by the increasing number of Filipinos submitting themselves to Penitential whipping, beating and "crucifixion" in a re-enactment of Christ's suffering on the cross.

Flagellants, beating themselves or being whipped till they bleed, are a common sight in Asia's only Roman Catholic country during the holy week. On Good Friday, at least seven cases of "crucifixion" were reported in the local press.

One of these was Luciana Reyes, a 23-year-old factory worker and the first woman known to have performed the ritual.

The publicity generated by this year's events and their increasing attraction to local and foreign tourists have worried churchmen, some of whom have expressed their distaste for the practice.

Jaime Cardinal Sin, Archbishop of Manila and leader of the church here, said he opposed this particular form of mortification and penance because it is conducted publicly and it is possible that the penitents are motivated by pride and vainglory.

The church did not encourage the practice nor could it forbid it, he said, because mortification of the flesh can be good for the soul — if the motivation is good.

Forms of penitential mortification go back through the centuries and are deeply rooted in the culture of the Philippines where 75 per cent of the population are Catholics.

"Flagellation was recorded in the Spanish Era", according to National Museum Assistant Director Alfredo Evangelista. The idea of penance was implanted by them".

Oscar Gruz, Archbishop of Pampanga Diocese, just north of here where most of the crucifixions take place, said some features in the practice were not religious.

There were "a good number of fanatical elements," and "crucifixions" had some touristic flavour, he said.

"Crucifixion" where the penitent's hands are nailed to a wooden cross, is a recent addition to penitential custom in the Philippines. The first

cases to receive public notice occurred here in the late 1960s.

One reason for its increase is that the danger of medical complications has been reduced to a minimum, according to Monsignor Teodoro Buhain, Assistant to the Secretary-General of the Catholic Bishop's Conference of the Philippines.

The "crucifixions", some shown live on television, have now become the climax of Easter week in the Philippines. In some cases, they attract thousands of visitors to provincial towns where the atmosphere is a blend of carnival and deep mourning.

The ceremony at Bacolor in

Pampanga was typical. A procession formed outside the town early on Good Friday morning with the flagellants in front followed by three men dragging huge wooden crosses.

When they reached their destination — a small church yard away from the centre of town — the flagellants beat their fellow-penitents on the arms and back.

A little after midday the penitents were nailed to their crosses and raised up for about a minute.

One man fainted. After being removed from the cross he had to be carried to a waiting bus. Another was up and smoking a cigarette as soon as his hands were bandaged.

The group in the procession said they had been members of a criminal gang and wanted "to atone for the bad we did then, and to improve the prosperity of our families."

In the nearby town of San Fernando, some 25,000 people, many of them tourists, watched as four men were nailed to crosses in two separate ceremonies.

One of them Mario Bagtas, a 33-year-old vendor, had gone through the ritual for the fifth time and, like the bacolor penitents, he promised to return next year.

He said he had vowed to perform the "crucifixions" for 10 years after his wife recovered from cancer.

By Reg Gratton

Figure 32 Reproduction from Sunday News of Dar-Es-Salaam - May 3, 1981

“crucifixions” five times in his article, and every time when these words appear he has them enclosed in inverted commas. Please check it up. In other words he is saying that it is the **“SO-CALLED crucifixion”** or the **“SO-CALLED crucifixions.”** The inverted commas are more subtle than the words **“so-called.”** I did not catch the joke on my first few readings. Would you have?

You will note that other alert journalists have taken the precautions of putting words like **“DEAD,” “DIED”** and **“CORPSE”** in inverted commas on pages 411 and 412. Now Reg does them same about the **“CRUCIFIXIONS!”** Since the word “crucify” is getting stuck in the missionaries’ throats, should we not use **CRUCI-FICTION** instead?

CRUCIFIXION OR CRUCI-FICTION?

We can now say without any mental reservation that Pieter van der Bergh (Figure 25 on page 410) went through the process of the crucifixion with all severity and seriousness, but he was not crucified (verb of crucifixion) as the newspaper proclaimed **BUT** that he had been crucified (verb of cruci-fiction).

Further, we can say that the Christians in the Philippines are not undergoing crucifixions, but that they are undergoing **CRUCI-FICTIONS** in all sincerity. No Passion **PLAYS** or Play-acting with them as they do in films. It is the real thing, being only short of death! Hence, any performance with the cross, where the victim tries to emulate the alleged experience of Jesus, but does not actually die the **“ACCURSED DEATH”** on the cross, we will rightly call it by its appropriate terms –

CRUCIFICT instead of CRUCIFY - (Verb)

CRUCIFTED instead of CRUCIFIED - (Verb)

CRUCIFICTION instead of CRUCIFIXION - (Noun)

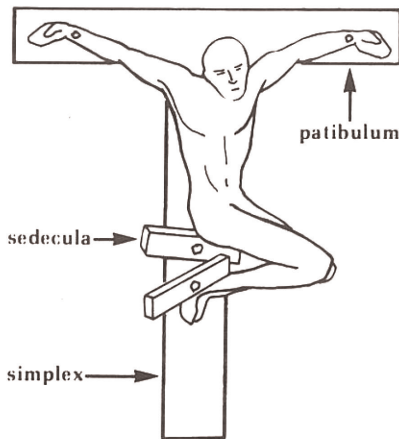
This simple and natural use of the right words will break the **“CROSS” OF Christianity** which finds itself at the **“CROSSROADS,”** not knowing which way to turn. And if we use the words frequently enough, we will soon find them in the English dictionaries of the world.

To this end, we have published a three hundred and fifty thousand copies of this publication for FREE distribution to date. Read it, study it and share it with friends and foes alike for the glory of Truth.

AAMEEN!

TAKE YOUR PICK

"After more than 1,000 hours of studying . . . the **"crucifixion,"** the author of A CAMPUS CRUSADE publication, **"The Resurrection Factor,"** invents another posture for his **"lord"** and **"saviour."**



NOW YOU HAVE A
MULTIPLE OF
CHOICES.

1. **FROGI - FICTION**
as illustrated here.
2. **STAKI - FICTION**
as you see on Page 451
3. **CRUCI - FICTION**
as it appears on Page 405

This is an illustration from page 47
of the cultist's book.

Figure 33 Reproduction from A Campus Crusade

AFTERWORD

The Crucifixion of Christ had been pushed down my throat to be the only redeeming factor for mankind since my early encounter with students and priests of Adams Mission when I was in my teens. (See Epilogue: **“Is the Bible God’s Word?”**)

Being a rather impressionable youth, I was amazed at the manner in which scores of young articulate men believed in the Crucifixion as their only factor of salvation and seemed to be concerned about my being condemned to hell for not believing in it.

This subject of the Crucifixion of Christ on which all Christianity is staked, became a serious subject of my studies. I really wanted to know what it was all about and began to study their authority, the **“New Testament,”** on the subject.

Honestly, I do not expect anyone to ask me about my belief as a Muslim concerning the Crucifixion. My belief is the Qur’anic belief as categorically stated in Chapter IV, Verse 157.

I repeat emphatically that the study of the crucifixion was thrust upon me by those of the Christian faith who claimed to be my benefactors and well-wishers. I seriously took their concern for me to heart and studied and researched objectively, using their own sources. The results, you will agree, are astounding.

I would like to thank the hundreds of Christians who came knocking at my door and for initiating me into this subject.

The foregoing is the result of my years and years of study and research.

Ahmed Deedat

1/5/1994







